





# AGE OF COSMIC EXPLORATION

BOOK 04

*Zhttty*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Age of Cosmic Exploration

(大宇宙时代)

by

Zhttty

# Synopsis

---

Endless sky and infinite space, the cosmos isn't some paradise waiting to be found, it is full of darkness and danger, death and terror of the great unknown. However, for that glittering swath of blue, we have no fear! For the longevity of men, we have no regrets! Nothing shall stand in our way because it is finally our time, our age! The age of cosmos exploration!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Lonelytree and Lucas @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Blue Race

---

For the past two days, Blue 6 had been in a foul mood. He suspected it was due to the rejection of his proposal.

As sixth heir to the Blue Race's royal throne, Blue 6 didn't possess the purest royal blood. In other words, he might be royalty, but he only had claim to zero point something percent of royal blood. One of his ancestors was the attendant of a royal prince and was given a position of sorts for her loyal service. Of course, this didn't mean that his ancestor was actual royalty; she was only associated to one. In fact, the real royalty of the Blue Race wouldn't even admit his existence. Even though he had the royal Blue surname, it was no reason for the team captain to offer him a placating smile whenever they crossed paths...

The real reason for this was really simple: at the age of 11, Blue 6 became a cosmic adapter, an S grade adapter at that; a Time Watcher to be precise. With that identity, he was lifted from commoner status and given the prestigious Blue name, and then, within the shortest period of time, his connection to the royal line was unearthed and he was entered into a long, cosmic adapter training period. Finally, when he became an adult at the age of 170, with the approval from the royal committee, he was given the name "6" and thus became the sixth heir to the throne. At the same time, due to his young age, since the five heirs above him were all ancients over 1,000 years in age, as long as he didn't die, in the next 200 to 300 years, he would be the emperor!

Of course, as a valuable Time Watcher, one that was guarded at all times by more than a hundred second level Transformers, unless there was huge anarchy within the Blue Race or a cosmic catastrophe, he would be incredibly safe. Therefore, him becoming the emperor was already writing on the wall.

Of course, the emperor status didn't guarantee power. In the history of the Blue Race, there were examples of puppet emperors

as well. Therefore, ever since Blue 6 reached adulthood, he started appearing in the public sphere, doing charities, working on policies, and he maintained a good relationship with the royals and was a private friend to many of the fleet captains. He was making himself into a veritable ruler.

However, Blue 6 was still unsatisfied because the military power that he wanted was still out of his reach. Even though the Blue Race might not share the idea of autocracy, without the backing of the military, the highest ruler was similarly powerless. Thus far, Blue 6 was still struggling with accruing his own military force. He was approaching 200 years old and he was getting anxious. Recently, he kept proposing policies, hoping to get the Emperor's approval in the hopes that the Emperor would gift him the military power he needed.

His biggest chance had arrived!

At about Blue Race calendar's 200 term, they received a set of weird signals. These signals appeared out of nowhere. At the time, the Blue Race's fleet was on their way to return to their Shelter after they had assaulted a smaller Shelter with two other level 3 space civilizations. The Blue Race was given about 1,000,000 healthy alien lifeforms as spoils of war. They were going to return to their Shelter to sell them to other civilizations that were on their decline. The profits would be enough to get the Blue Race another level 3 space civilization's technology. After all, the Blue Race still had 5 cosmic adapters to maintain the civilization's "soul," so these extra lifeforms were nothing to them but commodities.

On their return way home, the Blue Race received this set of weird signals. The most crucial point was that they were in the middle of warp drive...

This was scientifically impossible because how could one receive external signals during warp drive unless the signal itself had also exceeded lightspeed or used another spatial transference method...

No matter which one, this was a highly sophisticated space technology for the Blue Race. Therefore, in the next few hours, every related Blue Race scientist had mobilized. They had dissected the signal, which was found out to be a prehistoric electrical signal. The reference they had to refer back to was in the Blue Race's antiquity archives. The signal was similar to the ones used by the Blue Race when they still hadn't left their home planet.

The contents of the signal was fairly simple: it was the coordinates of the signal's origin. Even though there was a language barrier, the general idea was understood. The location was not far away from Blue Race's current location as long as they continued down a star path.

This set of signals created an uproar within the Blue Race. Many thought that this was a scheme by high level civilization to trap Blue Race, but some thought it was coming from an ancient ruin that some level 2 space civilization had stumbled upon. The level 2 civilization probably perished when attempting to enter the high-level space ruins.

In any case, these were the two most likely explanations for this signal, and the Blue Race's power and influence were split into two parties accordingly. The liberals argued for them to move to the coordinates and wrestle the technology from the ruins, while the conservatives thought this was a trap and that going into it would cause huge damage to the Blue Race.

As a young, ambitious person, Blue 6 aligned himself with the liberals. This was a perfect stepping stone for him. If he could prove his worth during this operation, be it from the aspect of his capability or his Time Watcher power, it would most likely give him the military power he needed. He thus became a highly respected member among the liberals.

As a Time Watcher, Blue 6 was good at detecting danger, and in the future, he might even be able to see into the future. He was the only S grade cosmic adapter in the Blue Race, so with him leading



the argument, the Blue Race's royalty finally agreed to his plan... After all, the moment Blue 6 felt danger, with the size of Blue Race's fleet, they would just retreat with some losses. The Blue Race was not some random race, they were the strongest among all the level 3 space civilizations and the civilization with the highest chance of becoming a level 4 space civilization. In other words, the Blue Race was already a peak level 3 space civilization. If they could find a high-level civilization's ruins, then the Blue Race could evolve from a low-level civilization to a mid-level civilization!

Therefore, the operation started. After enough triangulation, the large Blue Race fleet initiated warp drive to travel to their destination. To their surprise, when they took a pit stop at an empty solar system to recalibrate their data, they found the Hope...

An incredibly curious spaceship.

Rudimentary surveillance showed that it had incredibly curious technological value... First, its external metal layer was of the lowest grade and was created within a weighted atmosphere instead of space. From this, it could be seen that the civilization's technological was only a level 1 space civilization or even lower; this kind of technology shouldn't even appear in space.

However, the weapons and equipment on its surface were obviously a level 2 space civilization's electromagnetic products. These were a level 2 space civilization's tech tree. But why would the people use the most prehistoric metals to create electromagnetic products? Was it possible that the creators didn't know they wouldn't last more than 100 year if done that way?

The most curious were the unknown metals found in their electrical circuits... An alloy even the Blue Race, a level 3 space civilization, hadn't seen before!

Something a civilization couldn't cover or fake was basic crafting technology, especially those related to metals. Perhaps some low level civilizations could get some high-level civilization's

technology through connections and mass produce it, but due to the gap between technological levels, a low-level space civilization wouldn't be able to do high-level space civilization crafting. However, in front of them was such an anomaly... A seemingly low level civilization with crafting technology even they couldn't understand!

Therefore, they decided to stop. After many discussions, the conclusion was... This spaceship was probably another lost ruin, and its technological level was... unknown! Either very low or very high level; it was shrouded in mystery!

Under such circumstances, Blue 6 volunteered to lead an exploration group into the ruins. This was because his Time Watcher power told him there was no danger coming from this ruin!

However, while he was almost close to persuading the royals, a small explosion occurred beside the spaceship, and according to the Blue Race's analysis... this small explosion caused a disturbance in space!

Thus, Blue 6's proposal was refuted and arguments between liberals and conservatives began anew. However, everyone knew...

The Blue Race had hit the jackpot! Space disturbance! This was something level 4 space civilizations only began to understand! And to be able to create a disturbance in space, that was a technology limited to level 5 space civilizations!

# Chapter 302: Earth Race

---

Blue 6 was sitting in the VIP room of captain of the 7th assault fleet. Surrounding him were the influential players of the Blue Race. They were all members of the liberal party and thus could be considered comrades, even though they were all vying for their own goals. Regardless, since their goals happened to coincide, this meant that temporarily, they were friends.

As he drank the jade-green blood of the Mai Dong Race, his body was filled a sense of levity as the essence of "soul" passed through his body... Actually, other than Blue 6, who could sense the "soul", others were just playing along. Of course, Blue 6 wouldn't expose them, since he was not born yesterday. He knew there were certain social agreements to uphold. However, these people kept skirting around the elephant in the room, which made him increasingly anxious.

Nevertheless, the officials didn't seem to notice his anxiety, or rather they chose to not to respond to it even if they did. After all, as the emperor that would rule Blue Race for more than 1,000 years, his identity was powerful enough. When combined with his cosmic adapter role, Blue 6 was practically invincible. No matter what, even if he wanted to kill all the royals or even lead the Blue Race towards extinction or even on extreme occasion should Blue Race come under attack, Blue 6 would be spared simply because he was a cosmic adapter.

Because of that, a certain degree of suppression was the agreed upon by the royals when it came to their dealings with Blue 6. Since they would need to hand power over to Blue 6 in the future, in order to evolve his ability and intellect, a degree of oppression was necessary to ensure that his head didn't get too big for his own sake. Therefore, this kind was contradictory behavior of being both respectful and insolent was common to Blue 6.

One of the officials took a small sip of the Mai Dong Race's blood

and said, "By the way, the Mai Dong Race has to be the most unique race in space. Their 'souls' are all collected in their blood, thus allowing for other races to directly extract their 'souls' by drinking their blood. This must be the most interesting talent there is."

The other person beside him said, with derision, "What good is that? Because of this talent, they are already a civilization reaching level 3 but have to sell their own people for the sake of survival and advancement. The Mai Dong's Emperor should be sent into the ionic decomposition chamber for coming up with a policy like this!"

The earlier official took another graceful sip of the blood and said, with a smile, "It's not bad compared to those level 2 space civilizations living in hell. From the perspective of trade, with the sale of one 'soul', they can have ten 'soul' products in return. There might be dispersion of 'soul' in the process, but as long as there is a net gain, in the next 100 to 200 years, they will have their own cosmic adapter, and for a race that was at the very edge of extinction, selling their people is the only option."

Someone might have said something, but the remaining officials still put up some expressions of derision or condescension. After all, for the Blue Race, the protection of their own race, be it the smallest normal Blue Race citizen, was the responsibility of the officials. Selling their people... this was something even the Blue Race's Emperor wouldn't dare to mention.

Blue 6's anxiety had reached its limits. Even though he was still politely smiling and enjoying the blood like the other officials, he suddenly said, "Earlier, I heard the rumours that several level 2 space civilizations wish to be our vassals. I wonder what the Emperor and the royal committee will do about that."

It was here...

Everyone knew Blue 6 couldn't be patient anymore. They all

smiled inwardly because this meant that they had won. After all, the person who came up with the proposal had to be responsible for it; that was a common rule. Since this was brought up by Blue 6, if it failed, it would be on his shoulders. However, if the excavation of the ruin was a success, they would also be able to share in the glory...

One of them said, "No one dared to accept the offer. Since while it might sound nice on paper that we will be able to have full control over their culture, technology, military, and population, all of us know they are on their decline. Why would they agree to become our slaves, basically? The only reason is they know we have a handful of cosmic adapters among us. Your Honor is one of them... We all about 'souls' underflow effect; in the dispersion and absorption of 'soul', measured in units of time and space, the lesser the 'soul' of a civilization, the greater the degree of 'soul' dispersion. Do you know why the Blue Race hasn't received any vassals? This is because this policy of no outsider ensures that our race's 'soul' density is always maintained at a high level, and with this density, the amount of cosmic adapters will never be lower than 3. An S grade cosmic adapter; I remember the last time our race had an S grade cosmic adapter was tens of thousands of years ago. So we are all clear about these civilizations' purpose when they ask to become our vassals. Who in their right mind would accept that? Not even level 2 space civilizations are willing to do that."

Blue 6 knew all this already, as it was all taught in the Blue Race's primary education. This was only to segue into his next topic.

"However, the historical records of these few civilizations are valuable." Blue 6 sighed. "They are all civilizations that have been around for tens of thousands of years already, especially the race by the name of Earth Race. Other than the fact that their facial features, body size, physical component, and thinking process are similar to ours, their historical records contain some really

impossible things. Even though I don't know the full story, I hear that in their history records, there are navigation charts for places beyond this galaxy. And before their race started to decline, about 10,000 years ago, their race invented a legendary super weapon, the thing that could cross time and space. It's the ultimate Shelter created by their supreme leader. I think it was called..."

"Noah San Hao," a person beside him added. "Your Honor, it's called Noah San Hao. This was a huge deal. I remember when the Earth Race initially revealed part of their history; it even got the attention of level 4 space civilizations. They even traded a few coordinates from their historical logs, and even though most of the coordinates were useless, one happened to lead to a hidden lost civilization's ruin. This created a shockwave among the space community. News about the Noah San Hao spread through our galaxy like wildfire. The level 4 space civilization believed this was a lost and powerful antiquated technology and thus spent thousands of years going through the Earth Race's history, but they ended up with nothing other than the earlier mentioned ruins that they seemed to have stumbled upon via pure luck... Your Honor, ruins are like four leaf clovers; they don't just appear anywhere. Do you not know the nickname given to the Earth Race? They are also called the Liar Race."

Blue 6 was annoyed, but he didn't voice it out loud, after all, this person did help him extend the conversation. He added quickly, "Yes, the Earth Race might not be believable, but doesn't this prove the value of ruins? Even if it is a low level space civilization's ruins, due to the difference in scientific progress, it might help introduce a push to our science that has stagnated, and right before our eyes, there is such a ruin!"

The officials lowered their glasses of blood and looked quietly at Blue 6. This was the height of respect in Blue Race's culture. This meant that they were going to listen seriously and possibly adopt his proposal. This satisfied Blue 6 greatly. As if giving a speech, he

stood up to continue in a grandiose manner, "Everyone, you all know my wish, or rather, my ambition... I'm an S-grade cosmic adapter, a Time Watcher that contains the royal blood in my veins. Give me a few hundred years to evolve and I might even become a Time Handler! Therefore, please believe in me. I will hand in the proposal to explore the ruins tomorrow and I will personally lead the party...

"Of course, do not worry about me playing with my own life. After all, this life is no longer mine but the whole Blue Race's. However, as a Time Watcher, I don't feel any danger. Yes, no danger at all. This ruin is like a ripe, blue apple sauce waiting for us to taste, and I need some support because the people from the conservative party are too strong. I cannot convince them with my power alone; therefore, I'm asking for allies, looking for friends that will support me. In return, I will offer victory and glory. I know everyone here has wanted a part in the royal committee for hundreds of years already. If this thing is victorious, I'm sure the Emperor won't mind adding a few more royal committee members, right?"

The more Blue 6 continued, the more excited he got. He could see himself successfully finishing the exploration of the ruins, and these ruins could be of a civilization of an even higher level than the Blue Race could possibly imagine. He would end up mustering more military power than he could ever ask for, and his status in the Blue Race would become unmovable. His dreams were slowly coming true.

Yes, tomorrow he shall hand in the new proposal, and then....

Enter the ruins!

# Chapter 303: Danger Sense and Attraction

---

The people on the Hope naturally didn't know about the Blue Race. However, the atmosphere within the Hope had gotten increasingly curious. Many sensitive members of the public sensed the nervousness in the air, but since they could see nothing after observation, there were no rumors... After all, there couldn't be any rumours, since it was Yao Yuan leading the Hope. Ever since he led these 120,000 people into space, his actions and working style had been familiarized by the public. Many people called him the human saviour, and as long as he was around and he was still the Hope's leader, the people felt strangely safe and protected.

They had no idea Yao Yuan had been spending the past few days in the captain's room, waiting for signs of an alien invasion. If he sensed it, he would make the Hope self-destruct. Death was much better than being enslaved and taken as experiment, or even materials for "soul"!

On this day, eight days had passed since the day alien was predicted to infiltrate the Hope. The past eight days had been spent in absolute peace. However, this peace made many anxious, and they were afraid that the aliens would attack at any moment. Even the normally stable Guang Zhen started patrolling the Hope four to five times daily. This was the reason why some members of the public felt like something was wrong.

"Ol' Wong, don't be so nervous. You going on patrol every day has made many people on the Hope incredibly uneasy. Even though you avoid patrolling during the height period when people go and return from work, what you're doing is still very attention-grabbing. Take it easy for a day or so. From tomorrow onwards, other than the usual patrol, stop the rest." Yao Yuan sat in the captain's room and advised Guang Zhen as he flipped through a document.

Guang Zhen straightened himself up in his chair. As an old-



fashioned soldier, his actions were influenced by military training. They were not pretense but part of his personality. Reprimanded by Yao Yuan, he laughed helplessly. "Ol' Yao, I understand what you're saying, but my heart just won't calm down. This is so different from our earlier wars. Even though there was always a waiting period after we decided our strategy, we had never been such a passive party, and so many things hinge upon this wait, so how can I not be nervous?"

Yao Yuan sighed and went silent because he understood what Guang Zhen meant. Those that knew the truth, how many of them could eat and sleep well? Even the calmest of individuals would be worried since this was beyond life or death. If something really happened, it would be a fate worse than death...

Human beings were already a cruel enough species. The things that were done to animals in pharmaceutical the industry back on Earth could make everyone's hair rise, and how could be said that people didn't know about that? No, most did, but since animal experimentation was beneficial to humanity, as long as the experiment was not done on actual humans, many chose to turn a blind eye. Therefore, cruel as it might be, it was necessary.

Therefore, human beings understood perfectly that when such fate befalls mankind, such cruelty would await them. It would be a fate several million times worse than death! Even people with strong constitutions like Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen couldn't help but frown thinking of the possibility. It was because of this that Yao Yuan would spend his nights sleeping in the captain's room, and the moment something felt wrong, he would make the Hope self-destruct.

The two sat in silence until Yao Yuan suddenly said, "By the way, this afternoon, Ren Tao came up with a new proposal..."

"Ren Tao?" Guang Zhen said the name with derision, but he understood the gravity of the situation, so he still asked, "He's also a Thinker. So he came up with a solution to this problem we're

having?"

Yao Yuan nodded. "Exactly... Ol' Wong, I know you have issues with Ren Tao's attitude, but you have to understand that he's not an official soldier, and during the war on the new planet, didn't he fight alongside us like a real soldier? Try to cut him some slack. Back to his suggestion, I've given it some thought. The plan was to use the Anima to scan the alien civilization outside of the Hope."

Guang Zhen was stunned before smiling brightly. "That's a good idea! Our biggest issue now is a lack of external information. Even bad news is better than no news... Then again, perhaps we can skip the bad news, but we do need some news."

Yao Yuan was silent before shaking his head. "That might be so, but there are some possible harms to this plan, and the harm could be extremely detrimental to our situation... Observation goes both way. The Anima might bypass the limitation of the creator's particle, but when the Anima sees into this civilization, their Homo Evolutis, or rather, cosmic adapters, will be able to sense the observation on them. This might not be a good thing.

"The alien fleet out there is too big. If this is the size of an entire civilization, our rough estimation puts the number at several hundred billion people. What are the chances that a civilization of this size doesn't have cosmic adapters? Even if there is only one, the moment they realize we are using the Anima power on them, then... it will be horrendous!"

Suddenly, Yao Yuan sprung up from his seat with trepidation on his face. This was not an expression common to him. In fact, whenever this happened, it meant that things were truly heading down the toilet. Guang Zhen was immediately alarmed. He also stood up in a hurry and looked around them, yelling, "What's going on? Yao Yuan, tell me what's happening?"

Yao Yuan's expression was fixed in that flustered countenance. After a long time, he slumped down into his chair and said, with

trace of despair, "I've forgotten about one important thing. This is bad. If our enemy also has Homo Evolutis, then this is already over for us..."

"What do you mean by that?" Guang Zhen asked.

"...I'm an All-Rounder, someone who's able to attract Homo Evolutis or cosmic adapters. It'll make them want to get close to me; it's a feeling akin to being summoned. Therefore, if they have cosmic adapters, we..."

At the same time, the alien fleet outside of the Hope had started to move away from the Hope. Of course, it wasn't using technology like warp drive to move a far distance but some sort of energy propulsion to cover a small distance. At the same time, a small spaceship about several hundred meters long extricated itself from the fleet and headed towards the Hope.

Other than the normal maintenance members, the spaceship also had 50 well-trained second grade bionic people. These were from the Blue Race Emperor's royal guard. Under normal circumstances, it was difficult to even mobilize one, but this time the Emperor was so generous that he let Blue 6 lead 50 of them. Furthermore, he even told Blue 6 that these people would be his personal guards from then on. He would be responsible for their lives and deaths. Things like insurance fees, death compensation, and the living expenses of surviving family members would be covered by Blue 6 in the case that any one of them died. The amount wasn't small. The Blue Race wasn't a barbaric race, so even though the Emperor was their lord and the royals were a station above the commoners, this didn't mean that the common people were to be trampled on. These were rules written into the Blue Race's history books. In other words, the death of one bionic man would cause Blue 6's wallet to bleed for quite some time. However, if all of them died... then Blue 6 would have to announce bankruptcy even though he was the sixth successor to the throne. This was why the Blue Race was dubbed the civilization that

treated its own citizens the best among all the level 3 space civilizations within this galaxy.

This showcased the Emperor's wisdom. As a mature politician that had held the throne for hundred of years, he could tell Blue 6's desire for power. Furthermore, Blue 6 couldn't ever be punished, as his identity as an S-grade cosmic adapter was the best get-out-of-jail card. The entire Blue Race couldn't do anything harmful against Blue 6. In fact, if any harm was to come their way, the entire race would try their best to protect Blue 6's safety... S-grade cosmic adapter, as long as Blue 6 was still alive, even if he was the only one alive, with the Blue Race's genetic bank, he could revive the Blue Race civilization. That was his value as an S-grade cosmic adapter.

That was why the emperor gave him 50 of his best bionic men. He knew Blue 6 would hold on to them with his life, because the entirety of the Blue Race only had 300 plus second grade bionic men. These 50 bionic men satisfied Blue 6's desire for military power, but at the same time, they were a limitation on him. At least they would make him more careful; he would caution himself and retreat the moment he felt danger. This was the reason the Blue Race Emperor gave Blue 6 these 50 bionic men.

Blue 6 understood the implication, but since this was a benefit, he needed to accept it. Plus, for this mission, he didn't sense any danger. His intuition hadn't let him down before. Not only that, he felt a deep desire to venture into this ruin. Earlier, he thought it was because of his desire to make a name for himself, but the closer he got to the ruin, the stronger he could feel a strange calling. It was as if there was something incredibly important waiting for him inside the ruin. This had never happened to him before. Others thought his insistence for entering the ruin was because of his deep-seated desire for power...

But in reality, the reason he was so determined was because he felt something deep within the ruins calling after him. He had no

idea what it was, but his feeling told him it was something important!

Blue 6's blazing eyes stayed focused on the approaching ruins. Suddenly, he felt his heart palpitate and an indescribable feeling surged through his body...

Danger! He felt danger!

# Chapter 304: Retreat and Coincidence

---

Blue 6's whole body tensed the moment he felt danger!

He was an S-grade cosmic adapter, a Time Watcher, or Diviner to be precise. His ability was to sense the approach of danger. For any race, this was a valuable ability that was directly linked to the race's survival. Therefore, it was the kind of cosmic adapter every civilization wanted!

After Blue 6 realized he was a cosmic adapter, he started training under the Blue Race's protection. To help him achieve the ability to evolve to the next level, the Blue Race wasted no resources. However, Blue 6 had repaid them in kind. In the hundreds of years Blue 6 had been a cosmic adapter, he had helped Blue Race escaped the threat of extinction twice.

The first time was when they were attacking a small Shelter. Blue 6 felt immense danger days before the scheduled attack. The Blue Race's royal committee decided to retreat in spite of the cold stares given by three other level 3 space civilizations that attacked the Shelter together with them. It turned out that one of the space civilizations at the Shelter had just entered level 4, and the three other attacking space civilizations were wiped out completely. This made those that complained about the resources lavished on Blue 6's training shut up. From then on, Blue 6's position was approved and respected by everyone in the Blue Race.

The second time was when the Blue Race was passing through a galaxy following a star path. Blue 6 felt danger when they were in warp drive. At the time, the Blue Race's fleet was in empty space, so changing navigation routes was extremely dangerous. It might've caused the Blue Race to lose itself completely in space. However, with the first precedent in place, the Blue Race had faith in Blue 6's ability. Therefore, after a long discussion, they decided to change directions. After that, they heard from other races that the solar system they were supposed to head to had exploded. The

sun was expanding to become a red giant, and its radiating wave and protons made the place a no-go zone for civilizations below level 4. Blue 6 had once again saved the Blue Race.

Due to these two incidents, even Blue 6 started to believe in his Time Watcher power. However, the Blue Race was, after all, a level 3 space civilization, so they wouldn't regularly stumble across danger. After all, there weren't many level 4 space civilizations to go around. In the known galaxy, level 3 space civilizations could practically run the show. Therefore, after those two incidents, other than during training, Blue 6's danger sense hadn't tingled for a long time.

At that moment, that familiar sense of danger returned again. Furthermore, the sense of danger was so visceral that it made him break out in cold sweat. He sprung up from his seat and disposed of his earlier grace by starting to yell, "Stop! Stop the ship and all the devices... No, don't stop the devices, just the ship!"

The workers were first stunned, but when they saw how pale Blue 6 was, they understood the situation immediately. They too started yelling orders. In about 10 seconds, the spaceship stopped in space, and they were only a short distance away from the ruins.

Everyone turned to look at Blue 6. After all, who would willingly die? Everyone knew Blue 6 had sensed danger, but how strong the danger was and whether the ship would be affected all depended on Blue 6, so everyone turned to focus on him.

Blue 6 focused on reading the danger, and right when the ship stopped, the feeling of danger slowly dissipated. However, a sense of danger still remained within the ruins... Could it be that this ruin wasn't as safe as he thought? Or was it really a trap ruin as those conservatives claimed? Why else would he only sense intense danger when they moved?

What about the feeling of attraction coming from within the ruins? He realized that the attraction was only unique to him...

Was it some kind of high-tier space civilization technology that specifically targeted cosmic adapters?

The sound of incoming communication interrupted Blue 6's contemplation. He looked at the communicator and ordered his adjutant to switch it open.

"...Yes, I made the ship stop, because I've felt danger."

The person on the other end was the Blue Race's Emperor. Of course, beside him must be a whole group of royal committee members and scientists. They allowed Blue 6 to lead the exploration because they had faith in Blue 6's Time Watcher power, so when they saw Blue 6 stop the ship, everyone was worried. Afraid that something had happened to Blue 6, the Emperor contacted Blue 6's ship immediately.

Blue 6 explained his situation openly and directly. However, he ended with, "The feeling of danger is dissipating, so perhaps it will be more dangerous the closer I get to the ruin. This suggests the possibility of a distance trigger of sorts within the ruins. Regardless, there's no danger where my ship is currently located."

An exhale immediately came from the other end; it was a great sigh of relief. Soon, the Emperor asked, "Blue 6, what do you plan to do then?"

This was a question obviously meant to test Blue 6. He understood the implication and replied, "I plan to move forward a bit to check the danger scale of this ruin and the closest I can get to it before setting off the extreme danger signal in my mind. This way we can get the most accurate reading of this ruin. After all, I'm a Time Watcher, the most perfect candidate for this kind of scouting operation. Who can do this better than me?"

The Emperor praised him, "It's good that you can understand that. It will be dangerous, but this is also why the citizens look up to the royal family, because we have the obligation to lead our people towards glory. Power and responsibility go hand in hand.



Dangerous times like this is when royal family members like ourselves should step up. This is a tradition the Blue Race has maintained for centuries. You can understand this means that you've lived up to the Blue 6 name. Okay, I will leave everything in your hands. There's no need to rush this exploration, so take it slow; it's best if you can get data on this ruin before venturing further in."

After that, Blue 6 calmed down to focus on channeling his power. After all, he was a well-trained cosmic adapter, so he knew how to fine-tune his Time Watcher power. He sat back down calmly on the commander seat and ordered, "Power up the ship. Move towards the ruins with one bora average speed."

With Blue 6 holding the fort, the rest also started to calm down. The ship moved towards the ruins with extremely low speed. The closer they got to the ruins, the more intense Blue 6's danger sense. However, since the ship was moving slowly, his danger sense also increased at a slow rate; it didn't arrive as abruptly as it did earlier.

"It is as I expected. The closer we get to the ruin, the stronger the sense of danger. This is similar to the trap-like ruins mentioned in our data, but it is this kind of ruin that will normally get us the most reward. Civilizations like this are normally over level 5. The records stated the possibility of them even being level 7 space civilizations... Perhaps there is something within this ruin that attracts me."

Blue 6 continued feeling the danger... He was a trained Time Watcher that had studied the science of sensing danger for a long time, so he could tell what kind of danger was fatal, what kind was a warning, the source and distance of the danger's source. This was why he had the ship move so slowly.

The ship inched ever closer to the ruins. They were close when a spark appeared not far away from the ruins. Even though it happened in a split second, it was taken down by the surveillance device in the spaceship. The picture was immediately brought up

on screen.

It was one of the three products surrounding the ruins. Their function was unknown. They were circling the ruins in a random pattern. The Blue Race had found them out from the very beginning, but due to the mystery of the ruins, they didn't go and capture it. Especially after the first explosion that create the disruption in space, Blue Race was extra cautious around these weird products. They didn't dare to venture to close, but they didn't expect there would be a second explosion.

"Reading disruption in space waves... Wave amplitude at 32 meters and still increasing... Highest amplitude is 47 meters. The measurement between wave crest and wave trough is 12 meters. Wave amplitude starting to decrease, calculating the exhaustion of mass... Disappearance of mass is charted at 42 percent..."

It was an explosion from far away, but all the data on the explosion appeared on screen quickly. This was something the Blue Race's technology was capable of. At the same time, Yao Yuan in the Hope remembered his natural attraction towards cosmic adapters. Simultaneously, two AI bots left the Hope. This all happened in less than 10 seconds from the second explosion. It was a weird coincidence.

Just as the two AI bots left the Hope and entered space, Blue 6's danger sense reached its height. It was dangerous, very dangerous. He yelled immediately, "Retreat! Retreat away from the ruins immediately!"

"This is a trap-like ruin. I've confirmed that this is a trap ruin! A trap ruin with at least space technology and has a certain degree of research on cosmic adapters. This is a giant treasure trove of a space ruin that is worth any and all sacrifice to obtain!"

# Chapter 305: Time on Both End

---

Blue 6's news shocked the whole Blue Race.

Just like how the Blue Race's royal committee members put it earlier, a lost space civilization ruin was rare. The cosmos was unimaginably big, so one could spend over a million years and one might not be able to finish exploring one galaxy, much less the whole cosmos. Relative to that scale, space ruins were rare like diamonds on Earth.

First, for it to be called a lost space ruin, it had been to be a product or fleet left behind by an ancient space civilization after it had completely declined due to Law of Conservation of Soul or were completely wiped out due to war or a natural disaster.

If following that definition, the so-called lost space ruins had to be innumerable, but that was untrue because the products of low level space civilizations would perish alongside its people. This was due to its low level technology. Without manual maintenance or control, it would self-destruct, or collide into other spatial entity and disappear in space.

Therefore, generally speaking, these lost ruins had be the products left behind by civilizations of at least level 4 caliber. On rare occasions, there might be a chance discovery of a lost ruin left behind by a level 2 or 3 space civilization, but for all intents and purposes, they couldn't be called space ruins.

The number of level 4 space civilizations was drastically smaller than the number of level 1, 2, and 3 space civilizations. The ratio was roughly ten thousand level 3 space civilizations to one level 4 space civilization. Of all the space ruins, level 4 space ruins were the most valuable in terms of ratio of investment returns. The danger level would be manageable and the technology harvested would be at a fair level. Therefore, whenever a space civilization stumbled into a level 4 space ruin, the ruins would be

unconditionally collected.

In other words, those other space ruins left behind by higher level space civilizations usually harbored great secrets, like super future technology, but similarly was home to unimaginable danger. This kind of space ruin was called a trap-like ruin!

This was the news brought back by Blue 6, a news that lit up the ambition of every Blue Race citizen!

A trap-like ruin was a treasure trove! This was something akin to a jackpot. Even though it would be extremely dangerous, so much so that it could cause the whole galaxy to collapse if one was not careful, similarly, the rewards provided by such ruins would be ridiculously good; at least it would definitely push the Blue Race into becoming a level 4 space civilization. Furthermore, with enough time and percolation, evolving into level 5, 6 or even 7 was inevitable.

The Blue Race's longevity would no longer be measured in years but possibly in terms of epochs! If luck would have it, perhaps the Blue Race could even become a god-tier space civilization!

Of course, not everyone believed this report fully, but since it came from Blue 6, the Blue Race's only S-grade cosmic adapter who had saved the Blue Race twice, his words carried much weight. This observation was supported by explosions around the ruins. The discovery of space wave disruption proved that the ruin's technological level was indeed unbelievably high. This reinforced Blue 6's conclusion, and so these minor voices were easily eclipsed.

Of course, since the Blue Race was a mature level 3 space civilization, they naturally wouldn't barge into the space ruin just like those level 2 space civilizations would. With knowledge came caution. This kind of trap-like ruin could cause impossible catastrophe. There was some high level space ruins that had super long range weapons that could launch attacks through space after locking down their target's coordinates. The bullets crossed the

space dimension itself to attack the target. They couldn't be too careful.

Because of this, they had to figure out another way of venturing into this ruin. Blue 6's methods of charging into it head-on was no longer feasible.

Blue 6 understood this, but he was unwilling to give up, because the closer he got to the ruin, the stronger the attraction he felt towards it. The attraction was something that crossed the limitations of space and time, it spoke to his "soul" directly. It was an attraction that he couldn't reject or want to reject. He knew there was something inside the ruins that he had to claim, so he wished to enter the ruins as soon as possible.

"What? The creation of the perfect energy-blocking shield?"

On the 6th day, Blue 6 returned to the Blue Race. This was 14 days after the ruin was discovered. He yelled out when he read this important phrase in the morning paper. He could no longer sit idle. After a hasty breakfast, he rushed to the royal committee, and soon, he received the authentic news from the royal committee members themselves. The Blue Race was planning to build a large perfect energy-blocking shield that would cover the entirety of the Blue Race's fleet.

The perfect energy-blocking shield was a high functionality defense-use power shield. It was different from normal energy shields, although their theoretical basis was the same; they both used the conversion of energy to draw up a shield. This was the strongest defense measure available to level 3 space civilizations, because in actuality, in terms of defensive power, level 4 space civilizations were the same as level 3 space civilizations, so this technology was the strongest defense shared by these two levels of space civilizations. It was strong enough to withstand the solar wave for a short period!

The perfect meant a perfect structure similar to the Golden Scale.

It had the perfect shape and structure, thus providing the best defense with the lowest exhaustion of energy. This technology required one to be at the peak of the 3rd revolution, and the Blue Race happened to be at that stage then.

No matter what, the first step before venturing into this space ruin was to ensure their own safety. Therefore, the creation of this perfect energy-blocking shield was necessary... At the same time, it was worth noting that the Blue Race had no AI system!

Because of that, this device required manual labor contribution from the people, and it wouldn't finish building as fast as if it was built by AI bots. From the news given by the royal committee, it would finish in 30 days.

Blue 6 knew that this was standard procedure, as the leader's responsibility to its constituents was to keep them safe. It's better to be safe than sorry. However, Blue 6 still had issues suppressing the anxiety in his heart.

"... Baron Blue Light, is it not necessary to send out a small, unmanned scouting spaceship to get near the ruins?"

Blue 6 had invited Baron Blue Light to join him for lunch. Even though the baron didn't have a number following his surname, his ancestor was the earlier Emperor's close family member, and Blue Light was also one of the liberal leaders in the royal committee.

Blue Light looked curiously at Blue 6 before continuing to eat his lunch. He elaborated in between bites, "We don't dare to take this risk. No one knows this ruin's explosive trigger; perhaps it is the approach of life or even material. After all, there was only one floating product left around the ruin, so this might be our last chance. Before we finish building the defense mechanism, I will not agree to have any spaceship go close to the ruin... Of course, an unmanned spaceship can be an exception, but the Blue Race still doesn't have the necessary AI to do something like that."

After hearing what Blue Light said, the anxiety in Blue 6's heart

only increased. He finally said, "I'm sorry, Baron, but for some reason, I have a feeling... If we don't hurry up, we will lose the opportunity of exploring this particular ruin."

Baron Blue Light stared intensely at Blue 6, and after a long pause, he said, "I hear... Your Highness Blue 6 hasn't become a level 2 Time Watcher yet, right?"

Blue 6 lowered his head in shame. "Yes, I've wasted the taxpayers' money..."

"No, no, no, that's not what I meant," Baron Blue Light explained in a hurry. "The evolution of cosmic adapters has nothing to do with the people's contribution. None of us can force you to level up, even you can't force that evolution. I'm just saying, without the ability of the level 2 Time Watcher, Your Highness doesn't have the capability to see into the future, right? Other than sensing danger, Your Highness can't see into the future, right?"

Blue 6 sighed inwardly. "That's right..."

"Allow me to be frank." Baron Blue Light nodded. "Your Highness has contributed a lot in this case. There's more than enough contribution to enable the royal committee to give you the 46th space fleet. Therefore, it is my advice that Your Highness not get too hung up on glory and power, as there's still a long future. Your Highness is going to be someone who's going to lead us for the next thousands of years, so please don't be so anxious. Practice patience, we must..."

Blue 6 tuned Baron Blue Light out. Even though he also started to have suspicions about his feeling, his experience told him his intuition was always right, so...

He decided to lead his most loyal subjects to explore the ruins tomorrow or the day after tomorrow. This time, he would definitely enter the ruins!

At the same time, 14 days had passed for the people of the Hope.

The second alien exploratory team was getting close, and there was only one day left until ZERO's predicted controlled space warp!



# Chapter 306: One Day!

---

Blue 6 was someone with military power.

In the Blue Race, that meant he had a certain degree of power. The Blue Race wasn't a pure autocratic society, the people were loyal to their king by choice. This was a law created right after Blue Race came back from the brink of extinction. Everyone withheld this law. To put it simply, if the common people wished for their own residences to be a place barred from royal presence, then even the Emperor had no right to enter their houses.

With great power comes great responsibility. Blue 6 was given the 46th fleet, so he was also responsible for paying their salaries and maintaining and upgrading their equipment. Blue 6's own assets were enough to cover all these expenses, so he wasn't worried about that.

The thing he was worried about was what kind of spaceship he should use to enter the ruins. Should he use the spaceship from his own fleet or wrangle another through his connections?

Even though the 46th fleet was already his underlings and, according to Blue Race's culture, this meant that the 46th fleet's soldiers would never betray him, this didn't mean that they would follow his orders unconditionally. This required extended interaction over time to foster loyalty. However, time was exactly the thing Blue 6 was lacking. He felt the ruins would disappear at any moment.

Therefore...

"A tourism spaceship?"

Blue 6's request form had been handed to the officials, and in it, he stated that he wished to apply for a tourism spaceship to leave the mothership. Not soon after, the royal committee caught wind of this development. Even the Emperor found out about it.

The Emperor was in the middle of dinner when the information made its way to him. He first frowned before turning to ask one of the royal committee members, "What is Blue 6 planning? Using a tourism spaceship to get near the ruins?"

A few royal committee members were having dinner with the Emperor. One of them laughed and said, "This afternoon, Baron Blue Light enquired Blue 6 about this, and he said he wished to continue exploring the space ruins to obtain more information and data on it. He promised explicitly to not do anything dangerous, like entering it."

The Emperor thought about it and nodded. "It does seem like he means it. The tourism spaceship is smaller and thus more agile than military spaceships. If this is not to enter the ruin but just to scout it, then the choice of a tourism spaceship does makes more sense... How many people does he plan to bring with him?"

Another royal committee member added quickly, "According to his request, there will be 11, including Blue 6, 5 Second grade bionic men and 5 spaceship operators."

The Emperor nodded to himself, took a sip of the Mai Nong blood, and added, "He didn't bring along that 50 bionic personal guards? Then approve of his request. He couldn't possibly enter the ruins with so few people, he's not that crazy. After all, he's a Time Watcher, so his acuity towards danger is much stronger than ours... He's still young, so desire for power comes hand in hand. Let him be then."

Just like that, after Blue 6 finished his dinner, he received news that his request was approved. He could leave the mothership in the afternoon of the next day.

"Perfect, the plan's a success. Taking few people with me didn't raise their suspicion. If I didn't borrow the reason of scouting the ruins, then I wouldn't be given the chance to leave the mothership... No matter, because tomorrow, I must enter the

ruins!"

At the same time, within the Hope, Ren Tao, Yao Yuan, Eva, Guang Zhen, Bo Li, the Black Star Unit, and a host of people who knew were waiting in the secret meeting room. Everyone was wearing a worried expression, and they were waiting for Xiao Niao to give them the information they needed.

Yes, one more day and it would be the date ZERO promised they could space warp. However, no one could tell for sure whether ZERO would appear early or late. In the earlier space warps, ZERO once appeared 8 hours earlier than expected and several hours late in others. They were rushing for time. Xiao Niao stationed himself in front of his home pc. The moment contact was made with ZERO, he would send the information to the secret meeting room immediately.

Yao Yuan lit another cigarette. However, it didn't take long for him to snuff it out. He looked at the clock and said, "It's already 8 PM. Why don't we go have dinner first? We need food to have energy, and we might be here for a long time, so we must eat."

With Yao Yuan's orders, simple servings of dinner appeared in the room. Everyone was given one serving. They were lunch boxes and not really full course meals. However, even if it was the best meal in the world, it would be tasteless to the people there. In fact, there were many that couldn't even bring themselves to eat. Other than the Black Star Unit, only Zhang Heng, who had trained alongside the Black Star Unit, took bites of the food... or rather, they shoved the food into their mouths forcefully. Other people didn't even have the energy to lift up the spoons. They were too occupied with other things.

Yao Yuan chewed on his food and studied the people in the room. He sighed inwardly. He couldn't blame them; after all, death normally came unannounced, so this kind of long wait for possible death was torturous. Nobody knew whether the aliens would barge into the Hope the next second. They needed more than bravery to

face this possibility, they had to have steeled hearts and minds. Those were things limited to soldiers and not common citizens, so Yao Yuan understood why they had no appetite.

"One more day, the last day. ZERO, please, you mustn't be late!"

Yao Yuan mumbled under his breath. Suddenly, he thought about the time when he remembered the natural attraction he had toward cosmic adapters. At the time, the Observer bots were sent out of the Hope. When they finally returned, what they saw recorded by the robots made their hearts skip several beats.

Not far away from the Hope was a small spaceship idling. This was obviously a scouting ship meant to enter the Hope!

Even though the ship had already distanced itself from the Hope, the fear remained. What if they hadn't sent out the Observer bots then? Would the spaceship have entered the Hope just like that? Would humanity have survived? The final solution was Yao Yuan pushing the self-destruct button and ending humanity once and for all. This made a few senior scientists faint from anxiousness. In fact, there were still two of them lying at the hospital.

So far, the aliens hadn't entered the Hope, but nobody knew whether the aliens would send out a third exploration party and this time finally enter the Hope. This was especially true after Eva had lost her Sage power.

Yao Yuan turned to look at Eva. The little girl was smothered by a huge, fleece, winter coat. The Hope's internal temperature was maintained at a constant 20 degrees; it wasn't too warm nor too cold. The reason Eva was wearing so many layers was because she was extremely weakened.

The girl's face barely had any color and she kept on yawning. She looked like she didn't have the energy to even straighten herself up, much less eat. However, there was nothing wrong with her body according to the doctors. In reality, Yao Yuan and other people knew that as long as she stopped using her power, she

would instantly recover, but at such a sensitive time, no one dared to ask her to go rest, even if it might kill the girl. Eva knew that she was the last straw keeping the Hope alive, so she clenched her teeth and tried her best to hold out until the very end.

One more day and everything would be over...

With this thought, Yao Yuan swallowed his last bite of food. When he passed his plate away, Eva suddenly yelled out and stood up from her chair with a shocked expression.

"They're here! I see it now. Tomorrow, there will a small ship entering the Hope and 6 aliens will come down from it... They are in the Hope! The aliens are inside the Hope! It's over... Wait, Xiao Niao finally came over with the news. ZERO is here, she's finally here!"

The room was silent as they watched Eva. When the girl seemed to have finished, they all turned to look at Yao Yuan.

Yao Yuan looked at Eva's blanched face and her slightly swaying body. His heart was pained, but for the safety of 200,000 people, he clenched his teeth and said, "Use the Supermagnetic Planet Annihilating Rail-Cannon, use the cannon to demolish the ship! And then we will warp away!"

Eva's face seemed to turn paler. This was the effect of exerting her power. The girl suddenly coughed up a pool of blood and she seemed to be ready to faint. Before she collapsed, she said in a hurry, "The ship was destroyed and no aliens entered the Hope... No, that's because the Hope is destroyed. The mothership from far away gathered many energy beams and the Hope completely evaporated in the energy beam..."

After all that, Eva completely collapsed. Curiously enough, color started to return to her face. It looked just like what happened to Jay before he went into the coma!

The second prediction silenced the room once more. Everyone

once again turned to focus on Yao Yuan, and his face was as pale as Eva's from earlier.

"...Then we shall capture these aliens! The mothership will hesitate to attack, because their people will be on the ship. We will take advantage of this confusion to warp away!

"Ol' Wong, gather the Black Star Troopers and assign each platoon with a mature Black Dragon... We need to detain this group of alien infiltrators in the shortest amount of time!"

# Chapter 307: Arrival!

---

Eva became half vegetable...

This so-called half vegetable state was when the brain was confirmed dead, but weirdly enough, the brain still showcased some minute activities. The activities were unlike normal brain waves. The situation was similar to Jay's condition; it was a type of recovery period of Homo Evolutis, but no one knew how long they would be asleep for, because currently mankind didn't have the technology to resuscitate them...

Yao Yuan stood in the ICU room and looked at the girl's peaceful sleeping face. His heart felt pain.

Eva was the biggest contributor in this incident with the level 3 space civilization. If not for her Sage power, the Hope would've been enslaved without knowing how or why. Yao Yuan might not even have had time to pull the self-destruct trigger and humanity would've been enslaved by this level 3 space civilization just like that. On this point alone, Eva was humanity's real saviour. She was so much more important than himself, who was only humans' savior by name.

But she was only a little girl!

Yao Yuan could still remember when Eva was only a few years old when she boarded the Hope. Due to the anarchy back on Earth, Eva was only skin and bones back then. The pair of inquisitive eyes didn't lose their luster, however. Yao Yuan remembered feeling melancholic watching the group of intellectuals and children shoveling food into their mouths like refugees that hadn't seen food for years. At the time, little Eva even asked cautiously whether she could bring some food home with her since she was afraid her family might get hungry at night.

Who knew such a little girl would become humanity's savior several years later? Just like Jay, she over-exerted her Homo

Evolutis power to save humanity and entered a half-vegetable state. This could last for several years, decades, or even until death. This sacrifice was... a bit too hefty.

Yao Yuan sat quietly beside Eva's bed. He raised his head to look at the clock on the wall. It was already 4 AM. After a whole night of setting up the Black Star Troopers and Black Dragons, the Hope's current most powerful military force; widening the circle of information, especially to those that would be responsible for space warping so that they wouldn't panic during warp; and organizing all sorts of trivial jobs, he finally had time to himself. The first thing he did was visit Eva's room.

"Our sacrifice..."

For some reason, this was the phrase that cropped up in Yao Yuan's mind as he studied Eva's sleeping face...

For the sake of humanity, civilization, and survival, even the final hope of finding yet another blue planet, for all of these, mankind had sacrificed so much in the ten something years since they had left Earth. The people's sacrifices, the soldiers' sacrifices, the Homo Evolutis' sacrifices... Jay was still asleep, and Eva had joined him. His Black Star Unit's comrades, Ying...

There were so many sacrifices!

Yao Yuan sat beside her bed and lowered his head into his open palms. Those sacrifices appeared again and again in his heart. They weighed so heavily on him that he couldn't feel anything else anymore. He might've been the Hope's savior, and many hailed him as the ultimate savior, but he understood that they wouldn't have survived until this point without the sacrifices of these true, brave heroes and heroines!

However, the sacrifices were too hefty...

If humanity had better technology, if they were already a level 3 space civilization with 5th revolution technology, if... if all this was



true, then wouldn't there be fewer sacrifices?

Without power there would be no means to protect the things one loved, to protect one's people, to continue mankind's legacy. Therefore, they needed...

Power!

At around 6:30 AM, Yao Yuan sat in the military camp's canteen and had an early breakfast with the Black Star Troopers who just woken up or couldn't sleep. They would need to be in their space armors until Xiao Niao came with the news, because that would be when the aliens entered the Hope!

Time trickled by slowly. Eva didn't have the chance before she collapsed to give the exact time the alien would enter the Hope. The only thing that was certain was that the timing was going to coincide with when Xiao Niao received news from ZERO.

However, even though Eva didn't specify the landing location, she did mention the aliens' spaceship being hit by the Supermagnetic Planet Annihilating Rail-Cannon. There were only a few spots on the Hope that could be targeted by the stationary cannon. Otherwise, the power of the cannon itself would blow up the Hope.

With this clue to work this, the two Thinkers came up with a select pool of landing spots for the alien spaceship. Other than a small number of Black Star Troopers being used as patrol to prevent nasty surprises, most of the military power was congregated in these few possible landing spots, waiting for the aliens to arrive.

At that moment, Yao Yuan had already put on his red space armor. He told Guang Zhen, who was also in space armor, "Ol' Wong, you don't need to be involved in this battle. Go to the Hope's central command and wait for Xiao Niao. The moment he arrives, get the Hope to warp immediately, the faster the better. In my eyes, it is impossible to demolish this group of aliens before we

warp, so might as well warp with them inside the Hope, because then they will be isolated, and sooner or later, we will have them in our grasp!"

Guang Zhen hesitated. He looked at Yao Yuan and said, "Be careful... This alien civilization probably has plasma weapons, and no one knows how the space armors will hold up against them. So be very careful. I'll be leaving then, contact me if you need anything." Guang Zhen then gave a salute before leaving without turning back.

Then it was a long wait. Everyone was anxious, and the most anxious was probably Xiao Niao, who waited in his room because the whole operation would start with him sending out the message. Ever since he was informed of the news the day before, he hadn't closed his eyes. He stared unblinkingly at his computer screen, his bloodshot eyes lending him a crazed look.

"Please let there be no accident!"

Xiao Niao had been mumbling this phrase to himself so much that he felt he might go crazy. Time was slowly moving into noon, and Xiao Niao felt ZERO was going to show herself soon. He barely had the energy to lift the lunchbox he was given and his body was at its limits, but his mental state was hyped. His brain kept on turning to dissect the situation, the possible accidents, why ZERO would be delayed. He sat there thinking and thinking; he could even feel his body being bogged down by over-exertion of his Homo Evolutis power.

"...You've been waiting for me?"

Suddenly, as Xiao Niao's brain came to a mounting headache, this line appeared on screen. Like being struck by a pin prick, Xiao Niao sprung up from his seat. The action was so huge and sudden that he knocked over his brunch and fell back from his seat.

While he was lying on the floor, he picked up his communicator and pressed the button hurriedly. He yelled into it as he tried to

catch his breath, "ZERO has contacted me!"

At the same time, at the Hope's largest space port, a 60 plus meter long silver spaceship, landed. In the spaceship, Blue 6 and his five most loyal second grade bionic men who had been at his side for hundreds of years since he became a cosmic adapter and a few spaceship operators were already in a rather rounded spacesuit. This was the Blue Race's combat-use spacesuit.

"This ruin is so weird. It is so small that it doesn't have centrifugal force, but why is there gravity?"

A bionic man jumped out of curiously and successfully landed. This proved that Blue 6 was right, the ruins had gravity.

Blue 6 didn't have the time to understand the mystery, as he was thinking about the series of warnings he received earlier from the space traffic control, the military, the royal committee, and even the Emperor. However, none of them were able to stem his determination. At this moment, after he was personally in the ruins, his anxiety had finally dissipated. The sense that the ruin was going to disappear at any moment dispersed and in its place was a low degree of danger.

"This is curious. Could it be that it only allows me to go in alone? The more non-cosmic adapters that I bring, the greater the danger? But I've never heard of a ruin that was specific to cosmic adapters before."

Blue 6's interest was piqued. He turned to address his men, "The operators will stay in the spaceship, the 6 of us will enter the ruin... Do not attack anything on sight. My danger sense is low, but that probably has to do with my identity as a cosmic adapter."

The operators moved to oblige. Then Blue 6 led the 5 bionic men out of the spaceship and they walked towards the ruin entrance. Using the simple plasma blade, the metallic entrance was cut down like it was nothing. This kind of easy entrance unsettled the small group.

Before they could understand what was happening, in just a blink of an eye, energy shields appeared in front of their spacesuits. A few hundred "people" in prehistoric spacesuits were firing at them...

Electromagnetic weapons from a level 2 space civilization?

Wait, this feeling was...

At the moment the small group was being attacked, Blue 6 felt a curious emotion, not danger, but...

A resonance with cosmic adapters?

The lifeforms before them were all cosmic adapters?

How was that possible?!

Before Blue 6 could give any command, the 5 bionic men beside him raised their arms and 5 Homo Evolutis in front of them were blown into dust...

# Chapter 308: Warp and Surrender!

---

Photon pulse wave was a real plasma weapon. This was completely different from Earth's supposed laser weapons that could only singe metallic surfaces and cut through thin, metallic layers. This photon pulse wave was a type of high energy pulse wave that could directly undo the material's atomic structure. Therefore, the target hit would disperse like dust, no matter whether it was metal, stone, liquid, or... a life form!

This was a weapon available to level 3 space civilizations in their middle stage. Photo pulse wave was the smallest weapon among all the plasmatic weapons, and as long as the target didn't have energy shields, normal electromagnetic shields were no longer powerful enough to defend against such a weapon, so the target was confirmed dead! This was why level 3 space civilizations had such drastic advantages over pre-level 3 space civilizations. In terms of combat, it was a one-sided slaughter!

The moment Blue 6's small group stepped into the Hope, the Black Star Troopers started attacking these 6 people, but a hazy layer of shield appeared in front of this group, blocking all the attacks. The bullets fired from Gaussian weapons disappeared when they hit the shields. Yes, the Seekers saw this development perfectly; the bullets weren't blocked but disappeared into thin air!

"Energy shield! Energy shield!"

Just as the few Seekers yelled out the warning, a series of lightning flashes occurred and 5 Black Star Troopers evaporated into dust. Then the platoon leaders started yelling to order, "Disperse, retreat and go into hiding! The mission is to exhaust their energy, or have all of you forgotten the mission briefing?!"

Very soon, after the 5 Black Star Troopers were evaporated, the remaining troopers scurried behind structures that were set earlier around the space port. When the Hope was still on Earth, many

defensive measures had been done there, and after the adventure on the new planet and the latest upgrade, the defensive measures around there had improved and increased. The troopers huddled into the available bunkers and started combating the infiltrators.

However, the difference in technology was simply too great. Gaussian rifles, the sniper rifles of more than several hundred Black Star Troopers, and mechanized Gaussian turrets were useless before the energy shield. The focus fire didn't even manage to cause a ripple on the shield. If this was just a normal electromagnetic shield, this level of attack would have decimated the attackers.

In actuality, at this moment, Blue 6's group was still in shock. The earlier attack was an unconscious counter attack. Now, the 5 bionic men stood in front of Blue 6 because Blue 6's life was the most important, or at least objectively several millions times more important than theirs combined. However, the consecutive series of attacks confused them... because the attacks were too weak. They were just electromagnetic weapon attacks, causing them to use less than 50 percent of their energy shield's capability.

The 5 bionic men regained their senses and countered immediately. They aimed the photon pulsers in their palms at the bunkers. However, to the 5 bionic men's shock, the metal structures that they predicted should have evaporated only bent slightly. This kind of defensive power was greater than they imagined.

"How is this possible?! What kind of metal crafting is this? This is a level 4 space civilization's energized atomic metal structure. How come they have such expensive metals but no energy shields?" Blue 6 gasped in surprise.

However, he quickly returned from his shock and ordered, "Retreat, retreat immediately! We've been tricked. This is not a ruin but a civilization's spaceship... But not all has been lost, because this place does contain immeasurable treasures. Return to

the mothership now and tell them to send out the military to enslave this entire ship. Do not kill anyone, because all these lifeforms will be the Blue Race's greatest spoils of war!" While he was talking, Blue 6 had already stepped back from the spaceport and was rushing back to the spaceship.

The remaining 5 bionic men, after getting his order, suppressed the enemy's bullets and assault through a constant barrage of photon pulses. Blue 6 was escorted safely out of the space port, and on the outside, the tourism spaceship was still there. Nothing had changed, and its energy shield wasn't even active. This meant that it wasn't under attack. Blue 6 was overjoyed. He led the 5 bionic men into the spaceship and yelled his order, "Depart now and leave this ruin... no, leave this spaceship. We're returning to the mothership!"

The operators were all elite pilots who were loyal to Blue 6. With his order, the spaceship shot out of the Hope with incredible speed and charged towards their mothership...

Mothership?!

Their mothership had disappeared! The large Blue Race's fleet and mothership had disappeared without a trace! In front of the tourism spaceship was an unfamiliar swath of solar system. Although it couldn't technically be called one, because the nearest sun from their location was at least 2 light years away! This was no longer the solar system the Blue Race was in earlier, this was a completely new area in space!

"Gone! None of the surveillance systems can locate our fleet, no signal at all. This place... is no longer the same space we were supposed to be in!"

About one minute ago, Guang Zhen had received the news of ZERO's arrival and had confirmed they could warp already. No one dared to delay, and the people at the control center initiated the Hope's space warp system at the fastest speed. The process was

successful, way more successful than they predicted. There was no attack or other negative influence, the 4th space warp was completed just like that. And the Hope was only one space warp away from the Noah One!

During warp, Blue 6's tourism ship was still within the Hope, so they too were warped along with it. This was the explanation behind the thing that happened to Blue 6 and his men.

They were stunned beyond belief, as this was something impossible. In just a matter of seconds, the space they were in had completely changed, their fleet had disappeared, and they had found themselves in another unknown part of the cosmos. This was impossible, be it warp drive, wormhole, or the legendary star gate, this was impossible. According to the law of conservation and transformation of the 4 elements, the greater the distance travelled and the greater the mass transported, the greater the energy required. This was the law in space, it was an evolution of the conservation of energy law found so many decades ago. The law of conservation and transformation of the 4 elements, everything in the cosmos had to abide by this most basic rule!

Blue 6 realized that this weird spaceship had violated this universal truth. Time was still uncertain because in space, time was relative. Perhaps you felt one second had passed, but another race in another space had gone through millions of years. However, distance was observable. They had moved at least 2 lightyears away from their original spot. Even if the Blue Race's main fleet was still in the same solar system, it would take them 2 lightyears to reach their position, and crossing such a distance would require an astronomical amount of energy.

The polymerized reactors utilized by level 2 space civilizations was only sufficient for spaceships to travel for several thousand years in space, while cold agglutination reactors utilized by level 3 space civilizations would have enough energy to support the exhaustion of energy during warp drive. a level 4 space civilization



with its ionic particle collision reactors would have enough energy to break through a wormhole in space. This was valuable information the Blue Race had received after sacrificing a lot.

Both wormhole and warp drive required a large amount of energy and time to warp through space; however, they couldn't have warped through such a long distance in such a short amount of time. This was a violation of the cosmos' most basic rule, this was like  $1 + 1$  equals to X, this was scientifically impossible!

The Blue Race had good education, so these types of cosmic laws and theories were taught to almost all the citizens. Furthermore, the people on the tourism spaceship were all elites, so when they realized what had happened to them, they were shocked. At the same time, they felt chilled by fear, a deep fear of the unknown. There were simply too many things that they didn't know...

"We will surrender to this race." Blue 6 was the first to recover. After he tallied up their current situation, this was what he concluded.

The people around him were shocked again. One of the bionic men shouted, "We cannot do that, Your Highness! It is possible for us to surrender, but if you surrender... you are a cosmic adapter, an S-grade cosmic adapter! Your Highness, you mustn't do that!"

The advice was picked up by everyone else, but Blue 6 was exceptionally calm. He said directly, "Other than surrender, do you see another way out of this? If I'm not mistaken, we should be in this spaceship's heavy artillery range, right?"

The operators pulled up the surveillance screen, and as he said, the energy level of the spaceship was climbing, and the surveillance showed the weapons that were targeting them.

"Electromagnetic cannons, super electromagnetic railguns, track cannons... These are all heavy duty weapons. Even though these are one level lower than ours, this tourism spaceship can't withstand the collective fire of all these cannons..."

Blue 6 studied the data on screen and mumbled, "Furthermore, we are only a tourism ship. Yes, we can escape from this spaceship, but what happens next? This ship only has enough food to last us 3 months, and that has to be shared among 6 of us. This ship doesn't have a warp drive system, and we shouldn't bank on the hope that we'll be saved by our mothership..."

Blue 6 pointed at the far sun and said, "Even if the mothership is still within this solar system, we are at least 2 lightyears away from them. When our SOS signal reaches them, 2 years will have already passed for us, so we will already be dead from starvation by then. Even if we don't die from starvation somehow, do you think the mothership will wait for us for as long as 2 years? So our only solution is to surrender... You said it earlier, I'm a cosmic adapter. Under such circumstances, we should definitely surrender because cosmic adapters are too valuable to be killed. As my men, all of you will be given the most basic right to live. Unless I die, none of you will be harmed."

The room was silent, but a short while later, they all nodded. The leading operator nodded in agreement. "Your Jighness is right. He is a cosmic adapter, so his safety should be our priority at all times. As long as he is alive, the Blue Race will try everything to save us, so we should definitely surrender. This civilization is probably at the peak of level 2, so they will understand the space contract. Our lives are negligible, but Your Highness must survive... We understand, we will surrender."

Just as they prepared to send out a surrender message, at that moment, the space was covered with creator's particles, blocking all signals, and the spaceship had disappeared. The spaceship had activated its ECS system. This meant... the spaceship was entering combat!

The leading operator was sweating profusely. Blue-coloured sweat covered his body as he turned to Blue 6 to ask, "Goodness! They're going to attack us. Your Highness, why is this happening?"

Do they not know you're a cosmic adapter?"

Blue 6 was first shocked, but then comprehension came to him. He slumped down into his chair and mumbled after a long pause, "This is bad. I know why, they've lost so much that they don't care about one cosmic adapter like myself anymore... Earlier, when we entered their spaceship, we killed 5 of their cosmic adapters. This is bad..."

"What?" The room yelped in shock. The faces of the bionic men were pale, and two of them even collapsed on the spot. They couldn't believe the 5 people they had so easily killed were all cosmic adapters!

According to the 8th constitution of the cosmic contract, unless it was in the middle of war, opposing parties with the same level of power would not harm or kill each other's cosmic adapters. Those that killed cosmic adapters, be it directly or indirectly, were punishable by death...

Fine, history was written by the winners, and the civilizations that really abided by the cosmic contract were rare, but it was true that most wouldn't just go about killing cosmic adapters.

These 5 people knew that no matter how the Blue Race was protective of Blue 6, if the Emperor, royal committee, or even the citizens knew what they did, murdering 5 cosmic adapters, the only thing waiting for them would be the death sentence.

Just what kind of civilization would send out cosmic adapters at the frontline facing an unknown civilization? Could it be that this level 2 space civilization had so many cosmic adapters that they had an army just filled with cosmic adapters?

No matter how the 5 bionic men turned this situation in their minds, the only thing that came to them was death. There was no civilization in the cosmos that could stomach the death of 5 cosmic adapters. This was a sin big enough equal to the destruction of a whole civilization. Other than wiping them out, there was no other

way; they could see no other option for the level 2 space civilization...

Blue 6 was caught in an impossible quandary. He was unwilling to let go of his loyal men, but he didn't want to die just like that either. It was not that he was afraid of death, but his life was no longer his own, it belonged to the entire Blue Race... So no, he couldn't die just yet!

Blue 6 thought about it and told the 5 bionic men, "5 brave men, I allow you to use suicide to rectify the sin of having killed 5 cosmic adapters, and I promise you that as long as I can return to the Blue Race alive, your graves will be craved with the brave deed that you committed today. You've sacrificed yourselves to save the Blue Race's cosmic adapter."

The 5 men were silent before kneeling before Blue 6 in unison. None of them spoke a word. They stood up soon and headed towards the exit. From the ship's surveillance, one could see the five bionic men in spacesuits heading outside the ship. When they were floating in space, the spacesuits suddenly opened to reveal a chamber right above their hearts. At the same time, the 5 bionic men covered their exposed chests with their pulser palms...

At the same time, in the Hope's control center, Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, and the rest of the higher officials were deciding what to do with the alien spaceship. Other than Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, Ren Tao, Xiao Niao, and the Black Star Unit, the rest of them argued to capture this spaceship... After all, it was a group of aliens from a level 3 space civilization and their spaceship, this was a treasure for the Hope.

However, Yao Yuan's group had their own reservations. This level 3 space civilization was too powerful. They had energy shields and plasma weapons. If they started to rampage after they were captured, even if there were only one or two that did so, none of the people on the Hope could detain them.

While they were in the middle of arguing, they saw 5 aliens float out of the spaceship. The round spacesuits could be seen from far away. The atmosphere in the room became nervous, and all of the Hope's weapons were trained at the small spaceship. The moment it showed any signs of gathering energy, all the weapons would be fired, shattering the spaceship into pieces.

The image stunned everyone. The five aliens opened their spacesuits and aimed the plasma weapons at themselves... Yes, the video was replayed, and the people inside the spacesuit were indeed the aliens, aliens that looked suspiciously like human beings. They were committing suicide.

Then the surface of the small spaceship showed signs of slight energy waves, not enough for it to charge a weapon, but the color of the ship started to change from silver to a light blue...

"I think..." Yao Yuan turned back to tell everyone, "Earlier, there were 6 aliens that barged into the Hope and killed 5 of our Black Star Troopers. I believe this is their attempt at surrender. They decided to neutralize their military force first and then change the colour of their ship... They plan to surrender.

"...Send out the AI robots and use the alien language system to ask them what kind of air they breathe and what temperature, air pressure, and gravity level are suitable for them. Get all the answers, and Bo Li, you take some engineers and build a chamber with this data. Then...

"It's time we go collect our spoils of war."

After 10 minutes of waiting, an AI robot entered their spaceship. Even though the robot looked primitive to them, to their consternation, the robot had mature AI.

After answering all the questions, everyone, including Blue 6, could feel their hearts palpitate. The leading operator asked directly, "Your Highness, this is weird. That was a robot with AI system... Could it be that the whole ship is controlled by AI?"

Blue 6 suppressed the fear in his heart and answered, "That's impossible because that wouldn't explain the cosmic adapters that we saw. No matter what, we have no choice but to follow their directions. Just be careful."

9 hours later, Blue 6's group left their spaceship and entered the chamber this civilization had prepared for them. It had 25 percent oxygen, and even the air pressure and gravity levels were all suitable for Blue 6. Just like that, Blue 6's group became this level 2 space civilization's prisoners.

Right then, Blue 6 finally met the emperor of this civilization. He was a lifeform in a red spacesuit. From the way the people around him treated him and the way he had the handle over the situation, Blue 6 knew instantly his identity. Compared to the fear in other people's eyes, Blue 6 was in complete shutdown from apprehension.

"...Oh my God, he is, is..."

"An Immortal! The legendary double S-grade cosmic adapter, the leader of all cosmic adapters... The Immortal!"

# Chapter 309: Survival

---

"Captain, there are currently 23,439 people on the Noah One, 15,023 military, 5,811 engineers, and the rest scientists..."

In the Noah One's captain room, the captain, Norton Maxier, was being briefed by his few adjutants.

"Is that so? We've lost so many people." Norton sighed as he leaned back in his chair and pressed his military cap down over his face. He stayed motionlessly like that for a long time, making his adjutants nervous and helpless.

Finally, Norton raised his head and said, "Thankfully, the lower half of the ship is mostly materials, like spare parts and a large amount of radioactive ores... However, after losing those things, is our plan to colonize other planets still viable? Can we still survive in space?"

The few adjutants were silent because they were the most familiar with the severity of the loss. The Noah One had lost one third of its people and a large amount of supply, especially the radioactive ores. These were the Noah One's main source of energy, and this accident had made 80 percent of them disappear. The next were the spare parts, like locomotive rails, which would help greatly in resource harvesting. Without these, resource harvesting would take a lot more time.

After a long time, Norton asked again, "How's the planet?"

An adjutant replied immediately, "An exploratory team led by Professor Ash and Professor Lee Hwa climbed through the crack to investigate the planet. The result already came back on the planet's atmosphere. It is as the earlier message showed. The planet air contains 20 percent oxygen, but the level of carbon dioxide was slightly higher than Earth's, so both professors suggest that before they can get a clearer reading, everyone should wear spacesuits before venturing outside."

Norton nodded. "How about the crack on the Noah One? Is there leakage from outside?"

The adjutant answered, "There is no air leakage. Since the Noah One has an isolated cabin structure, there are isolating partitions between each cabin. Therefore, other than the 30 plus soldiers, none of the others have been exposed to the planet's air."

"Is that so?" Norton reverted to silence once more and the whole room was quiet.

"Every one of us..." Norton began, but what he said seemed to have nothing to do with the situation at hand. "Every one of us knew about our future when we left. We knew this was a journey of no return. Our bodies, our souls, have lost our home, our home planet... Earth, like a baby who was taken away from his mother's embrace. We won't able to return even if we die here..."

Norton stood up suddenly and stared at the picture of Jesus on the cross that hung in the captain's room. The picture seemed to represent perfectly their current situation.

"However, this was a step we had to take because Earth was too small for humanity... Destruction of materials, nature, and the environment, this is all humanity's handiwork, ruining the home planet that had birthed and cared for us for millennia. However, for the sake of our future, this destruction will have to continue until Earth was no more..."

"Therefore, we had to leave. Perhaps we will never return to Earth again, and perhaps this will be a futile effort, but at least we've tried. We've sowed a seed of hope for humanity's future. This will be our contribution..."

Norton paused to lift up his military cap and observed. "This can be much worse because at least most of the scientists survived. This means we'll have the technology to survive... How about the sperm and ovum bank?"



The adjutants sighed in relief upon witnessing their captain return to his usual self. One of them replied, "The bank is unharmed. It is located in the middle of the Noah One, and we just had people to go check on it. It is totally fine."

"Then we shall follow the decided plan. Start mating the first batch of 300 babies and repair the ship. Increase the speed of breaking through the crack so that we can fire the satellite into space as soon as possible..."

Just as the Noah One's captain was delegating the work, at the same time, a small unit of about 200 people was climbing up from 300 meters underground through the crack.

The Noah One's warp exit was about 300 meters beneath the surface of this planet. This was a controlled warp because this planet was already set as the warp destination when they were still on Earth. They named the planet "Eden."

The whole plan exhausted several billion US dollars, innumerable workers, and utilized 10 years for it to come into fruition. The plan was to build the Noah One, select its members, issue multiple test warps, and then the final warp... This plan was dubbed Return to Eden!

The Noah One's mission was to warp to Eden and then use the star gate technology to form a stable link between Eden and Earth. Of course, this required a high level of technology, but using the information taken from the UFO, all this was possible within the next hundred years!

This 200 plus member unit, other than 130 plus soldiers, the rest were scientists and researchers from various fields. They were armed with weapons and devices before they left the ship from one of the bridges. They were now climbing to the surface through the crack.

It was worth noting that even though the Noah One's warp had them trapped underground, it wasn't a complete failure. First, at

least, they weren't several million meters deep underground, or the high core temperature and pressure would have crushed the spaceship. Secondly, the space they found themselves in had a natural incline that led to the surface. It was not a vertical drop, but a stair-like passageway. This was a pleasant discovery and surprise.

This small unit was going to be the Noah One's first exploratory unit. In fact, if not for the fact that there were many things to be done on the Noah One, probably all the 2,000 plus scientists would demand to leave Noah One to personally observe Eden. After all, this was the first time mankind had been to other planet, not counting the Moon, and it was one that was able to support life. The desire to study this planet was huge. If not for the heavy militaristic atmosphere of the Noah One, there would be more than 200 people on this first unit.

"The gravity is greater than Earth's by 0.1 or 2 G. The difference is not great, but the temperature is weirdly high, it's 36 degree Celsius. According to our latitude, we're supposed to be in a moderately warm area of this planet, so why is the temperature so high?" A scientist observed as he studied the device in his hand.

Another scientist answered, "How is that an anomaly? This planet's carbon dioxide is almost 20 percent higher than Earth's, so you have to consider the effect of global warming. Looks like we have our job laid before us. We need to first terraform this planet's atmosphere to make it habitable..."

The group of scientists started discussing among themselves on how to change Eden. Other scientists from other fields had anticipation on their faces, They hadn't started their own studies yet, but in the foreseeable future, that would happen. A whole new planet for them to research. That was... incredible!

Suddenly, they saw a flash of shadow dart across the area. The military immediately took up their weapons and trained them at their surroundings. However, the shadow earlier appeared to be an

illusion, because they saw nothing of interest other than some rocks at a distance away.

Just as they let their guards down, a scream sounded. Everyone turned towards the scream and saw half of a body on the ground. The people around the body stumbled and fell, pointing and screaming at the body part that was still squirting blood.

"Be on guard! Turn on all the search lights! Aim them at all suspicious locations!"

The leader started barking orders and then several searchlights were set up. The dark underground lit up like daylight. At the same time, the elite soldiers took up their weapons and strafe fired at the dark corners around them. The bullets ricocheted off of the rock pillars and walls, causing sparks to fly. Some smaller stalactites even crumbled under the fire.

Under such focus fire, several shadows materialized from behind the rock pillars. They could see the other half of the body which still had the spacesuit on. However, most of the body had already been eaten. The shadows were crustacean creatures that were 2 meters tall and 2 meters wide. They had large pinchers and sturdy legs. They moved vertically on their two legs. If not for their weird proportions and ghastly, bug-like faces, their movements would be uncannily similar to humans.

When these creatures made themselves seen, all the bullets focused on them. But to everyone's consternation, the bullets made only sparks on their shells and couldn't pierce through them. The creatures were extremely fast. In just seconds, they were already in the midst of the unit. More soldiers were torn into two, but at the same time, 2 creatures had their shells broken and were immediately riddled with bullet holes.

"Retreat! Retreat back to the Noah One! Report to the commander that there are too many of these creatures!"

As the leader yelled, the rest of the group saw several more

shadows at the end of the dark tunnel, and they were rushing towards them at a ridiculously high speed...

# Chapter 310: Conundrum

---

"I've said, no matter the price, I need one of those shadow creatures, alive or dead, big or small, complete or in parts. I need one of them!"

A major was yelling near the training camp. In front of him stood about one hundred soldiers in blue berets. No matter how hard the major yelled, the soldiers maintained similar expressions, one of calmness. It was a serenity that went deep into their bones; even death wouldn't be able to shake them. These people were different from normal soldiers. If one had to make a differentiation... these people were similar to the Black Star Unit in the aspect of spirit.

The major yelled for a little more before taking a deep breath and concluding severely, "18 deaths, 6 soldiers and 12 scientists... 12 scientists are dead! But only 6 soldiers died? Are you telling me our soldiers are all cowards that only know how to run? This is such humiliation!"

The major strode back and forth in front of these people as he berated them. "Blue Berets are the best agents chosen from all over the world. You are the pride of human military, supermen in times of war and battle. Even though those shadow creatures are aliens like the ones we see in movies, you should have crushed them like Rambo or the Terminator... Now, bring your best weapons and form battle units among yourselves. Move out now to kill all the aliens surrounding the Noah One, then bring back on an alien's body. I only need one... Dismissed."

The hundreds of Blue Beret soldiers were expressionless, but it was not from cold-bloodedness like that of killing machines or robots described in movies or novels, it was a deep-rooted confidence in combat. After all, those that were handpicked to join the Eden's Blue Berets were not those flight risks that would go berserk during times of emergency.

Therefore, these hundreds of Blue Beret soldiers, other than being expertly trained, had ties anchoring them to the Noah One, be it ties of comrades, families, lovers, or children. Only over a hundred soldiers from tens of thousands of soldiers were picked to join the Blue Berets. Other than capability, one other important criteria was spiritual anchorage... In other words, the Blue Berets had people they cared about on the Noah One. They could be maintenance workers, normal civilians, or, if they were dying, the government would freeze their bodies and bring them onto Noah One.

Therefore, on the Noah One, other than soldiers, workers, and scientists, there were 20,000 normal civilians and 2,000 frozen, dying individuals. However, since they were of no direct importance to Noah One, from the beginning, Earth's government didn't release their information. Therefore, the Noah One had more than 30,000 people in the beginning. About 50,000 people were in it before the warp... Due to the accident during warp, now the Noah One only had around 40,000 people.

Since the Blue Berets were already given orders, they didn't have much to hear. They studied the shadow creatures on video and ascertained that these organisms were indeed fast, at least as fast as a panther. They also seemed to have night vision and their shells was a chitin-like hard shell, causing the bullets to bounce off them. If shot from the front with rifles, they would need more than 10 shots before the bullets would really do any damage.

However, the Blue Berets knew no fear. After an emergency meeting among the scientists, they found out that heavy artillery like sniper rifles, high speed machineguns, or Desert Eagles could still kill these shadow creatures easily.

They had such a loss earlier because they were ambushed. With a plan in place, a landslide victory was to be expected. The Blue Berets were that trustworthy.

This point was clear to the Blue Berets and the major who gave

the order. They were sitting on a certain victory. However, just as the Blue Berets prepared to move out from the training ground, twenty of them collapsed to the ground without warning and stopped moving completely.

When that happened, the remaining soldiers immediately spread out to create a perimeter. The medic soldiers started examining the twenty fainted Blue Berets...

"Their breathing is normal, but they are all down with a fever. There are no signs of unknown viruses affecting their blood. However, some of these people have started to show signs of organ collapse. The older the soldier, the faster the decline. When I came to see you, there were already two deaths..."

Norton looked at the people gathered before him with great tiredness in his eyes. They were all in spacesuits... Yes, wearing spacesuits in the Noah One was rather weird, but Norton couldn't care about decorum anymore. He immediately asked the leader, "Professor Peter, all I need to know is whether this illness is transferable. If it is, through what kind of method can it spread? And how fatal is it?"

Professor Peter, who was also in a spacesuit, was a 50-year-old elderly man. He replied, "Captain, I also can't get clear-cut answers to your questions... Sadly, there are too many things that we don't know about this illness. We don't even know what caused it. As I've mentioned, we cannot find anything virus-like in the patients' blood streams. The tests that we've conducted came back with the normal profile of the bacteria back on Earth, so this doesn't look like an alien infection, but..."

"But..." Norton frowned when he heard this one word. It was the single word that he was most afraid of then because this "but" could spell doom for more than 40,000 people on the Noah One...

"But none of us know what kind of form alien viruses could take." Peter sighed. "Perhaps they are similar to Earth's microorganisms,

or they might be a completely different entity. To put it simply... Perhaps an inconspicuous trace substance, like non-living metal particles or even dust, could be the virus on this planet. No one dares to say that such things don't exist in the cosmos. Therefore, we had to quarantine the ship even before getting your orders."

The Noah One was under a completely militaristic ruling. The captain, Norton Maxier, had complete authority. Before the Noah One settled itself and a colony base was set up and filled up with at least 500,000 people, this kind of militaristic ruling would persist.

Earlier, after the first batch of 20 Blue Berets fainted, 200 plus people followed. The Noah One only had 40,000 people, so the news of mass fainting of 200 plus people couldn't be suppressed. This created a hysteria among the public because this sudden fainting told everyone on board that... a super virus had infected the Noah One!

The first person to interact with these patients was the Noah One's public health doctor, Professor Peter. Initially, they had no idea so many people had fainted, they thought it was only the 20 Blue Berets. However, following the increasing number of patients, they realized something had gone awry. Before Norton was notified, they issued a quarantine order. Other than the 200 plus people that were sequestered away, even those people that had constant contact with these 200 plus people were quarantined.

However, this would involve too many people, especially all the soldiers at the training grounds, because the Blue Berets fainted when there was a large amount of soldiers prepping for the next combat with the shadow creatures. The number of quarantined people immediately burst to over 5,000, and at least 3,000 were soldiers...

This was also why Peter came to see Norton. As they spoke, there were still at least 2,000 soldiers that refused to enter quarantine.

Norton looked at Peter and the experts behind him silently. He



saw the determination in their eyes, and after a long time, Norton pushed the communicator button on his desk and spoke into it, "Order the first and second platoons to get into the training ground in their spacesuits... Bring along weapons and anti-riot shields as well as loud speakers. Ask those insubordinate people if they want to infect their own families and friends. Just ask them that..."

After that, Norton closed the communicator and turned to look at the people in front of him. Suddenly, he asked, "Professor Peter, answer me this truthfully. If this is really a super virus infection caused by alien bacteria... Can we fight it?"

Peter was shocked, and his face considerably paled. He sighed after giving it much thought. "...Pray that God blesses us. That is the only thing we can do."

# Chapter 311: Multiple Difficulties

---

It had been over one month since the mass fainting. However, looking back, this unmitigated disaster seemed so preposterous.

Indeed, this super virus which was assumed would wipe out the entirety of humanity left as quick as it came... On the second day of infection, around 30 citizens over 40 had died. This was even worse than Earth's Ebola because Ebola at least had a one week latent period. This kind of virus that killed on the second day was unheard of.

Everyone who knew was mentally prepared. Over the past few days, the number of citizens that went to the church to pray skyrocketed. The church was so packed that some had to stand while praying. Other than that, about 70 percent started writing their wills. Some had gone crazy, but most settled into acceptance of their fate. After all, they had expected as much when they chose to join the Noah One.

However, what happened next surprised everyone. The infection didn't spread, and other than the 200 plus people, none of the rest on the Hope was infected. Even those several thousand who were quarantined alongside the patients didn't show any signs of sickness. This was a development bordering on the miraculous.

There had never been a virus without such a high fatality rate before, discounting manmade biological weapons. From the perspective of nature, such a disease was impossible...

Fine, they were in space, so anything could happen and nothing could be treated the same as on Earth, but if this virus had such speed and fatality, then... why didn't it transfer to other people?

Other than the 200 plus people, those that interacted with them didn't fall ill from the disease. This was obviously not airborne. It was not through bodily fluids either because the few Blue Berets that gave their fainted comrades mouth-to-mouth resuscitation

were as fit as horses as well.

The doctors quickly came up with a hypothesis: the virus perhaps only infected a certain type of blood type or genetic make-up. However, after a diagnosis of the patients, their blood samples, genetic make-ups, sexes, ages, occupations, and lifestyles were all random... Some of them did come from the same background, like the 20 Blue Berets, but what about everyone else? It was as random as it could be.

This was where the clues ended. An incredibly scary virus that infected over 200 people had ended just like that. The doctors, microbiologists, and pathologists on the Noah One couldn't tell what kind of virus this was. The illness disappeared like it completely didn't happen. Trace of the virus couldn't be found anywhere on the Noah One or within the body of the patients.

In the end, a total of 190 plus people died and only 26 survived. The fatality rate was about 90 percent!

No matter what, "only" 190 plus people died from this virus that was expected to wipe out humanity so that was something worth being thankful for. This sudden virus was a rude wake up call for those who still held an optimistic view after they descended on a new alien planet and after the Noah One had lost about 2/5 of its supplies and people.

One month later, the quarantine was called off and the Noah One's officials who had been totally focused on containing the virus found themselves in another quandary, the worst they had ever faced yet...

"Food... Food?"

Captain Norton was discussing the virus with a few doctors, pathologists, and microbiologists when an adjutant came with a report and whispered something into his ear. Norton immediately grabbed the report and flipped through it. He mumbled these words rather blankly.

The adjutant coughed and Norton came out of his reverie. He smiled at the scientists and said, "I will leave the problem of the alien microorganism in your hands. It's good if there is some animal experimentation. Write me a report and I will look over it later."

The scientists knew Norton was asking them to leave, so they stood up politely and left the captain's room together after a few more words.

After they filed out, Norton asked the adjutant hurriedly, "How can there be no more food? We collected so much food before warping... It all disappeared, didn't it?"

The adjutant smiled bitterly. "That's right, the part that disappeared just happens to be the part where we kept most of our food. That was the heaviest part of this ship, so it was that part that disappeared. I'm not sure whether this counts as lucky or not... Captain, according to our analysis, the remaining food can only last the Noah One for about 2 months. If we ration it out, perhaps we can last for 3 months, but this is not the most important this. Captain, please take a look at the conclusion of the report..."

Norton immediately flipped to the last page of the report. The words that appeared stunned him to his core. After a long time, he sighed dejectedly, "How many people have seen this report or how many people know about this truth?"

The adjutant thought about it. "The people that know the whole truth are only you and me, but there are some that know parts of it, like the maintenance workers, patrols, and agents that work around the storage area..."

Norton pulled down his military cap to cover his face again. He mumbled, "Is that so? This means that the news can't be contained for long... Food can still last us for three months, but the water supply... we only have one week worth of water left."

"To be precise, it is six days if we continue using the water at the rate we're using it now," the adjutant corrected Norton calmly.

Norton sighed deeply. "I should have thought about this earlier. Even though there were isolation chambers between the different cabins, the warp still disconnected the internal circuits, especially the water pipes. We were too late with our repairs, and most of the water had seeped outside by the time we finished. Plus, the water storage was at the back half of the ship and so was the water circulatory system... Other than the air circulatory system, the water circulatory was the only one that spread out through Noah One. So only one week left?"

"It's six days," the adjutant corrected him again.

Norton finally lost it. He threw his cap away and glared at the adjutant angrily. The adjutant was pure European. He had short, blond hair, an aquiline nose, and blue eyes. If not for his sharp gaze, one could easily mistake him for a male model or movie star.

The two stared each other down. Finally, it was Norton who sighed and slumped back down his chair. He said, "Austin, fine, I will tell you the truth. Even though you've just woken up from your coma, since you've already read through this report, I'm sure you're already familiar with the situation on the Noah One... You know why those scientists came to see me just now?"

Austin was startled. He thought about it and said, "...I think I know all of them. They are Noah One's famous doctors, pathologists, and microbiologists. Captain was discussing the mysterious virus with them, right?"

"Not completely." Norton didn't hide the fact and continued, "After all, the illness has passed and after 10 days of quarantine for you and the 25 other survivors. There were no new cases of illness, so this thing should be over for now... We were discussing something else. The scientists were analyzing the air of this planet when the mysterious virus stuck, but now that the virus is over,

they continued their work. They exposed this planet's air to a few animals and the result..."

"The result was horrible?" Austin caught up immediately.

"Not only horrible, it was incredibly horrible..." Norton continued, "There were in total 20 animals from Earth that were exposed to this planet's air. From the smallest ZH white mice to the biggest TTTY horse. All of the animals died, with not one exception. The infection started in their respiratory tracks. The air ducts became bloated and then collapsed. Then the blood, internal organs, and even the bones decayed and melted. The situation was even worse than the mysterious virus or those viruses we saw in sci-fi horror flicks. If not for the fact that I've witnessed this myself, I would have thought the animals had inhaled sulphur."

Austin suddenly felt some hypothesis and conjectures come to his mind. For example, since there were pathologists and microbiologists among the people who left, he said immediately, "Is it the virus or microbes in the air?"

Norton nodded with a bitter laugh. "Yes, it has nothing to do with the air composition. In the later experiment, after the air was cleaned with high-temperature sterilization, the animals were fine even after they were exposed to it. According to the experts, lifeforms from Earth, no matter whether it's us humans or the animals, have not developed an immunity against the microbiological profile of this planet. Some of the microbes and viruses are completely harmless to us, while others will be killed by our immune system, but there are some... that will infect us the moment they enter our bodies. Our store of antibiotics were completely useless against them. In other words...

"We have found ourselves on a planet that is hell-bent on killing us. Even the smallest microorganism is extremely hostile to our presence!"

# Chapter 312: Operation Water

---

The conversation between Norton and Austin wasn't leaked to the public, but they both knew this kind of thing couldn't be hidden from the public forever. There was precedent in the mysterious virus incident. The whole Noah One practically stopped for one whole month. No one was interested in leaving the Noah One and all the surveillance systems, the management system, and the internal defence system were down. It was an every man for themselves type of situation.

The situation only changed after the mysterious virus was confirmed to be over. Therefore, it was pointless to hide these things from the public.

"The key is still energy," Norton said in conclusion. "The air is still breathable since the issue lies within the microorganisms. Therefore, we only need high temperature to sterilize the air, water, and food whenever we bring them in from outside. This shouldn't be too difficult. After all, it is not our responsibility to terraform the whole planet, since we're just the first dispatch. However, maintaining high temperature needs energy, mining needs energy, even maintaining the oxygen supply in spacesuits needs energy, but the Noah One's energy storage is already dangerously low. We've lost too much radioactive minerals, and the remaining can't last us for long. We have to get more radioactive ores before the ones we have run out!"

Of course, that was a further goal. The most expedient goal was to increase the Noah One's food and water supply, especially water supply since it was the thing the Noah One needed the most at the moment.

"... From the echo locator, 200 plus meters beneath the Noah One and about 3 kilometers east is an underground stream. It is quite sizeable and should be enough to support the Noah One's water usage, but the issue remains, how do we draw water from there?"

In the operation meeting room, Norton was sitting the table with all the military officials from the Noah One. Different from the Hope, which was far away, there were no signs of scientists in the room. There were only military personnel and a handful of technicians.

Norton addressed the officer beside him, "Major Fujii, please describe the details of this operation to us."

An Asian military officer stood up and gave a salute before moving to the podium. He said, "As everyone must know by now, the Noah One's fresh water supply can only last the ship for another 3 days, so within these 3 days, we have to locate ourselves a fresh water source. This operation is provided by our comrades from the strategy unit. The first difficulty is the distance of the water source. Even though 3 kilometers might sound short on paper, we are talking about underground here. The issue of geological complication aside, the source is about 200 plus meters beneath us vertically. Therefore, this 3 kilometer distance is more complicated than it seems.

"Next will be those shadow creatures. Ever since the planning phase began for this operation, we gained for ourselves about 10 carcasses of these shadow creatures and 2 were captured alive. After the scientists' autopsy and experiments, these are the results they came up with. Please take a look at this..."

Soon, the lights in the room darkened and pictures were shown on the wall.

Fujii continued, "This is a type of warm-blooded exoskeletal organism. Yes, they might look like insectoids, but they are actually warm-blooded mammals, and they have incredibly high intelligence. For example, they are capable of crafting basic tools. We even managed to locate roughly polished skeletal decorations and sharpened rocks in their lairs. Rudimentary assessment put their intelligence at the same level as prehistoric men.



"These intelligent creatures are our second difficulty. A word of warning: according to our current data, there are at least one thousand of these creatures in the Noah One's close vicinity... Other than that, their shells contain an aseismatic structure. This is an evolution that surprised all the scientists. Regardless, this means that the creatures' shells are capable of blocking our bullets. Seven or eight bullets need to hit around the same spot, but the shell can be shattered. However, before that happens, these shadow creatures, utilizing their speed and numbers, will have torn through our ranks. Therefore, the comments given by the strategy unit about these creatures are... extremely dangerous, especially in tight spaces!"

Each person present was one of the Noah One's military officers, but due to the mysterious super virus earlier, most of them hadn't come into contact with these shadow creatures before. However, the detailed explanation from Major Fujii, especially about their speed, strength, and the durability of their shells, made chills run down everyone's spine.

These shadow creatures could evade bullets using their natural speed alone, and their bodies could withstand at least 10 bullets. Their arms were strong enough to be able to pull apart a normal tank, and there were at least several thousand of them populating the whole planet. In fact, these creatures were even stronger than the aliens seen in the movie "Alien vs Predator." Other than the lack of corrosive bodily fluids, these shadow creatures were scarier and stronger!

"...Therefore, Operation Water is not as simple as many here would like to think. In fact, it can be called an impossible mission. It is not hard to envision losing one's life over water, so I advise everyone to be on high alert. We are no longer on Earth. Even facing wild animals, we humans no longer have the absolute upper hand!" Major Fujii turned increasingly serious until at the end, he was almost growling.

"Alright, with the details and difficulties out of the way, we're going to go into the actual procedures of Operation Water..."

The operation was split into three parts. The first was to use the Noah One's military power to demolish all the aliens within a 3 kilometer radius of the Noah One. To quote the strategy unit, even if it was just a fly, they had to demolish it. That was given this planet had flies.

The second part would be to link a rubber hose of about 5,000 meters long from the Noah One to the water source. Of course, even though the Noah One had many supplies, it didn't have a 5,000-meter-long rubber hose. Furthermore, there wouldn't be such a long, uninterrupted one on the Noah One. Even if there was, the water pressure wouldn't be high enough to transport the water from several meters up to the Noah One.

Therefore, part two was more complicated. 3 to 5 hydro pumps had to be built between the Noah One and the water source. The pumps would be used to increase pressure to allow the water to flow from the source to the Noah One. This process would require the contributions of many technicians. These technicians were not soldiers, and every single one of them was an elite specially picked from Earth, so the loss of one would be a big blow to the Noah One. This was why they had to go through part one before starting part two.

The first part was scheduled to take two to three days to complete, while the second part would need half a month. In the meantime, the water needed by the Noah One would be hauled back daily by soldiers from the water source using altered cars. A transport mission like this required a safe route, so there couldn't be hidden danger.

The third part would be a long term plan. A rubber hose wasn't that reliable long term. Temporarily, it was impossible for the Noah One to float, or at least that was impossible in the next ten years, so human beings were expected to spend at least another ten

years underground. This water hose would eventually have to be upgraded to be metallic, but this operation would take time, at least one or two years before it reached fruition.

"...Part one of Operation Water will officially begin at 3 PM this afternoon. A total of 6 large units of about 9,000 soldiers will be involved. The Blue Berets will be the leaders, guiding the Special Forces to hunt down the middle to large size creatures, while the rest will do a blanket search and hunt."

After Major Fujii finished, Norton added a few inspirational words. Then the members from the strategy unit gave the officers their in-depth mission details, like which unit would be responsible for which part, which unit would be responsible for support, which unit would be carrying the weapon supplies and the like.

Just as the soldiers from Noah One was ready to start Operation Water, within the spaceship, a group of geologists was in deep discussion about something.

"The geological stratigram is already out... But how come they look so weird to me? I wonder if I'm wondering this... But have you guys noticed the location of the mantle layer?" A scientist said out loud as he studied the picture on screen.

The scientists around him shared his confusion. The stratigram before them was too weird. Theoretically speaking, a planet's earth layer from the outside to inside should be arranged as such: the crust, the mantle, and the core. The crust was like the tough egg shell, the mantle was comprised of liquid lava, and the core was the center. The crust formed the planet's continental shelf and tectonic plates; they were like a layer floating above the lava layer and their movements were the source of earthquakes. However, this planet had a weird construction...

On the stratigram, there was no mantle layer. In that case, there was no continental shelf or tectonic plates, the whole earth crust

seemed like it was screwed into place.

In other words, the underground layer of this planet was incredibly stable. There would be no earthquakes or the likes. If we follow this train of thought, one could expect a huge civilization under this planet's surface if there was such an evolution, since the underground was a lot more stable than the surface...

# Chapter 313: Missing Persons

---

Operation Water was very successful.

After all, the Noah One was a product from 21st century, and its military had gone through years of training. Combined with the mature weapon technology of the 3rd revolution, like firearms and explosives, it took them less than 2 days to demolish all the medium to large aliens within a 3 kilometer radius around the Noah One. Other than a small amount of shadow creatures that managed to escape, they had killed 800 plus shadow creatures. Among them were more than 100 large shadow creatures, providing the scientists with many alien samples.

On the other hand, the creation of water transport cars using existing vehicles helped solve the Noah One's water problem. However, only 8 water transport cars were converted from armored tanks. The Noah One's heavy siege engines had disappeared during warp, so the remaining ones were treasures. With the Noah One's current situation, it would be another year before they could start building another siege engine. so they were absolutely important. They were used for scouting, battles, and even as temporary pit stops. With the protection of the siege engine's heavy armor, mankind could spend a night outside of Noah One without much worry. In other words, it was these siege engines that allowed mankind to move beyond the confines of the Noah One.

Therefore, only 8 tanks were converted to become water transport cars. However, with 24 hour transportation, they were just enough to solve Noah One's water crisis. This would have to continue until the second phase of Operation Water.

With the completion of the first phase of Operation Water, the second phase would begin soon. The technicians within the Noah One had started work in earnest. Of course, they were protected by a large amount of military escorts whenever they left the Noah

One to complete the underground water pipe.

"...Demarcation of area safety. The immediate zone around the Noah One is green, the zone within 3 kilometers from Noah One is light red, the zone within 10 kilometers is red, and any places beyond 10 kilometers are black. Non-military personnel not allowed beyond the green zone. No personnel, including soldiers, are allowed beyond the red zone without explicit orders. You can refer to the housing pamphlet for more information..."

The announcement was broadcasted around the Noah One. It was lunch, so the engineer team and soldiers had returned to the Noah One. Other than the few soldiers who were tasked to man the pit stops, almost everyone had returned to the Noah One to enjoy their leisurely lunch. There was even relaxing music provided in the public canteens. Due to the great success of Operation Water, everyone on the Noah One was in a relaxed mood. There were plenty of smiles during lunch.

"...The food is running low."

In the restaurant reserved for higher officers, a few officers were whispering as they enjoyed their steaks.

One of them said, "There is still some in storage, but most of it disappeared during the warp. The remaining food probably can't support the whole ship for long... Didn't I hear that the science unit was testing this planet's animals and plants? How is that coming along?"

Another person shook his head. "Even though the high temperature can kill the bacteria, there must be some unique materials to this planet's animals and plants that are harmless to them but will be poison for us. Who can be sure? After all, this is space, so it is better to be careful. It will be fine as long as we can find a replacement before our food storage runs out."

The rest nodded in agreement. These were people from the information era. They had seen those sci-fi movies before, and

none of them wished to have those scary things happen to them, so they had to be extremely careful.

However, compared to these higher officers or even the public, the scientists assigned to experiment and analyze these possibly edible animals and plants were more open minded. For them, the stuff in sci-fi were exactly that, fictional. Even though there wasn't a 100 percent chance that those thing wouldn't happen, those events where humans turned into aliens by ingesting alien flesh was something impossible, or at least it was on this planet.

Why? Simple. If there was really such an organism on this planet, its gene must have incredible aggression and monopoly, not unlike the Zerg from Star Craft. According to the environment of the planet the Noah One was in, it was unlikely that such organisms existed on the planet, or they would have covered the planet completely.

Therefore, these scientists, though still careful with their experiments on the new plants and animals on this planet, all thought that there was chance that they could find new food sources on this planet. For example, there was a species of enlarged lizard. They were 70 centimeters long and 30 centimeters wide white mollusks. Other than that, there was also a species of mushroom-like fungus that grew in humid areas as well as dark black trees with dried branches that collected their nutrients in their roots. These were the few species that the scientists had high hopes would become the Noah One's new food sources.

After lunch, the scientists returned to their own labs. The new food source unit entered their lab and saw on their tables a few new plastic bags of recently harvested samples.

One of the scientists said, with a laugh, "They gave us so many new samples. Looks like today is going to be another long night... But why are there so many red blood spots on this particular bag of samples?"

The surrounding scientists all crowded around the bag and studied the sample with curious gazes. Inside the bag was the body of an animal that was about 70 centimeters in size. It looked like an enlarged cockroach, but its internal organs and structure were completely different from one. However, the most eye-grabbing was the fact that the carcass was covered with spots of red blood.

This was because this planet's ecosystem was different from Earth's in the sense that the organisms on this planet had generally orange-colored blood and not red like the ones back on Earth. This was discounting the crustaceans and mollusks of course. Therefore, when they saw that the creature had red-colored blood, it was quite shocking.

Then they quickly returned to work. With the aid from the interns, the scientists started analyzing the sample. The first sample they analyzed was the animal with the red blood. After all, they were too interested in this biological anomaly.

The analysis report soon appeared... The red blood didn't belong to the organism, it was human blood!

When Norton received this update, he was shocked and angered.

"Haven't we outlined the different zones of danger? Why is there still people venturing beyond the red zone? Or do the Blue Berets now think they're above the law and have decided to ignore the threat of aliens?" Norton started scolding loudly after he heard the report.

The few adjutants stood there motionlessly. The report they just gave was indeed a bit troublesome. In today's patrol, one unit discovered a fresh pool of blood. The unit immediately reported their discovery to their superiors. The information went through the chain of command quickly and the military immediately dispatched a unit to follow the blood trail.

Soon, the unit reached the limit of the danger zone line. In other words, they were about 10 kilometers away from the Noah One. A



few more steps and they would be in the black zone, places where humanity had not ventured into before. The blood trail continued deeper into the zone, but the unit no longer dared to give chase. Therefore, they resigned to collecting clues around the area. They discovered a few sample bags and animal samples that had fallen out of the bags. With no better choice, the unit collected these samples and returned to the Noah One before noon. Now the Noah One's army had done their headcount and realized that 3 people had gone missing from the Blue Berets. The blood probably belonged to them.

Austin suddenly opened his mouth to say, "The place where they discovered the blood stains isn't the black zone, it's only 4 kilometers away from the Noah One. It is well within the Blue Berets' activity zone, so Captain shouldn't punish them for violating the military rules... But there is one thing that I'm curious about. This Blue Beret unit that has gone missing has 3 members in it, and they were only 4 kilometers away from Noah One when they were attacked, but from morning until now, none of us have heard the sound of gunfire. We're in deep underground, so the echo should be obvious, but the surveillance center didn't receive any such signal or even an SOS message. In other words..."

Norton had calmed down and said, after some thought, "In other words, there is an organism agile enough to kill all three of them without them able to fire off a bullet first?"

"No, it's not that." Austin immediately shook his head. "They only found one blood trail at the scene, and there is no flesh or many blood splatters. It doesn't look like the place the three of them were killed, and the blood trail was thin. If anything, it looks like a signal that was purposely laid there to lead us deeper, or perhaps it was a blood trail used a coordinate marker..."

Norton and the other adjutants were confused and asked in unison, "What do you mean by that?"

Austin shrugged and continued with helplessness in his voice, "I

have no idea. This is just the conclusion from my analysis. Based on the blood trail we saw on site, the sample bags that littered the area as well as the gunshot that we didn't hear, rather than the hypothesis where these 3 Blue Berets were killed by some agile organisms, it feels more like the three of them have gone deeper underground, but one of them suffered a light injury and was bleeding. With each other's support, they shuffled willingly deeper into the darkness..."

At this point, everyone there, other than Austin, could feel chills running up their backs and fear blossoming in their hearts...

What did he mean by... shuffling willingly deeper into the darkness...

# Chapter 314: Abandoned Son

---

The disappearance of the three Blue Berets were knowledge only to the soldiers themselves, their immediate family members, and a few higher officers. The rest had no idea what kind of danger hid in the darkness...

However, an anxiousness still fell like a veil over the Noah One. After all, the ship was only so big. It was hard to pretend nothing happened when the officers were all under the public's scrutiny.

"Austin, how come I never realized you were so clever before? No, not clever per se, but more intuitive, especially your focus towards details." Norton studied Austin, who was standing beside him.

The two of them were standing outside the Noah One. Norton just gave the orders to three units to move towards the planet's surface. These people were scouts as they were the first batch of soldiers to be ordered to go to the surface.

Austin was taken aback. He thought about it and said, "Indeed, I too didn't notice this quality in me earlier. Honestly, I have no clue what happen, but I do have a hypothesis. Well, I doubt Captain will believe this. After the mysterious virus, an elusive voice seems to remind me of the details I've missed whenever I am thinking about a problem or issue. It's hard to explain, but to put it simply, there seems to be a voice in my head."

Norton didn't expect such an absurd answer, so much so that he was rendered speechless. He stared blankly at Austin, waiting for the latter to tell him it was a joke, but that didn't happen.

"You're serious?" Norton grumbled. "What do you mean there's a voice in your head? Do you think we're in a movie? Answer me seriously!"

"I'm being 100 percent serious," Austin answered with an

extremely serious face.

Norton was speechless. He chose to ignore Austin's obvious ploy to play with him. After some time, he continued, "How do you think the surface of this planet will be?"

Austin replied, "Probably the same as the scientists predicted. This planet's water mass is lower than Earth's, but due to global warming, the ice-caps at the two poles have been melted, so the sea level is still sufficient... I guess this will be a rather warm planet with a high average temperature. Not that many jungles, but due to lack of civilization, the jungles will be untouched..."

Norton nodded. "It'll probably be like what you said, a warm, sprawling, and untouched world, but... is this really our Eden?"

Austin was intrigued. "Captain, why would you say that?"

"Because I feel a sense of unpreparedness..." Norton shook his head and sighed. "Are our actions really suitable? Even though we were mentally prepared to face death before we warped from Earth, have we really reached a level where we can colonize in space?"

Austin was going to say something but was interrupted by Norton. "Let me finish first.... The Noah One's mission was to build a coordinated star gate on this planet and link it to Earth. You don't know the details, but I do know a thing or two, and this small amount of knowledge is enough to be forced into committing 'suicide'."

"Forced into committing 'suicide'?" Austin repeated curiously.

Norton smiled bitterly and continued, "If we were back on Earth, we definitely wouldn't be having this conversation, but we're not on Earth anymore. After all, there were real cases where people had been forced into 'suicide' due to this information... Do you know where the Noah One's technology came from?"

Austin opened his mouth, but no words came out. He frowned

and looked at Norton before saying, "It's from the alien UFO, or you mean to say this news by the government is fake? No matter what, it is unlikely that the technology was created by us humans, but based on what Captain just said, there seems to be some inside stories... Don't tell me, the technology actually came from some ancient civilization."

Norton laughed with good humor. "No, you were right earlier, the technology did come from the alien UFO. The government didn't lie about this.... But do you know? The technology that we managed to get from the UFO only includes the space warp engine and anti-gravity technology. These are complete technologies; even though our scientists still can't understand them, but they can replicate the blueprints and use them. They are the only future-tech we human beings can actually use!"

Austin nodded along, but he noticed the worrying detail...

"Wait, wait, Captain, you mean we have not really understood the star gate technology?" Austin gasped with fear.

Norton laughed coldly. "That's right. Now do you understand everything? The technology we have on the Noah One are the anti-gravity system that allows this spaceship to move in space and the space warp engine that allows us to move across large distances. Other than that, we human beings didn't get any other complete future-tech from the UFO!"

"...Complete future-tech?" Austin calmed down from his shock and started thinking. He repeated this phrase because he felt it was important.

This surprised Norton. He laughed after some time. "That's right, we only got two complete future-tech from the UFO, but the experts did find out some other information about the UFO... There is another 'world' within the UFO. I have no idea what it really means, but after the release of that information, a series of incomplete future-tech appeared. One of them was a quantum

entanglement communicator. I hear it is some kind of communicator that allows messages to be sent over light years without losing its contents. There were other incomplete future-tech, and one of them was the star gate technology.

"Now do you understand? We don't have the complete star gate technology, and that is why the Noah One even exists in the first place. Star gate technology involves a deep understanding of space science, and this incomplete future-tech is so far beyond our current scientific understanding that filling out the incomplete parts will require decades to complete. Other than time, this technology also requires stable space coordinates to send signal back to Earth so that the scientists back on Earth will have enough data to conduct experiments on the star gate. This is the Noah One's mission, to send the space coordinates of our location back. You have been briefed on this mission, so I won't go into details. What I really want to tell you is this... At least in the next 100 years, no, 500 years, we should not expect to see another human spaceship. Now do you understand? We're essentially Earth's abandoned sons."

Austin was speechless. This was completely different from what the government told him. The government had siphoned many future techs from the UFO, like the anti-gravity system, the space warp system, future energy sources, the star gate technology. The Noah One was indeed on dangerous mission, but since government had mastered the star gate system, they only needed space coordinates and some time to build the star gates. It was not like what Norton told him. Such hopelessness...

"Therefore, Captain told the groups go up to the surface to prepare a site to build the quantum entanglement communicator?" Austin asked calmly after a long sigh.

Norton shook his head. "No, this is only one of the reasons. After all, that is our mission. Even though we are the abandoned sons, for the hope that our future generation can one day return to

Earth, building the communicator is a must, but not now. I mentioned this earlier, the communicator is an incomplete future-tech. First, it cannot be controlled in the sense that we cannot decide which direction it will send the message, and the message can only be received by another spaceship. Thankfully, the other spaceship is back on Earth, so that is not much of an issue. The real trouble is its energy exhaustion. If we keep it active for one day, its energy requirement equals to the energy production for the entirety of Noah One, so we will not be building the communicator now. That will be planned after the next decade... The purpose of this scouting is because of you, actually. Your analysis from before has spooked way too many people.

"...Yesterday, I received the report from the Blue Beret scouting unit. The report states that there are no bullet holes or signs of combat near the location where the blood trail was found... Other than the footprints of the three Blue Berets, there are no other creature footprints, and that blood trail... Do you know how it was produced?" Norton suddenly stopped to ask.

Austin thought about it and shook his head. "No clue, too little information to come up with a hypothesis."

"It was produced by pricking the skin with the sharp point of a bug-like appendage," Norton continued seriously. "According to the analysis in the report, the Blue Beret scouts suspect that the bug was already dead and was prepared to be bagged as sample when the 3 soldiers were ambushed. For some unknown reason, they were immediately apprehended and voluntarily walked into the darkness. At the same time, one of them took out the bug and used its sharp point to pierce through his spacesuit... Shocking, isn't it? The spacesuit that is made of enforced fiber was pierced through so easily. The scientists came back with the result that the bug's appendage is really sharp and stable, more stable than even metal. They are serrated as well, so with enough strength, they can indeed pierce through the spacesuit, but... the amount of force

needed for that to happen is several tons. Do you think that amount of force is something a group of human beings can create?

"However, that did happen. The elite Blue Berets didn't fire off a single bullet and didn't fight back before disappearing into the darkness. Other than their own footprints, there are no traces of others, and one of them somehow created several tones of energy to pierce through his own spacesuit. All of these things that shouldn't occur naturally have occurred."

Norton turned to look away from the Noah One. He looked down at the tunnel facing away from the spaceship. It led deeper and lower into the darkness. The darkness felt even palpable.

"I have no idea what is hiding behind the dark veil, but I do know one thing... it is a terror beyond human imagination! I just pray for one thing: to find a surface area to colonize before this terror expands its territory to engulf us, or else..."

Norton suddenly looked at Austin and laughed bitterly. "I think I will activate the Noah One's self-destruct sequence and let everything disappear into nothingness!"



# Chapter 315: Base and Video

---

The terror in the dark did not show itself at least for the first half a year. The days went by so peacefully that people had started to forget about the initial fear.

The Noah One was still lodged underground. In fact, hope for the Noah One to become a spaceship again was practically nil. At most it could only become a base for the human settlers.

Even though the Noah One could no longer lift aboveground, humanity's activity range naturally couldn't be limited within the confines of the Noah One. As time passed, people felt trapped within the claustrophobic metallic walls and underground tunnels. Therefore, so far, the range of human activities had expanded to several thousand kilometers around the Noah One.

However, for some reason, the Noah One's higher officials barred people from exploring deeper underground. All forms of exploration could only be done on the surface. This had created some mild resentment among the scientists, but the surface had plenty of research opportunities as well. In comparison, they understood that there might be safety concerns if they ventured deeper underground, so they didn't really challenge the ban.

On the other hand, with the finished construction of a defense structure 3 kilometres around the Noah One, the safety zones had to be redrawn. The immediate surroundings of the Noah One was still a green zone, 3 kilometres around the Noah One and within the defense structure was a light green zone, the area from 3 kilometres to 10 kilometres was a light red zone, 10 kilometres to 50 kilometres was a red zone, and beyond 50 kilometres was a black zone. Other than that, everywhere on the surface was considered a red zone.

"...This area is perfect. From the explored map, this place is most suitable to build a base. First, this place is close to the river, it is on

flat, fertile ground, and there is an open coal mine 30 kilometres north-west of the area. Secondly, upstream from the river is a rich deposit of iron. It will provide the resources we need for base building."

Many people had gathered in the Noah One's meeting room. They included the military officials, technicians, and scientists. They were discussing something that had been discussed for almost a week, and that was building humankind's first base on this planet.

Most of the Noah One's supplies had disappeared during the warp. Over the past half year, the Noah One had found more than ten substitute foods, including five animals, 2 insects, 9 plants and 2 fungi. Thankfully, this planet's nature wasn't ruined, so with high tech harvesting technology, like hovercrafts, that allowed people to harvest over an area of several thousand kilometers, the Noah One didn't have to worry about food shortages anymore.

However, there were plenty of other things to worry about. For example, the energy level, metals, and material supplies. The Noah One was still using nuclear reactors to get their energy, so when the uranium that was used as fuel was exhausted, the Noah One would lose its lighting, temperature maintenance, air purifier, and much more. In other words, the moment the Noah One's energy supply ran out would be the day humanity dies.

Therefore, base construction was inevitable, and it would be better for it to be around the coal mine. There would be a giant fuel generator to replace the function of the Noah One's nuclear reactor, and the remaining uranium on the Noah One could be stored for emergency use.

However, the construction details had caused a split, and the biggest argument was about the location and the purpose of this base.

One party felt that the base should be built directly over the

coalmine and the base itself could be the fuel generator and metallurgy base. In other words, the base would become an energy and metallic materials production plant, an industrial city that spared none of the pristine environment.

The other party thought the new base should be on a flood plain that was 30 kilometers away from the coalmine. The fuel generator could be built on the mine, but the base had to be further away. The base would be a residential city and most people on the Noah One would be moved there, leaving the spaceship with only maintenance workers.

This was the difference in opinion. One side thought the base should be an industrial site, while the other thought it should be a residential city. Each had their own arguments. The industrial party said that the planet still had many unknown dangers, especially under the circumstances where human beings still couldn't breathe the air directly, so they shouldn't let the citizens out of the Noah One, because it amounted to murder. On the other hand, the other party argued that the living conditions underground were not palatable and they should fulfil the citizens' wishes to interact with nature. This was especially true for children, as it was not good for their development to be cooped up underground.

In comparison, the industrial party's argument was more acceptable. It was good to interact with nature, but if the interaction involved life-threatening danger, then most wouldn't choose something like that. The industrial party's plan was more safe and acceptable.

However, for some reason, the military officials leaned towards the residential area base compared to the safer industrial base. It also due to the officers' leaning and intervention that the industrial base that had more public support was at a similar level as the residential base idea.

Until now, both sides were still arguing and proposing their own

ideas. The discussion could not be allowed to drag on anymore, so finally, the military decided to step in to introduce a compromise, which was an industrial-residential base.

Other than providing enough electricity, the base would be responsible for producing a large amount of metallic materials like iron, copper, silver, aluminium, and the like. They would also search for a rubber substitute on the planet or create a mass plantation using the rubber tree seeds brought from Earth. They would look for radioactive ores as well.

At the same time, residential areas would be built within the base. Of course, not everyone would be forced to move there. It would be a half-permanent, castle-esque residence that would not only isolate the planet's air but also be installed with a homeostatic system, weapons, and defense systems. It could be used as a defensive fort whenever necessary.

"...This is too obvious."

Norton sighed and told the adjutants before him.

They knew what Norton meant. The evidence of military intervention in this base building was too obvious. Even the purpose of the supposed residential area was too obvious. It looked more like a war fortress than a residential area. Due to this, many people had started asking around about whether there would be an impending war. These citizens were not dummies, and the way the military intervened in the base building was such an obvious tip off.

"It is rather obvious, but we don't have time to do this leisurely. Yun Si has once again felt the danger coming, and it's getting closer," Austin added.

It had been half a year since the mysterious virus, and of the survivors of the virus, around 8 of them had found obvious differences in their bodies. For example, Austin displayed a mental acuity that wasn't there before, and the military doctor by the

name of Yang Yun Si displayed a sort of danger prediction ability.

The military was slowly given to notice the changes in these 8 people. For example, Yun Si's power was found out after he managed to save his patrol unit from certain death multiple times.

Not only that, about a month ago, a secret exploration unit comprising of Blue Berets and Yun Si were given the task of venturing underground to investigate what kind of danger was lurking underneath. They came back with a broken spacesuit, and the technicians started pulling the video device embedded within the suit.

Every spacesuit was equipped with such a device. It would record the wearer's last moments before the spacesuit died from battery or damage. It was due to the footage on the video that the Noah One's officers decided to move aboveground. In fact, if the situation demanded it, they wouldn't hesitate to abandon the Noah One.

The video was from the three Blue Berets that disappeared half a year ago. The video showed them collecting samples. In the video, a floating creature about the size of a football that looked suspiciously like an octopus with tentacles floated to the three soldiers.

However, curiously, the three of them didn't seem to notice the octopus. Even when the octopus landed on one of their space helmets, they ignored its presence.

Then, the scariest thing happened...

One of the soldiers opened his space helmet. The video showed him opening the helmet naturally while he talked with his comrades. The octopus then landed directly on his scalp. Even while the octopus was tearing open his scalp and sucking everything within, including the brain and eyes, the soldier was still talking as if nothing out of the ordinary was happening. Finally, the octopus burrowed into the soldier's skull and its eyes

popped out of the soldier's eye sockets. Then it used its tentacle to close the scalp...

Then the three of them continued laughing and chatting among themselves as they walked deeper into the darkness...

# Chapter 316: Continuous Disappearance

---

"No way, impossible, don't waste time thinking about it!"

Wahala's growls pierced through the lab once more. As the leader of the pathology lab... or as Earth's most popular pathologist, 60-year-old Wahala was one of the Noah One's top scientists. He was the leader of all pathological and biological task forces. This normally taciturn scientist was found yelling at the top of his lungs like a madman over the past few days.

Initially, the scientists from other nearby department were shocked because Wahala was normally a consummate gentleman. He usually treated others with utter respect and politeness, and they had never heard him lose his temper like this before.

"Why not? Are this planet's microorganisms that powerful?"

Wahala slumped down the couch with a defeated expression. This was the Noah One's entertainment room not unlike the ones on the Hope, since the Noah One was the Hope's template. This kind of entertainment room had plenty of amenities, from sports arenas to karaoke centers.

However, Wahala wasn't there to enjoy the amenities. He couldn't be considered a workaholic, but how could he reach the top of the science world and lead so many task forces without treating his work seriously? Before finishing the work on his hands, how could he find the time to rest and enjoy himself? Therefore, he was at the entertainment room that day to discuss something with a few other scientific task forces.

The question earlier wasn't posed by him but by the leader of another task force. Wahala replied in a frustrated tone, "Actually, it is not that the microorganisms on this planet are that scary. In fact, according to our experiments and observations, these microorganisms are considered normal. They are not as corrosive as military-use bio weapons, and this is observable from the fact

that the animals and plants on this planet have developed a certain kind of immunity to the microorganisms."

The other scientists' specialty was not in biology, but since they were leaders of task forces, they were all professors and doctors. This meant that they had dabbled in biology when they were pursuing their degrees, masters or phd. Therefore, when they heard Wahala, they were shocked. One of them quickly asked, "In that case, why has progress on the necessary antibiotics stagnated?"

Wahala took a small sip of the red wine on the table and continued tiredly, "It is more complicated than that, but if you want the short version, it is because our genes are completely different from the genetic structure of the creatures on this planet. This is the miracle of nature. In fact, something like this happened on Earth before, but you might not know about this. However, ever since I became the head of all biological task forces, I've seen many of such information. Do any of you know about the mysterious super flu that happened during World War II?"

The few scientists thought about it and nodded.

Wahala continued, "During the war, there was a massive flu outbreak sweeping the globe, and many died, but it left as swiftly as it came. Even the reports and samples of the flu had disappeared. I accessed the secret files of the US government and found details on this mystery. Apparently, Hitler has a penchant for collecting artifacts from different religions, and he even had a military unit formed specifically to fulfil this purpose. This unit once discovered a set of antiques from underneath a Tibetan ice river. It was this discovery that led to that mysterious virus because it exposed to the world the flu bacteria that was secured in ice for thousands of years. The human body no longer had the immunity against it, and that caused an outbreak.

"However, the bacteria was essentially the forefather of later flu bacteria, so eventually mankind started to develop immunity



against it. The bacteria itself also started evolving because it is not only a virus that causes mankind to evolve, it goes the other way around as well. This is why there was no sample of the original flu virus. In fact, this can explain all the mysterious waves of flu that swept the globe, they were related to discoveries of ancient tombs or treasures encased in blocks of ice. However, if the virus was more than several thousand years old, then it would be a prehistoric virus, and that would possibly be fatal to the modern man."

Wahala scratched his balding head and continued, "The human body is that fragile. Our immune system is not really an immune system, rather it records the message that this virus is harmful to the body and sends that message to the genetic level. Then the body will slowly repair the parts that have been destroyed and thus our immune system is really a passive system. Furthermore, and this is the most crucial, we humans have accommodated Earth's environment for millions of years, so our immune system and genes have become so acclimatized to Earth that we can only exist in that environment.

"In comparison, the microorganism profile on this planet is, in every sense of the word, alien to our human body. You give me a total population of ten billion people to acclimatize to this planet and 9.9 billion will die, but the remaining 100 million people will develop an immunity to this planet, and that is the only way to create the perfect immunization..."

The faces of the scientists were drawn. They had not envisioned this difficulty. The Noah One had existed for 1 year and 3 months on this planet, the base on the surface had finished its frame, and the industrial center was pushing out stable productivity. Around 80 percent of the Noah One's energy was provided by the industrial base. Other than that, the industrial center was also responsible for harvesting and hunting supplies. Other than luxury items, like cigarettes, alcohol, tea, and coffee that the Noah One brought from

Earth, the rest of the supplies could be sourced from this planet through the industrial center.

This was a good start. As long as the supplies on the planet were recyclable, then the threat of extinction was greatly decreased. After all, they had explored most of this planet, with the exception of the underground. According to the satellite images, there was no creature on the surface powerful enough to pose a threat to humanity. Of course, this was because humankind had the technological upper hand at least compared to the native creatures habiting the surface.

However, thus far, humanity still couldn't expose themselves to the planet's atmosphere. This was a conundrum because if this planet was going to be humanity's next colony, being in spacesuits all the time was impossible.

Therefore, Wahala's research was crucial. When the room heard the result of his research, everyone was saddened because it sounded like it was impossible for human beings to breathe in the air of this planet without the aid of the spacesuits.

When Wahala noticed the expressions of the people around him, he said, "Actually, there is something that we can still do about this, and that is why I've called for everyone today... I need a high photon dialyser... or rather an atomic level dialyser. This is the key to my research. I know this is a lot to ask, but if my task force has this, then there is still hope for the research, if not..."

They knew the gravity of the situation, so how could the rest of the scientists refuse Wahala's request? Since they had promised him such a thing, then they would give it their best to fulfil their promise. However, they did remind him not to expect it be completed in a short amount time. This dialyser that Wahala wanted was beyond current mankind's scientific level, so it couldn't be created so easily. In other words, at least for a few more months, it was impossible for humankind to walk openly on this planet...

On the other hand, Norton was flipping through a secret report in a secret meeting room.

"So far... confirmed disappearances of 48 people..."

The faces of the adjutants and military officers beside him were drawn. It had been 1 year and 3 months since the Noah One had landed on this planet. Other than the 3 Blue Berets that were hypnotized by the alien octopus, thus far, there were another 48 unknown disappearances. There was no sign of their locations. In fact, no one knew how or when they disappeared. The disappearances were noted during rollcall. They created quite a ruckus in the military until the captain smoothed this over by lying that they had been reassigned to the industrial base.

However, how long could this deceit hold up? The entire Noah One only had several ten thousand people, and most of them knew each other. The sudden disappearance of 48 directly involved the family members of about 200 people. If this continued, the Noah One would eventually find out that they were slowly being picked off, and the havoc then would be unimaginable.

"...At most half a year. We can keep up this façade for another half a year," Austin analyzed calmly. "According to the military rules, another half a year will be the duty rotation, and this will come into the open then."

Norton was silent in thought before saying, "How is the base coming along? Can it hold the entire Noah One yet?"

Another adjutant replied, "I'm afraid not yet. The base is only one year old. There hasn't been enough time to finish building a small city. If we suddenly abandon the Noah One, then..."

Everyone knew what would happen, and their faces were drawn from imagining the outcome...

At the same time, at a defense depot near the underground stream, a few soldiers were happily chatting while a few octopus-

like aliens were floating above their heads. Gently, like falling petals, the aliens landed on their scalps, but the soldiers were completely incognizant of their presence. From the dark, thousands of such octopus aliens floated towards the Noah One's direction.

# Chapter 317: Explosion and Betrayal

---

The Noah One consisted of elites chosen from multiple countries on Earth, be it the soldiers, the few handful of managers, the scientists, and technicians. This was observable from the modernized base that they managed to build in just one year and a few months. The base might've been small, but it had all the necessary amenities, like schools, entertainment centers, industrial factories, and military barracks. It was a real alien colonization base, and based on this alone, these people on the Noah One were indeed the best of the best.

However, none of these elites discovered that the defense outposts were being destroyed one by one by the floating octopuses... Destroyed was a rather harsh word because the soldiers there were still chatting and joking among themselves or were seriously watching their surroundings. However, their spacesuits were open and the octopuses were happily feasting on their brains.

However, humanity was known as humanity because we know how to think, rationalize, imagine, and solve problems. Therefore, when the Noah One's higher officers found out about these octopuses, they started to come up with ways to deal with them.

First, these octopuses seemed to know some kind of hypnosis. Although there were few clues on the actual theory on the hypnosis, it could be through colors, vibrations in the air, or something else. In essence, mankind seemed to have a problem noticing these octopuses, and they would be influenced to open their spacesuits and allow the octopuses to eat their brains.

However, these octopuses had to be some kind of physical creatures, because they could be seen through the video on the spacesuits, and as such, they weren't some kind of ghosts.

In other words, they could be detected and recorded by light or

other types of surveillance. This meant that they had to be close to hypnotize human beings. Therefore, when the elite soldiers were taken over by the octopuses, the surveillance devices posted at the posts recorded everything, and the video was immediately sent back to the Noah One.

The surveillance unit on the Noah One that saw these videos were stunned by the horror... A horror that was no longer possible to be described with words. The soldiers who were standing guard, on patrol, or just chatting amongst themselves had their scalps removed and the octopuses were sucking on their brains. However, the soldiers didn't seem to notice anything out of place. It was a veritable hellscape.

In just a minute, this news was passed on to the higher officials on the Noah One. Immediately, Norton ordered everyone to return to the Noah One and activated the defensive measures that had been deployed around the Noah One.

These defensive measures were the laser security system brought from Earth. It could detect anything that wandered too close and used lasers to zap them. With Norton's orders, the defensive measures surrounding the Noah One were all activated, and the long distance surveillance zeroed in on the school of octopuses heading their way.

"There are about one thousand of them floating 3 to 5 meters above ground. They are moving slowly and look like Earth's mini octopus. We have no clue about their defensive capability or whether they can be taken down by lasers," an adjutant beside Norton said.

This was the Noah One's central command. Norton was sitting in the captain's seat, and around him were all the majors. They knew about the existence of the octopuses. However, the remaining soldiers were shocked and shaking from the scenery from hell.

The officers didn't have time to deal with the soldiers' shock,

because when they saw the octopus for the first time, they too didn't fare so well. The incongruence of having an octopus alien sucking out one's brain while one continued to live life like usual was horrifying. Furthermore, the most important thing now wasn't to lecture the soldiers but to make sure physical methods could be used to destroy these alien octopuses!

The octopuses were slow, but their leading group had already passed through the defense outposts easily and was not far away from the Noah One. They surged towards the Noah One, and the leading octopus was only 200 plus meters from the spaceship. Suddenly, several flashes of light appeared and circular burn marks like coins appeared on the surface of the octopuses. They convulsed for several seconds before falling to the ground. While they fluttered to the ground, several flashes of light occurred again and the few leading octopuses were shot into beehives.

This lasted only for 3 to 4 seconds. When everyone saw the octopuses' deaths on screen, they cheered in unison. There was still an underlying fear, but it had lowered significantly compared to before. Since the octopuses could be killed with physical methods, then it showed that the octopuses had corporeal forms, and in that case, humanity would have ways to deal with them.

However, the cheering didn't last long, because after the leading layer of octopuses fell, the rest slowly swam back out of the range of the lasers in the shortest amount of time. Simultaneously, there was an observable ripple around the octopuses, like ripples that one could see tearing through the air during extremely hot weather.

"...They have intelligence. They're communicating, and it seems like their intelligence is extremely high, since they managed to retreat out of the laser's range at first notice," Austin observed with a drawn face.

There were no smiles in the room. If the octopuses were just creatures hungering for human brains out of animalistic instinct,

then mankind would have a way to deal with them. This was not Earth, and the enemies weren't human beings. They could use bio weapons or weapons of mass destruction to deal with them, and wiping them out was only a matter of time.

However, if these creatures had high intelligence, then this would be a lot more complicated... After their first assault was discovered by humanity and stopped, would they use ambushes in the future? Would they hide in the dark and ambush human beings that stepped out of the Noah One? In that case, wouldn't they all die trapped inside the Noah One?

Furthermore... intelligence meant the possibility of civilization, so just how intelligent were these octopuses? Did they have their own civilization?

In conclusion, there were too many problems surfacing following the discovery that the octopuses had intelligence. No one knew how much damage the alien octopuses could wreck on humanity, but rudimentary predictions put that as very high...

Looking at the screen and the pool of octopuses that slowly gathered beyond the safety line, Norton ordered, "Send out the Blue Beret snipers, have them snipe down as many aliens as they can without leaving the spaceship... Wait, make them wait for now, and prepare the ground-targeted missiles. This group of disgusting aliens, they really think human beings are so easily bullied? Don't look down on us, you bunch of disgusting creatures!"

Over the next minute, the group of octopuses gathering outside of the Noah One slowly increased in size, so much so that even the normal civilians knew what was happening. Everyone gathered by the windows to look outside. Since the underground tunnels were already fitted with artificial lighting, the space of 200 to 300 meters beyond the Noah One was observable via the naked eye.

Several minutes later, several missiles landed at the spot where



the octopuses congregated. If not for the fact that they were worried the underground tunnels would collapse, they would have fired hundreds missiles to squash all the aliens.

Even though there were only several missiles, their power was still strong enough to tear open several craters among the octopuses. This first wave of bombing wiped out around 60 percent of the octopuses. After all, no matter how scary they were when they feasted on human brains they were only the size of footballs and their physical bodies were fragile. If the fire kept burning, they would curl up and die. Several waves of bombs later, less than 100 octopuses remained.

However, these octopuses reacted very quickly. After the mass bombing, the living octopuses didn't stay there anymore, they turned to swim back into the darkness. In just the blink of an eye, there was no trace of living octopus left, other than their bodies that covered the floor.

The people in central command sighed in relief when Norton frowned and yelled, "Where are the Blue Beret snipers? Why didn't they shoot down the octopuses that were escaping? Ask them immediately!"

Before the order left central command, the people around the Blue Beret snipers were all dead, including the members themselves, the technicians, and support that were attached to the unit, the nearby soldiers. They were all killed in... internal conflict...

At the same time, of the people who gathered by the window to watch the octopuses, at least several hundred of them started attacking their surroundings indiscriminately, and the Noah One suffered the death of several hundred people in just minutes...

# Chapter 318: Infestation!

---

"It's light ray hypnosis and deep hypnosis. So far, there are still 140 plus people still in a hypnotized state."

At the military hospital in the Noah One, military doctor Yang Yun Si was explaining everything to the group of Noah One high officials.

The high officials naturally included Captain Norton. It had only been two days since the appearance of octopus aliens, but Norton seemed to have aged 10 years. He wasn't this distressed even when he heard about the disappearance of parts of the Noah One after the warp.

Norton immediately asked, "The theory of the hypnosis is something of relevance to scientists and you doctors, I only need to know two things, whether this hypnosis can be undone and whether it can be defended, these are the two things I care about!"

Yun Si waved his hands helplessly. "Even if you say so, Captain, our understanding of this hypnosis is only a hypothesis. I know you might not want to hear this... but our understanding of hypnosis is very surface level. We know that this is some kind of psychological suggestion; however, this hypnosis method by the octopuses is even more complicated than the deepest hypnosis method we know. In fact, this sounds more like fiction than reality!"

"In other words, there is no way to undo the hypnosis?" Austin, who stood behind Norton, suddenly asked.

Yun Si shook his head before nodding. "That is not entirely true, but at least for these 140 plus people, their hypnosis cannot be undone. From my observation, instead of being hypnotized, they appeared to have fallen ill, and their illness is almost similar to the mental patients I've worked with back on Earth. They are not the simple mental patients, but the most dangerous violent mental

patients.

"However, I do have an idea regarding the way to defend against this hypnosis."

The second sentence brought back the hope that had been vanquished by the earlier sentence. Norton immediately pressed, "What do you mean by that? You have come up with a way to deal with the octopus aliens?"

Yun Si said directly, "It is not entirely true to say that we have found a way to deal with the octopus aliens, but we can still try it. Within our medical knowledge and our knowledge regarding human hypnosis, hypnosis can be separated into sound hypnosis, light hypnosis, smell hypnosis, language hypnosis, and mannerism hypnosis. In conclusion, all of these hypnosis types have something in common: they have to deal with human beings' five senses. Like earlier, the alien octopuses used some method to cause vibration in the air to cause hypnosis. In other words, we have to be able to see, hear, smell, touch, or taste to get hypnotized."

When Yun Si reached this point, Austin seemed to have understood something. He said immediately, "You mean there is a way to completely isolate ourselves from interacting with the octopuses? Actually, this could work..."

Others hadn't caught up. Norton asked, "What does this mean? If we shut down all our senses, how would we discover the octopuses' presence?"

"Easy, by infrared..."

According to Austin and Yun Si's analysis, there had to be an upgrade to the spacesuits to make it so that the spacesuits isolated its wearer from the surroundings, including sound and touch. At the same time, the part of the helmet that looked out would be changed into an internal screen, and the screen would showcase the external world's difference in temperature and infrared sight. Actually, this was going to help human beings see better, since

they were underground.

In the next few days, a large number of workers emergency upgraded a new batch of spacesuits. Five Blue Berets were selected as test subjects. They would wear the spacesuits and venture out of the Noah One and deep into the underground.

9 hours later, only one Blue Beret returned to the Noah One...

The experiment had failed.

When the five Blue Berets entered the underground tunnels, they soon discovered the remaining heat patterns using the infrared vision. To their surprise, other than the heat patterns left in the air by the alien octopuses, there were many traces of human activity. How was that possible? Were there human beings who were immune to the alien octopuses' hypnosis and survived? Or was there some kind of humanlike alien lifeform?

The 5 Blue Berets went deeper underground, and the deeper they went, the more heat patterns they noticed. Finally, they stumbled across the living alien octopuses. They were gathered in front of a giant, underground tunnel. A rudimentary reading said that there were several hundred octopuses, but to the shock of the 5 Blue Berets, they found about 10 humanlike lifeforms among the group of alien octopuses. There were intense heat readings near the brains of the lifeforms. To put it simply... it was like the alien octopuses had infested the lifeforms' brain cavities. In fact, the alien octopus' tentacles were still visible within the cavity!

Unless... After these alien octopuses consumed a creature's brain, could they still control the creature as if it was still alive?

This knowledge sent chills down their spines!

After that, the five quickly prepared to return to the Noah One because the purpose of this experiment had been achieved. The use of infrared could avoid the hypnosis. It could be used to discover the trail of the alien octopuses and would not be affected by their

hypnosis. This was good enough; at least human beings wouldn't be completely defenseless.

However, right then, the hundreds of alien octopuses started moving. However, instead of surging towards the five of them, they started arranging themselves in space into a certain pattern. It looked like a mixture of picture, code, and words...

"...Then, the four people beside me seemed to have gone crazy. They removed their spacesuits and ran headfirst into the school of octopuses. Only I managed to run away."

This was the testimony given by the one remaining Blue Beret. After he returned to the Noah One, he was under heavy surveillance. Other than his testimony, the technicians extracted information from his spacesuit to validate his story. It was as he said, other than him, the remaining four soldiers shrugged off their spacesuits and ran happily towards the alien octopuses.

So the question was, why only four? Why was there one survivor? The alien octopuses were kind enough to leave one survivor to report the situation? Or had this person already been hypnotized and he returned as a mole for the aliens? Or... there was something unique about this soldier that made him immune to the octopuses' hypnosis?

Regardless, this one Blue Beret's return brought with him many questions. The most important was the group of alien octopuses and the humanlike lifeform they controlled... Were those husks of humanlike lifeforms or were they hypnotized, humanlike lifeforms? And were they human beings?

This question didn't last for long. On the second day, around 10 surveillance outposts around the Noah One were completely ruined. The sabotage happened with such expedience that the Noah One didn't receive any alerts. They didn't even know what kind of creatures attacked these outposts.

But the officials had a pretty good guess...

"In other words, the creatures that attacked the outposts and neutralized them were most likely the human beings whose brains were consumed?" Norton asked with a drawn face.

A scientist among them immediately retorted, "That is not possible! Captain, I can still understand something like hypnosis or having one's brain consumed, but how could the body still be controlled after the brain is consumed? That is impossible! How can this alien octopus control a body that has no brain? Do you think that is really possible?"

A few related scientists nodded along to this scientist's argument. Norton asked in return, "Then what kind of creature do you think could have ruined our surveillance devices? How can they know about the location of the hidden devices? Don't tell me normal animals can tell that the devices are hidden between rock crevices!"

Immediately, the room was silent. Norton turned to look at Yun Si. "What about the medical team? Have you come up with a solution to the hypnosis? And that returned Blue Beret, is he under any kind of hypnosis?"

Yun Si stood up and said, "Our team didn't find any trace of hypnosis in his mental condition. Other than shock, he is perfectly fine, so we don't think he is under any hypnosis... Unfortunately, there is still no solution, but we did discover how this soldier is different from the other four."

Many were shocked. Norton asked immediately, "What is it? How is he different?"

"He was, like myself, the survivor of the mysterious virus..."

While the high officials were discussing this stuff in the meeting room, the workers that were in the surveillance room when the group of alien octopuses first attacked wandered towards the Noah One's bridge with a blank expressions. They were heading towards... the Noah One's biggest entrance!

# Chapter 319: After the Big Retreat

---

It had been 2 years and 3 months since the Noah One had landed on this planet...

Yun Si flipped through his notebook that was earmarked at multiple pages and used his fountain pen to carefully write in it. He was running out of ink, so he was careful to not make any careless mistakes lest the pen dried out before he finished writing everything.

As mentioned earlier, it had been 2 years and 3 months since the Noah One warped to this planet, and it had been almost a year since the mass retreat. The happy and peaceful days on Earth were like a dream. Everyone prayed for it, but they knew deep down that it was no longer possible. Even when they still had the Noah One, they didn't dare to wish for it, much less now.

"...We're running out energy after we lost our fuel station and coal mine. If we're forced to migrate again, we will have to start to use emergency fuel. Thankfully, during the precious migration, we brought along our electricity generator, so if we manage to find enough fuel, then we can recharge the emergency batteries. The key issue is still the location of the next migration shelter..."

Yun Si continued writing before raising his head and sighing. He couldn't bring himself to continue writing. For some reason, the events from one year ago on the Noah One flooded his mind.

At that time, the high officials of the Noah One were in the middle of a meeting when the world was turned upside down. A school of alien octopuses suddenly appeared within the Noah One and instigated a wide-scale massacre. This was also the first time human beings saw the humanlike lifeforms. They were human beings... except for a few crucial details.

The lifeform shared the same physical characteristics as humans, other than the small fact that the veins on their bodies were

bursting. The key difference was that part of their brains had completely changed...

These humans' brains... had tentacles coming out of them, like the brain had grown a fleshy mustache. Even their eyes were as dark as the night sky. These humans' skulls no longer hosted normal brains but were infested by the alien octopuses!

The scariest thing was that these humans had superhuman strength. They could rip off a person's arm with just a small tug... This was not something that could happen in real life! How could someone be strong enough to rip off another human's arm just like that? Even Hercules needed some tugging and tearing before the arm came flying off!

Such evolved humans and a large amount of alien octopuses appeared suddenly within the Noah One, and the scene was like a picture from hell. It was an open buffet for the alien octopuses. Thousands of octopuses were having their fill of human brains. Either people stood there in shock or they were running away in panic. However, no matter what they were doing, none of them seemed to notice the presence of these octopuses. Even as they ran away from their aggressors, the octopuses had already attached to their scalps and were sucking their brains dry.

Witnessing this, the Noah One's high officials showcased their leadership talent... They were elites of the elites, so in just the matter of a minute, many orders were given. Of course, it was another issue how many of those orders would be carried out.

However, at the same time, the high officials discovered something curious. In the meeting room, a few people could see the alien octopuses with their naked eye. They were Yang Yun Si, the military doctor, two Blue Berets, Xiu Yue Xuan, a bespectacled female scientist, and Austin, the adjutant.

They were the rays of hope in this time of despair. These four people, excluding the female scientist, were sent out to scout the



area. They used weapons to kill and clear out all the alien octopuses that they saw. They were split into four groups, each responsible for gathering the military troops, protect the civilians, and activate the Noah One's internal defense system...

However, their effort was ultimately futile...

Their effort was neutralized by the humans that were hypnotized. Ultimately, only one-third of humans managed to escape from the Noah One and resettled at the surface industrial base. Captain Norton and many of the Noah One's high officials perished during that nightmare-like retreat...

However, that wasn't the end.

Just like how the one-third of human beings wanted to return to the Noah One, the alien octopuses also were hell-bent on vanquishing all the humans.

However, for some reasons, the alien octopuses were extremely sensitive to sunlight, so they would never appeared on the surface. Their ambushes always happened at night, and it was through the usage of human beings whose brains had completely been consumed and taken over.

Due to some unknown mechanism, these humans who had been taken over by the octopuses started to physically change. Other than superhuman strength, another unique evolution was their physical bodies gained immunity against the viruses on this planet. After performing autopsy on these few humans, the medical troop in the industrial base managed to produce the antibiotic needed to withstand the viruses. The contribution of the late Wahala couldn't be understated. It was due to his demand for a high-photon dialyser that the research was successful.

In the following year, it was a tug of war between humans and the alien octopuses. Humans relied on the surface sunlight to prevent the possibility of mass insurgency from the octopuses. After all, not all human bodies could be taken over by the

octopuses. Most humans' physical bodies died off after their brains were consumed. Only a small percentage of human bodies were possible for the alien octopuses to control even after they lost their brain. Therefore, humans managed to eke out a living in the surface industrial base.

This continued until one month ago...

The number of alien-controlled humans started to drastically increase. From the initial ten bodies, it became hundreds. This development set off an alarm in human leader Austin's mind.

With the sacrifice of several soldiers, they managed to capture one of alien humans and discovered from it their secret... The cellular age of the body was incredibly young. How young? Only one month old!

How was that possible?!

"The alien octopuses used our human sperm and ovum bank to manufacture... yes, manufacture is the right word. Batches of human babies. Then they use some unknown method to raise them into adults. and since they were psychologically babies, they were easily controlled by the alien octopuses. This is why there are suddenly so many alien humans!"

This was the answer provided by Austin, and it was the most logical from a medical standpoint. Over the past month, humans suffered a continuous and mass assault by these alien humans. From the initial physical assault to later when they started to use weapons. Yes, after consuming the human brains, the alien octopuses seemed to have inherited human memories and knowledge, including the knowledge on how to use human technology!

Under such circumstances, the industrial base near the surface crack was no longer defensible. There was only 11,000 plus humans that were surviving, and less than 2,000 of them were soldiers. Most of the people saved during the mass retreat were technicians,

scientists, and doctors. Austin finally gave his order to abandon the base and relocate to another spot. They would bring all the transport vehicles, important materials, and fuel with them.

However, human beings realized a reality that sent chills down their spines. The planet's surface was filled with cracks that led underground. The fissures were of differing sizes, but most of them... contained traces of the alien octopuses. These octopuses' numbers were a lot greater than they initially envisioned; there were several million of them. They filled up the entire underground of the planet!

Their only weakness was sunlight. Theoretically speaking, the surface was somewhere they could never venture into, and that explained why the alien octopuses hadn't infected the brains of any other lifeforms on this planet.

That was until the appearance of humanity... With the sperm and ovum bank that would allowed them to create tens of thousands of human beings, the surface was no longer a location these alien octopuses couldn't venture to. Even during migration, the troop still managed to identify other human traces. They were obviously left behind by the alien humans. The signs of activity appeared around mineral deposits. In other words, the alien octopuses were collecting mineral ores, and they probably wanted to advance into civilization using human technology. Their main lifeform would be alien octopuses in human skin...

That was such a heart-chilling realization!

A few hundred of the living humans committed suicide out of despair. About twenty of them were soldiers...

The rest struggled infinitely as they looked for a suitable location to rehabilitate, but... did such a location really exist on this planet?

They didn't realize this, but all of them had started to get accustomed to the smell of despair...

Just as Yun Si closed his diary with a sigh, suddenly, a few soldiers rushed into his tent. One of them yelled, "Doctor Yang, please come out and take a look, the Major is asking for you..."

"In the sky, there is a flying object in the sky! It is not a human plane, it's a UFO!"

# Chapter 320: Only Lifeline

---

Even though they had no idea what this UFO represented, things couldn't be worse for humanity, so this change was better than nothing...

Many stopped and stared up at the sky with this thought in mind. In fact, the UFO wasn't big. It was smaller than planes used for national flights, much less Boeing 747s. However, since it floated only several hundred meters aboveground, people could see it clearly.

On the plain right underneath it, there were already several thousand people gathered there to look at the UFO. There was desperation and anticipation in their eyes; some of them were even soldiers.

"Go back! Return to the forest! Who allowed you people to come out into the open?"

Among the thousand plus people, a few military captains yelled loudly. The order they were given was to set up a safety perimeter around the crowd and not allow any of them to cross their security line. However, more than 1,000 people had gathered on the open plain. The intention of the UFO aside, the congregation of so many people out in the open would attract the attention of the alien octopuses. Therefore, they tried their best to maintain order as they attempted to corral these people back into the forest.

However, the crowd was uncontrollable, especially after they saw the possibility of hope. Of course, there were also people who were more cautious that still hid in the forest to take a glimpse at the UFO. After all, that UFO didn't look like a human product.

Suddenly, a flash of light appeared in the sky. After everyone got used to the glare, they saw 8 people floating off the crowd into the sky, like there was a pulling force in the sky that directly pulled these people into the UFO. After that, under everyone's watchful

gazes, a ray of light appeared at the end of the UFO, and with incredible speed, the UFO disappeared as it sped down the horizon.

All the humans were stunned. After some time, they started screaming in unison as they thronged towards the protection of the forest. There was more trampling in the process...

"8 were captured, 17 trampled to death, 40 plus suffered varying degrees of injury... This is really bad! We are running out of medicine, and many of them suffered bacterial infections. We might have to perform amputations." In the tent, Yun Si reported to Major Austin, who was now humanity's leader.

Austin was a young, handsome military officer, but now it looked like he was fast approaching middle age. He retained his looks, but the word "youth" could no longer be applied to him, especially not after the crow's feet that had appeared around the corners of his eyes.

"This really cannot be worse." Austin sighed. "There are alien octopuses waiting for us underground and an alien UFO enslaving us from the sky. This is truly a horrible planet. Furthermore... we've lost all semblance of unity, so the people will be hard to lead."

Yun Si understood what Austin meant. Humanity was being attacked from both sides. Externally, there were alien octopuses, and now an unknown UFO had arrived to capture human beings. Internally, they were running low on energy, food, and medicine. Furthermore, they were losing their will to go on. Their hope was slowly being snuffed out by despair.

After losing the Noah One and the industrial base, the remaining ten thousand people would have a hard time maintaining their civilization, much less revive it. In other words, it was impossible for them to create the signal tower, meaning no matter how much time had passed, Earth's reinforcements wouldn't arrive at this planet. They were cornered into a dead end!

This kind of situation stripped all hope from the survivors. This migration was a manifestation of human beings' basic survival instincts, but more and more people were even losing this basic desire. These people committed suicide. Over the past few months, there were more and more people who committed suicide, and the previously law-abiding citizens started to wander off on their own. This was what Austin meant when he said human unity was lost.

After a heavy silence, Austin said, "Let's talk about something else. What are your thoughts regarding that UFO?"

Yun Si replied, "When the UFO appeared in my sight, there was a danger signal coming off it. It wasn't as strong as the alien octopuses, but it is obvious that it has malicious intention towards us."

Yun Si, over the past month, had displayed his danger alarm power multiple times. It was similar to what people called a sixth sense back on the Earth. However, Yun Si's danger sense was more accurate. Over the past year, his predictions only failed twice, but he had saved the team more than 30 times. In other words, his contribution couldn't be missed for the fact that they had managed to survive that long. Therefore, Austin valued his opinion.

Austin continued after a short pause, "In that case, the surface will be more dangerous than underground soon."

Yun Si was taken aback. He asked, "Why is that so? There are so many alien octopuses underground. Other than us who have been infected by the mysterious virus, others can't even see them and can be controlled via hypnosis, so how can the surface be more dangerous than underground?"

"Because of the UFO... or the civilization behind the UFO," Austin explained. "The alien octopuses are indeed dangerous, but think about it like this: if we have the whole arsenal of human weaponry, as long as we are not ambushed by the octopuses, we actually have a large chance of directly destroying them. To put it simply, we can

rely on atomic bombs to solve this conundrum.

"But what about the UFO?"

Austin laughed bitterly. "The way the UFO floated off the ground looks very much like our anti-gravity system, right? False, after the UFO appeared, our tech team managed to capture it on video. After using computer analysis, they realized that even though the UFO was floating in the air, it still kept on spinning, so it wasn't floating still. In other words, it wasn't using an anti-gravity system to keep itself afloat. Even though we have no clue how it fares against the anti-gravity system, at least there is one thing that is very clear... The technology this UFO has is greater than ours.

"If we follow this line of thought, then the answer is simple... A civilization with technology greater than ours sent out a scouting UFO to observe this planet and then discovered us humans. Then they maliciously captured 8 of us. What do you think will happen next? No matter what their plan is for the rest of us, be it as slaves, food, experiment materials, there is no way this is going to end well for us. We can never hope that our enemies will be kind to us. In that case, we might as well kill ourselves."

Austin continued with a deep frown, "Comparatively, the alien octopuses don't have the same level of technology as us, or at least so far that is what we have observed. The UFO in the sky is far more threatening because they aren't a problem we can solve with an atomic bomb. Even though I'm still not clear what this UFO civilization plans to do to us humans, at least you've confirmed one thing for me: they came with mal-intention. This is supported by common sense. To borrow a simple analogy, if we human beings come across a low-level alien civilization but they have a technological level that is not on par with and much greater than its general civilization level, then what do you think we humans would do?"

Yun Si answered, "Investigate their civilization and technology, maybe conduct autop..."



"Autopsy, right?" Austin smirked mirthlessly. He pressed down on his military cap, a complete copy of what the late captain Norton would do, and said in a whisper, "I don't think this is a cruelty unique to us humans. If anything, I believe this is common to all sentient lifeforms. The impression of aliens that are peace-loving and naïve but have high level technology is nothing but fictional portrayal. Even if such a civilization does exist, they would have been consumed by civilizations that are more powerful. Because of that, I will never believe that this UFO will treat us kindly. The supposed peaceful co-existence depends on the similarity in technological levels that can be used to limit each other."

Yun Si was silenced. After a long pause, he asked cautiously, "Then what are we going to do? According to your analysis, there is technically no way out for us human beings anymore."

"No, there is still one lifeline left. Even though the chance of it succeeding is exceptionally low, as low as one over one billion, it is still a lifeline..."

Austin raised his head and said seriously, "We will go take back the Noah One! And then use the space warp engine to warp out of this planet and into the unknown cosmos!"

# Chapter 321: Cursed Planet and Negotiation

## (1)

---

The Parlei Race was a level 2 civilization that defied lightning and thunder. To be more specific, they were at the peak of level 2 civilization and only needed a small catalyst to push them into becoming a real level 3 space civilization. Furthermore, their civilization had a middle-aged cosmic adapter that had inherited 6 generations of adaptation, so they could at least survive for another 200 years or two to three generations. Before then, the Parlei Race had a great chance of becoming level 3 space civilization, so they were a lot more powerful than those that were already on the decline.

About two years ago, the third fleet of the Parlei Race received a set of curious signal, and its origin was incredibly weird. It was sent using a technology beyond the Parlei Race's comprehension; it was similar to the legendary space communication technology. Since it involved the manipulation of space and time, it had to be related to a level 6 space civilization or above. This was a legendary space civilization.

However, in contrast to the super high tech communication technique, the content was written in the simplest 0s and 1s. This type of 2 dimensional content only existed for a civilization that hadn't left their home planet. Theoretically speaking, after a civilization became a level 2 space civilization, they would stop using this kind of electrical signal.

This anomaly of super high tech communication technique and almost prehistoric content was hard to understand. It was as if a chimp was operating a spaceship, it was impossible.

This third fleet was the Parlei Race's main battle fleet. It had 200 plus main battleships, 1,400 plus protection spaceships, and more than 5,000 combat spaceships. It was one of the Parlei Race's three

biggest armies, the solid proof that Parlei Race was a level 2 space civilization.

After receiving this signal, the commander of this fleet, the Great Pap Pap Chief of the Parlei Race, immediately ordered the whole fleet to depart towards the location mentioned in the signal in the shortest notice!

The Great Pap Pap Chief guessed that this was a low level space civilization that had fortunately stumbled across a high level space civilization's ruins and had used its communication software. Alas, due to their lack of scientific knowledge, the signal didn't manage to reach their main race but had dispersed through the cosmos. Therefore, this was an open high level civilization ruin that was danger-free and would be the beginning of the Parlei Race's renaissance!

At the time, the Great Pap Pap Chief smoothed down the green furs that grew out of his impressive chest and his face split into a wide smile. This was the perfect opportunity for him to become the Parlei Race's Main Chief...

Therefore, after two years, the third fleet of the Parlei Race, who wasn't that far from their destination to begin with, arrived at the solar system. The first moment they did, they realized something was seriously wrong.

This solar system... housed the cursed planet!

"Cursed planet? What is that?"

In the Hope's fifth floor, right next to the Black Star Troopers' barracks, was an attached jail. This was the place with the highest security on the Hope because beside it housed plenty of Perceptors and Diviners. Even a fly couldn't leave this area unnoticed, much less a sentient being.

This was 10 days before the last controlled warp. 10 days from now, ZERO would help them warp one last time. This was the time

when the Hope's army was at its busiest. The Black Star Troopers had heightened their training, so there was no chance for breaking out of this prison.

After idling for several months, these members from a civilization called the "Blue Race" had finally met Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, Ren Tao, Xiao Niao, and other military officials in person.

"...Finally took down the creator's particle layer? You even stopped the three inspections that happened daily and finally confirmed we're not dangerous?" Blue 6 asked with resentment.

He was the Blue Race's Blue 6, the sixth heir to the level 3 space civilization, the Blue Race. The Blue Race was a large empire that had almost full control of a Shelter. He was going to inherit this civilization, he was a S-grade cosmic adapter, and he was cherished ever since he was a toddler, so when had he suffered such a humiliation like imprisonment before? No matter which civilization he had fallen into, barbaric civilizations like the Parlei Race aside, the other civilizations would treat him like a god! If anything, they wouldn't hesitate to give him part of their government control because he was Blue 6!

However, he was given such humiliation here. Of course, it wasn't that his captive was barbaric, at least they didn't pull out his brain and spine and then marinate him inside a nutrient case as a can of cosmic adapter like the Parlei Race would do.

Even though resentment was obvious in Blue 6's tone, his words were like gibberish to Yao Yuan's group. After computer translation, his heckling tone had completely disappeared. It just sounded like a normal enquiry.

Both parties studied each other through the separation of a thick, clear glass panel. Even though the air composition that was ideal to the Blue Race was almost identical to what was ideal to human beings, with the difference being a higher percentage of oxygen, due to fear of bacterial contamination, there was still the need for

quarantine. After all, no one could be sure whether these Blue Race people carried some curious pathogens or not, so quarantine was the safest option for all parties.

When Blue 6 grumbled his complaint, he studied the group of human beings on the other side of the glass pane. Their looks... other than the non-blue hair, they looked just like normal Blue Race citizens. However, there was something that piqued Blue 6's interest, the leader of this race was obviously a black-haired man, but how come the people standing behind him had gold hair, brown hair, and even white hair? Could it be... that this wasn't a single-race spaceship but a conglomerate spaceship containing multiple races?

After Yao Yuan heard Blue 6's translated comments, he replied, "The few months of imprisonment, daily inspection, and creator's particle isolation was because we were uncertain of whether you people carried dangerous pathogens or not. I'm sure you will understand the necessity of all that. Since our technological level is much lower than the Blue Race's, we couldn't afford to be too careful."

Blue 6 pouted. He thought internally, "F\*ck, you people have managed to warp so many lightyears away in the blink of an eye. That is obviously something only manageable by a level 6 space civilization or above. Stop kidding with me. If you want to humiliate us, come out with it directly. Why the need to go with such insinuations?"

"Today will be our first negotiation, and the contents are..." Yao Yuan picked up a piece of document and mumbled as he flipped through it.

Blue 6 gritted his teeth and interrupted him, "Just say how much compensation you want or how many years you want me to service your race. If it is until my death, then I only ask that you will allow my body to return to the Blue Race's spaceship. Fine, I understand this is not enough to compensate for your loss, but if you can spare

my life, I can help get you some technologies that will enable your civilization to evolve to level 3. Of course, it will only be until the earlier level 3 stage, as that is the limit of my power of the Blue Race. If you insist on killing me, then be prepared to be hunted by the Blue Race forever!"

Blue 6 couldn't help but feel sorry for himself because of the lack of leverage in his hands. The chance of him being executed was still very high. After all, as a cosmic adapter of the Blue Race, even if he was an S-grade adapter, he was less valuable than a human cosmic adapter. Since this civilization had an Immortal, killing Blue 6 would 100 percent garner his civilization another cosmic adapter, he couldn't imagine anyone not wanting that.

This was the first time Blue 6 hated his civilization's feudalism which limited his power. After all, even if he was the emperor, he would only be worth slightly more than he was now. However, if the Blue Race didn't have a feudal system, he could use the whole Blue Race's technology to trade for his life...

On the other side, Yao Yuan's group was startled. They looked at each other curiously. The two and a half Thinker understood everything in a matter of minutes. Yao Yuan suddenly decided, "Please wait for a moment. The compensation you're proposing is too low, so we might not be able to agree to your terms. However, since you are still a cosmic adapter, please allow us to discuss this among ourselves first."

Yao Yun immediately led everyone away, leaving Blue 6's group behind in their seats.

"Your Highness, looks like this civilization has a civilized system similar to ours. It appears like we're dealing with a civilized race," one of the technicians whispered to Blue 6.

Blue 6 nodded matter-of-factly. They were notified by the term Yao Yuan used earlier, discuss...

If this was an oligarchy, autocracy, or tribalism, there would be

no discussion since the leader's every word would be an order. If this was any of those societal systems, their lives would depend on the ruler's whims and not rational trades. That would introduce too many variables.

Therefore, this situation had proven that this civilization known as "humanity" was probably a civilization with democracy, a civilized race that could be reasoned with...

In that case, their lives most likely could be saved.

# Chapter 322: Cursed Planet and Negotiation

## (2)

---

"...What did they do that they have to offer so much in compensation?" a scientist that followed the negotiation team asked.

It was a simple question, but Yao Yuan took a long time to answer, "His soldiers killed a number of our Black Star Troopers."

This created more confusion. One of the people around Yao Yuan immediately asked, "Haven't they compensated for that? His few alien soldiers have committed suicide. Furthermore, isn't death to be expected during war?"

"The value is unequal!"

Ren Tao, Xiao Niao, and Yao Yuan answered in unison. Then Yao Yuan explained, "We've been dismissing one important detail, and if the alien didn't bring it up just now, we probably would have lost a lot in this negotiation! The important detail is... cosmic adapters are extremely rare in space!"

"That's right." Xiao Niao added, "We've been raised in the understanding that every human is equal to one another and that there is at most the difference in occupation or capability that might cause some discrepancy, but under our laws, every man is treated the same. Even if the emperor kills someone, he has to be punished the same way a beggar would."

Everyone in the team nodded in agreement. He continued, "However, alien civilizations don't seem to share this understanding. From all our known information, they value cosmic adapters above all else. For these space civilizations that have been in space for millions of years, normal lifeforms can be incubated in a test tube, they are 'cheap', but a cosmic adapter can decide the survival of the whole civilization... In actuality, we



should have known about this for a long time, but since we only just recently entered space, our thinking is still somewhat stuck in the time when we were still on Earth."

Yao Yuan continued as he nodded, "Xiao Niao is right. The people that died on our side were Black Star Troopers. They were soldiers... and according to our normal understanding, soldiers dying during war is not something to really be concerned about. I understand it is cruel, but it is because of this mindset that we forgot that the few soldiers that they killed were the extremely valuable cosmic adapters!"

At this point, comprehension slowly dawned. Then their initial shock slowly turned to excitement.

This was especially true for Guang Zhen; he let out a shocked expression. "I know this sounds uncouth, us benefitting from the death of these soldiers...but I have to ask, do they really plan to compensate so much for our loss? Just because they had killed some of our soldiers?"

Yao Yuan shook his head. He answered after some thought, "Their race's survival has nothing to do with us. Do not give us lectures on humanity or kindness, as this is space, cruel space. From the junkyard civilization to the lying merchants until this race's infiltration of the Hope, they did not hesitate to start their massacre. Do all of you still remember Eva's original prediction? She said that other than cosmic adapters, we would have lost 80 percent of our citizens! So why shouldn't we benefit as much as we can from this situation? Although he did promise something incredible, a whole set of technology that enables us to evolve from a level 2 space civilization to a level 3 space civilization, a whole set of it..." Yao Yuan started laughing in an evil way near the end.

Guang Zhen was confused by what he said, but he slowly understood it. His eyes were practically shining when he said, "I get it now, the alien doing all the talking is someone important from his civilization. In fact... he might be someone of your level in

his civilization, he's the civilization's leader?!"

"Not quite, but that's not far from the truth..." Yao Yuan turned to address Ren Tao, Xiao Niao, and Bo Li. "I wonder if any of you have realized this, because I did... that alien seems to be a cosmic adapter as well, right?"

They hesitated before nodding cautiously. Yao Yuan ignored their hesitation and powered on. "Then that explains everything, like why he said he will offer his service to us human beings. Unless he is the chief scientist for his civilization, why would a normal alien offer something like that. Of course, that compensation..."

Suddenly, Ren Tao interrupted, "Yao Yuan, don't tell me you plan to go claim that compensation? Stop kidding. You might want to die, but I still want to live. You really think we can get that compensation from that giant space fleet? We will most likely get captured!"

Yao Yuan laughed and shrugged. "Of course I understand. The aliens in our custody are so cooperative now because we have the upper hand, but if they returned to their civilization, we would be less than microorganism, probably a mess of meat for them to play with. Do you think I am dumb enough to believe him? No matter how big the benefit, you have to be alive to enjoy it! Although, since he did bring up something like that... Don't any of you think that having an alien strategist that knows plenty about space is beneficial to us?"

Therefore, in the following negotiations, Yao Yuan's group maintained a high posture. According to Yao Yuan's order, they pretended to be holding unimaginable resentment and anger during the negotiations. At the same time, the people from the Blue Race relaxed...

Yes, this might sound weird, but that was what the people from Blue Race felt. Earlier, when Yao Yuan's group came in, they were

too calm, as if the cosmic adapters that died did not matter. This observation chilled the Blue Race people to their cores. This gave them the idea that they were going to die, that these people had decided to kill them, which was why they did not want to waste any more time on them...

Now, the humans' reaction finally fitted their expectations, and that was the proof they needed to be sure that they would not be executed... Since these people had started negotiating with Blue 6, it meant that they planned to keep them alive.

"...First, we are not going to gain contact with the Blue Race again in any short amount of time, so we are not going to give any of you freedom. Until then, all of you will swear fealty to us humans and serve us using your vast knowledge. When the time is right, we will make contact with the main Blue Race fleet.

"Second, when you are in our service, you are not allowed to harbor any intention to lie or harm us. If we suspect any of you of doing that... Please pay attention: even if it is just suspicion on our side, we will most likely execute you and your friends, and there will be no due process, so please do not challenge our patience and hatred. After all, you have committed an unforgiveable crime against us humans!"

Yao Yuan announced all that with a severe expression. Blue 6, who was sitting on the other side of the glass pane, sighed in relief. Then he said, with a smile, "Yes, I understand. Before you get in contact with the Blue Race's main fleet, I will contribute to your civilization as one of the members. Of course, I wish to have a better living environment and quality of life, one that matches my position. At least I ask that the current humiliation be stopped. After all, we are both civilized societies, it is below us to be so hung up on such a small altercation, right?"

Yao Yuan's group was stunned. However, thanks to their earlier experience, none of them spoke, as they had handed that responsibility to Yao Yuan. After all, they were dealing with a level

3 space civilization, a civilization that had spent millions of years in space. Perhaps there was such a rule in space? One to prepare a better living environment for alien captives? But that just sounded preposterous to Yao Yuan.

Blue 6's demand startled Yao Yuan. His Thinker power was in full capacity as he directly asked, "Then what kind of life quality upgrade do you wish for... Do not try our charity, you are not worth as much as to offset the slight that you have caused my civilization!"

Blue 6 let out an expression that meant he understood. He pointed at himself and said, "Of course I understand that. The reason I am offering my service to you is to resolve this slight, is it not? My requests are simple. First, I need to have a personal space, not this life of imprisonment where I am observed constantly. Next will be a certain degree of freedom because I need exercise, or my muscles will go into atrophy. Furthermore, since I have temporarily joined this civilization, I need to know the details and information of every mission. This is for the sake of my own safety... These requests are not that out of line, right?"

Yao Yuan thought about it and said, "I cannot fulfil your requests at the moment. We are preparing to complete an important task. To prevent any of you from causing unforeseeable damage, we cannot grant you any of those requests. However, we will accept parts of your requests and we can discuss the rest after this important thing is over and done with..."

"See, this is what I am talking about." Blue 6 shrugged his shoulders. "I should have the right to know what this important mission is. After all, as a temporary member of this civilization, and for the safety of my own life, I will give my best advice on how to proceed."

Yao Yuan studied Blue 6 for a long time, unable to tell whether this alien was telling the truth or not... Could there really be such an alien that was so loyal to his responsibility? Was he kidding or

not?

In the end, Yao Yuan decided to give Blue 6 some information, including the solar system that they were going to and the alien races that possibly existed there. He hoped Blue 6 could live up to his promise.

Who knew that when this information was revealed to Blue 6, he would let out an expression of abject fear, and he only gave a few cryptic words...

"Cursed planet..."

"...The place where demons are born!"

# Chapter 323: Parlei Barbaric Race

---

The Parlei Race was known as a race of barbarians. Even though there was insult in it, the Parlei Race themselves loved the name.

In actuality, the Parlei Race was only a small offtake of a bigger race. In the wide cosmos, there were all sorts of lifeforms, but in reality, to be able to unite the whole planet and venture into space, the civilization had to contain more than a handful of races. This was why Blue Race was only slightly surprised when they saw the different looks of humanity. Mammals were the first among all the various lifeforms to gain sentience. Generally speaking, the evolution of all mammals was similar, the major difference would happen in the eyes, hair, skeletal structure, or even height.

The major race that the Parlei Race belonged to was number nine in terms of size among the several hundred thousand sentient lifeforms. The race was called Pa, it was an onomatopoeic word. It meant a loud bang. Every civilization had a different way of translating it, but for human beings, it was written in one word, "Pa."

The Pa Race was not mammalian, they were a type of plant-based animal. It was complicated, but basically they were animals with plant-like features. They were like man-eating flowers but had mobility and animal intelligence. The Pa Race could absorb sunlight for photosynthesis, or they could directly consume other plants or animals for nutrients. Even their reproductive system was divided into two. One, they could mitosis out their progeny, but the young needed to be raised from the most basic bud. The time needed was long and the exhaustion on the mother's body was huge, especially the exhaustion of 'soul'. It was basically a suicide mission.

The other type was similar to the reproduction among humans. There was nothing special to describe about that...

The Pa Race valued natural selection and competition above all else. In other words, theirs was a dog eat dog world. Internally, those with capability, like great commanders, brilliant minds, exceptional scientists, or cunning strategists, were all at the top. On the other hand, those who were not blessed with these talents, no matter how important their bloodline, were treated as nothing more than servants.

Externally, the Pa Race was known in space as the most famous barbarians. This was because their combat method was crude and coarse, favouring swarming their enemies with pure strength. No matter whether it was space fleet combat, ground combat, or capturing enemy ships, their preferred strategy was to suffocate their enemies with sheer force... Of course, if that could be called a strategy.

In conclusion, this was a race that believed in the system of natural selection right to their bones. They had no need for slaves other than cosmic adapters, and all the other aliens were sources of food and soul... According to the Pa Race's customs, the waste of any food was despicable. Therefore, consuming even the bones was the most moral action.

The Parlei race was an offshoot of this Pa Race. They were also the most pure of the many Pa Race offshoots. After capturing the eight humans from the cursed planet, the eight humans were pulverized into meat cakes and tossed into pots to be cooked and consumed after confirming there were no cosmic adapters among them...

After consumption, Fleet Chief Pap Pap realized that these mammals were excellent food sources, as they had tender flesh and, most importantly, high soul content. They were unlike normal space lifeforms; their soul content was similar to that of cosmic adapters even though they weren't...

On the second day, after the 8 humans were eaten, about 300 the Parlei Race babies were confirmed to have received soul, and it was a thick degree of soul. Even though there was no birth of a new

cosmic adapter, and they were not expecting one, this type of soul ratio was still a great source of happiness for the Parlei Race. Therefore, even though Fleet Chief Pap Pap was afraid of the legends surrounding the cursed planet, he still gathered his personal guards and a large number of Parlei soldiers.... In reality, there was no one that was not a soldier in the Parlei Race, even the females and children could be counted as soldiers. In any case, Fleet Chief Pap Pap gathered almost 100,000 soldiers to descend on the planet. The legend of the cursed planet, the demons, the greediest civilization in the whole cosmos, had completely left Fleet Chief Pap Pap's mind. Was the Parlei Race a civilization of cowards? Be it a godlike civilization or a civilization of demons, words would come after a skull bashing!

Just like that, on the third day, the Parlei Race's main fleet landed on this cursed planet... It was worth noting that since the Parlei Race was the purest offshoot of the Pa Race, they had the combination of plant and animal in their genes, which made them immune to the viruses common in space, since there was no virus that could infect both animal and plant at the same time. This was also the reason why the Pa Race could grow so big in space.

On the surface of the planet, around 100,000 the Parlei soldiers either rode on their own Pa (imagine loud voice) siege engines or swarmed the plains carrying long-ranged weaponry. In conclusion, this was not an army... It was everyone for themselves!

At that time, the group of humans had hidden in the cervices after discovering the UFO. Among them, Austin observed the surveillance video before him with a drawn expression. This video came from the surveillance devices that were left on the surface a few days ago.

In the video, a group of weirdly dressed aliens was massacring on the surface. This was a group of... how shall we describe these aliens? Some were wearing something like a spacesuit, but from observation alone, it was obvious that their spacesuits were much



better than human beings'. Some were completely naked too. They were about 5 meters tall and had a green complexion like plants, but muscles covered their ape-like bodies. Other than that, there were also many such aliens that had machinery attached to their bodies, like robot arms or even robot legs that were bigger than their whole bodies. They were spider-like robot legs, caterpillar tracks, tentacle robot legs. There were all kinds of these, but the scariest was those whose bodies were almost totally mechanized...

When this group of aliens whose technology was god knows how many years ahead of human beings' appeared on this planet, every single lifeform on the planet was torn open by them easily. They swept across the planet's surface like a group of locusts. In almost a crazed manner, they chowed down any and all plants and animals that they met. Their cruelty and craziness sent shivers down those who were watching the video. Right then, they sighed in relief after listening to Austin's advice that they go down a crevice that they had found. It was because of him that they were fortunate enough to avoid these locust-like aliens.

Austin studied the video until the surveillance device was destroyed for some unknown reason. He screamed and ordered, "Keep moving forward and do not stop! This is not a place for us to stay, we have to arrive at our destination before 6 PM today! This is our last hope, we must hold on to it!"

With Austin's order, the group slowly moved forward again. They took one step after another deeper into the dark. No one knew what kind of future awaited them... death or salvation? Or would they all become nothing more than bodysuits for the alien octopuses?

Nobody really knew... They moved forward only because they were asked to and there was no better option.

On the other hand, even though the Parlei Race was called a race of barbarians, they were still a level 2 space civilization at their peak. Naturally, they would not tear through the whole planet to

find their prey. They relied on their best tracking technology. Very soon, they found many tracks that led them to the mammals that lived on the planet's surface...

A small unit comprising of 300 plus Parlei soldiers found them first. After they located about ten of these mammals using their tracking devices, all of them swarmed the small unit of mammals with a deafening roar. After a short struggle, these native mammals were taken care of easily. However, due to their battle lust... well, since they were the Parlei Race and there was no time when they were not lusting for battle, there was no living mammal left. In fact, all of them had been pulverized into meat cakes. Therefore, none of the the Parlei Race soldiers could tell how these mammals differed from the eight mammals they had captured. However, it was doubtful that these barbarians would be able to tell the difference even if they were not in meat cake form...

These ten mammals had tentacles coming out of their skulls...

After that, to not waste any food, these 300 plus Parlei Race soldiers had a happy barbeque. Combined with the luxurious host of plant and animal resources provided by the planet, the Parlei soldiers had a feast. The food, including meatballs made from the mammals' flesh, went shuttling down their throats...

At the same time, a distance away from this cursed planet, a spaceship shaped like a chopstick appeared in space. In the spaceship, Blue 6 continued his sentence with a face full of terror.

"The term 'cursed planet' refers to a planet that has survived the threat of a neutron star fragment. In other words, the sentient lifeforms on this life-giving planet evolved to a level 2 space civilization, left the home planet for the wide cosmos, but then they returned. Theoretically speaking, a neutron star fragment should have threatened the solar system, but due to some unknown reasons, there are a few solar systems in the cosmos that managed to avoid this fate, and the life-giving planet in this solar system is called a cursed planet...

"Why it is called a cursed planet is a secret to us low level civilizations, but we, the Blue Race, did manage to get a clue or two through our information network. This was a titbit from middle-tier civilization... it is because other than cosmic adapters, all other lifeforms that enter the proximity of the cursed planet will be demonized!

"The demons are the common enemy of all the living beings, souls, and materials in space! They are the greediest existence in all of the cosmos!"

# Chapter 324: Chaos

---

"...I feel..."

Just as a Parlei soldier said these few words, he was crushed by his fellow soldiers because he said a taboo... In reality, the Parlei Race thought that none of them had the ability to have emotions, so the fact that this soldier said that he felt something meant that he was lying.

However, this soldier did 'feel' something unusual. Of course, this feeling was different from humans' or other species' emotions; it was more like the animal instinct for incoming danger, like how small critters, such as mice, would start to scurry before an earthquake. This Parlei soldier felt viscerally the presence of danger.

However, what this danger was, where would it come from, what kind of consequence it would bring, he could not tell. In fact, the number of Parlei soldiers that had this 'feeling' was slowly increasing; a great majority of the 100,000 Parlei soldiers felt it. However, around 20,000 Parlei soldiers felt nothing, and that was because they were no longer what they seemed...

A Parlei soldier stood up while slapping his stomach. He was an adult Parlei soldier. He was 3.7 meters tall and was still in his growth spurt. However, that was not his most defining feature, because one-fourth of his body had already been mechanized, making him a combination of animal, plant, and machine. Among the Parlei Race, he was the soldier among the soldiers.

Due to his unique station, his meal amount was triple the size of normal Parlei soldier's. For example, he alone had consumed three mammalian lifeforms, a lifeform native to this planet. Even though their taste was not as good as Fleet Chief Pap Pap described, the soul content within them was indeed curiously high. The consumption of so much soul gave him the desire to reproduce.

This presented him with an impossible choice of whether to become a powerful father or a single mother. However, no matter what, the more soul he consumed, the better.

This was the third day the Parlei Race had been on the planet. The soldier climbed out a pile of dried branches and leaves of an unknown tree and kicked away a few Parlei soldiers that stood in his way. He rubbed his stomach because he felt that there was something rocking in it. Perhaps it was because he was hungry, or there was too much soul in his system, causing his body to start the mitosis process. He shrugged it off because he was going to go hunt for more mammals, he was going to feast on them...

If the soldier had the thought to examine his body with some sort of X-ray, he would realize inside that his body... his internal organs, not limited to digestive ones, like intestines and stomach, as well as bones and blood, were evolving in a curious manner. They were changing in a manner that was incongruous with the Pa Race's DNA...

At the same time, there was not only the Parlei Race's fleet that had appeared in the space around this cursed planet. So far, two other space civilizations had arrived. The two space civilizations were also level 2 space civilization at their peaks. They had mastered the warp drive technology. Even though their numbers were not as big as the Parlei Race's, they were still forces to be reckoned with. They each had hundreds of big battleships and millions of smaller spaceships. They were weaker than the Parlei Race, but the difference in power was not a huge gap.

When these two space civilizations arrived, what they did was completely different from the Parlei Race. They did not dare to send any of their people to the planet. Instead, they immediately ordered their fleet to be moved as far away from this planet as possible. Then communication was formed between them. This was not because they were afraid of the Parlei Race but they felt fear regarding this planet.

This cursed planet!

In the history of the cosmos, there had been a legend that had circulated across innumerable space civilizations, be it low-tier, middle-tier, high-tier, or even godlike tier space civilizations. The legend was about the existence of the cursed planets...

According to legend, these cursed planets were the final explanation to the concept of 'soul'. The cursed planets were the birth planets for demons, the greediest race in all of the wide cosmos. Whenever a cursed planet was born, it represented the death of a whole solar system. Indeed, it was not only a planet, but the disappearance of the entire solar system!

Of course, there was another dimension to the word "legend." It meant rumors. The legend might be completely different from the original meaning. The supposed cursed planets were an impossible rumor that spread like wildfire across the cosmos. In reality, these space civilizations that knew everything about the cursed planet really knew nothing about the demon race, much less these cursed planets that birthed them.

However, even though the cursed planets were basically legends, there were a few defining features that could help one identify them. First, they had to be life-preserving planet. All cursed planets were life-giving, but they just so happened to evade the neutron star fragment.

Secondly, all cursed planets were completely different from normal terrestrial planets. They did not have the differentiation of earth crust, earth mantle, and earth core. From the surface to the core, there were only layers of rocks and soil. There were no lava or earth layers.

Third, and the most defining feature, was all cursed planets would be at the center in the solar system. The solar system the cursed planet was in would have seven planets, and the cursed planet would be in the middle. The remaining six would be

revolving around it. This was why cursed planets were so easy to spot!

These two space civilizations were seeing this for the first time as well. Six planets were revolving around this one life-preserving planet. This was a miracle in space. If they had not seen it with their own eyes, they would not even believe it. There was only one word to describe how they felt: shocked.

"...Legends of the cursed planets?"

The leaders of these two space civilizations were cautious about the rumors of the cursed planets, especially after witnessing the supernatural celestial activity before them. No lifeform with intelligence would step onto this planet so easily... Of course, the Parlei Race did not belong to this category.

"So thoughtless. Are the Parlei Race a group of brainless chimps?" the leader for one of the civilizations commented.

The other leader replied, "Brain, do you think the Pa Race has anything like that? Their brains are either muscle or wood, or I suppose you can call it a wooden muscle. The brain is an organ wasted on them. Instead of worrying about them, we should focus on what to do next, this cursed planet."

"...Our scientific community has analyzed this set of messages. They were sent out through space-warping technology. In other words, they came from a civilization that was at least level 5. Even if this is only a ruin that has only this space-warp technology left in it, with this technology, we will be able to trade with even level 4 space civilizations in the future! Do you really wish to give up something as valuable as this? This might be the thing we need to evolve from level 2 space civilizations to level 3! Who would dare to give up on this?"

"In other words, your race has come to a decision?"

"Of course... but it is not yet time to act on it. The legend of the

cursed planet has been passed on in space for millions of years. No one knows its origin, but since it's a legend that permeated even the ranks of high-tier space civilizations, then this cursed planet definitely has something unique to it. Perhaps it's a trap set by some kind of god-tier civilization. At least until these dangers present themselves, we will let the brainless Parlei Race open the way for us."

"...That is the decision our civilization came to as well. However, to prevent the Parlei Race from doing something drastic, how about we form a temporary alliance between the two of us? With our combined forces, we will not have to fear this Parlei Race fleet."

"We agree to this proposal..."

This kind of alliance had zero binding power, but for space civilizations with similar technological levels, it was equal to a life-binding agreement. Over the next few days, more and more space civilizations appeared around this cursed planet. They all requested to join this alliance, but some were rejected because they came from unknown backgrounds. Therefore, some broke off to form their own alliances. In the end, there were several tribes and alliances that populated this solar system...

In conclusion, there were about around 10 space civilizations gathered in this solar system. However thankfully, all of them were level 2 space civilizations from nearby galaxies. It was because of this that was no open war, since their power was similar to one another. Regardless, it was because of this too that there were endless suspicions and covert actions among the civilizations. It felt like a war could break out at any minute between the few opposing alliances.

They had all forgotten that the real danger was not these other space civilizations that were targeting each other, but from this inconspicuous cursed planet...



At the same time, under the cursed planet's surface, led by Austin and the mysterious virus survivors, the last group of human survivors was slowly moving towards their destination. There were plenty of sacrifices along the way because no matter what, life had to go on. Relying on the small sliver of hope Austin had given them, they pressed on despite the fact that a number of people would disappear every day. Everyone knew that their brains were probably getting sucked out, but even so...

The rest of them still continued towards the Noah One! They were getting closer and closer to their destination!

At the same time, there were still 5 days until the Hope's last controlled warp!

# Chapter 325: The Start of Mutation

---

Cursed planet? What was a cursed planet?

This question was on the minds of many space civilizations, be it space civilizations under level 3 or level 4 to level 6 space civilizations, or civilizations with even higher level.

From a time which no one could pinpoint, rumors about the existence of the demon race started to circulate throughout the cosmos...

What was the demon race? Surprisingly enough, there was no verifiable news about it among the low-tier and middle-tier space civilizations. In fact, many space civilizations labelled the rumors about this demon race and its accompanying idea, the cursed planet, as the biggest lie in all of the cosmos.

The public enemy of space civilizations, the destroyer of many civilizations, but a necessity among almost every low-tier and middle-tier space civilization, AIs that had achieved Singularity. A mechanical fleet that did not possess any creative power and could only hungrily consume technology from other civilizations. The AIs were only the third greediest race in space.

Known as the space epidemic, the zerg that swallowed any civilization and material was only the second greediest race in space?

Then, just what kind of creatures were the demon race to be called the greediest race in space? What else could they hunger for that was more than civilization, technology, and materials?

According to the legends... the answer was soul. This element that maintained the balance in space, the key that supported the law of conservation of soul!

However, what did it mean by hungering after soul? Almost every space civilization that knew about soul hungered after it, so

what was so unique about the demon race?

The answer lied in the core of the cursed planet, the location where the demon race was rumored to be born. What kind of terror was hiding there? And what exactly was the demon race? Why would a small planet be a threat to one or several suns, multiple planets, a system, or galaxies? This was simply too unscientific.

These were thoughts shared by many space civilizations. Of course, this was not all space civilizations, because for the few high-tier space civilizations that knew about the truth behind the rumors, they felt a spine-chilling fear whenever they talked about any cursed planet. They treated them with utmost seriousness, and not a thing of rumors.

At this moment, among all of the space civilizations around the cursed planet, an intelligence lifeform was going through this sensation...

He was the cosmic adapter for a peak level 2 space civilization and he was a rare S grade Time Watcher. Even though he was old, it did not affect the utilization of his Time Watcher power. If anything, due to his thousands of years of experience, even though he was only a level 1 Time Watcher, he could predict the danger that was far ahead. This allowed him to save his race many times, and he had led his race to the peak of level 2 space civilization and the fringe of level 3 space civilization. He was instrumental to his civilization.

Like other space civilizations, his civilization had happened upon this set of space-warped messages accidentally and had arrived at this solar system by tracing its origin. To his consternation, it landed them around a cursed planet. Thinking about the numerous rumors, everyone in his civilization feared for their safety, but they were ultimately compelled to stay due to the allure of space warp technology from a level 5 space civilization. Furthermore, there were many space civilizations around who

chose to stay as well.

Actually, the common reason to why all the space civilizations stayed despite the obvious danger was only one: profit.

What was a level 5 space civilization?

To put it simply, perhaps there were one hundred level 1 space civilizations, or civilizations that had managed to evolve into technology mature enough to ensure colonization within its home planet's solar system.

A level 2 space civilization, at its most basic, could travel a limited distance into the cosmos and had a large amount of space fleets and a main mothership that could support a population of several billion people. The evolution from level 1 space civilization to level 2 space civilization had its difficulties around the destruction of the environment and exhaustion of resources. Not to be forgotten was the possible betrayal of AI systems.

Evolution from level 2 space civilization to level 3 space civilization required plasmatic system technology and the means to surpass the limitation of light speed. In other words, the warp drive technology. This would allow the civilization to survive and explore the vast cosmos.

To borrow a simple analogy, without warp drive technology, going from one solar system to another would require at least a thousand years, and during that time, the civilization's survival depended fully on the mothership. If there was an accident, then the civilization would be gone. From this, one could see the importance of warp drive. For any space civilization, it was an unimaginable leap in technology. One could say that with the advent of warp drive, the space civilization had the basic ability to survive in the cosmos.

It was because of this that while maybe one out of 100 level 1 space civilizations managed to enter level 2, from perhaps one million level 2 space civilizations, there would only be one that

would manage to become a level 3 space civilization. This was the difference between level 2 space civilizations and level 3 space civilizations!

Since level 3 space civilizations were already so rare, then what about level 4 space civilizations? The gap was no longer describable; it could be seen as a change in essence itself! This was because level 4 space civilizations were the beginning of middle-tier space civilizations, and they had distanced itself from low-tier space civilizations in every single aspect.

Simply put, level 1 space civilizations, level 2 space civilizations, and level 3 space civilizations, their technology trees are linear and connected. Given enough time, population, resources, and safety, almost all space civilizations eventually reach the limit of a level 3 space civilization, the difference being the time taken.

However, the barrier to become a level 4 space civilization was not something that could be broken with enough time. This was because it depended on one key element... the catalyst!

Just like how a level 2 space civilization's catalyst is electromagnetic technology and a level 3 space civilization's is plasma, then what is the key technology to break through to become a level 4 space civilization?

This was the key question that no one had an answer to. Many level 3 space civilizations perished due to getting stuck at this juncture for thousands or millions of years.

A level 4 space civilization was only the beginning of middle-tier space civilizations, and the message these civilizations received was sent with space-warp technology from a level 5 space civilization, and that was even stronger... For these level 2 and level 3 space civilizations, it was a technology that was powerful enough to ensure the glory of their civilizations for millions of years!

Therefore, which space civilization was willing to give up on this

once in a lifetime opportunity?

This was the attitude held by this Time Watcher as well. Even though he was the ruler of his civilization and held authority in his hands, at the same time, he had to be responsible for his civilization. It was because of this that he ordered his civilization's space fleet to stop, but as the time passed, the sense of danger within him increased. The sense of danger that permeated was ubiquitous, it covered him like a layer of slime. With the passing of time, it got thicker and stickier; it made him want to crawl away from that area and run.

"Why? Why is there such a sense of danger? Where does this danger come from? Is it because there are too many space civilizations gathered here? Or is it because of the presence of the irrational Parlei Race? Threat of a space war? What is it? This danger..."

This Time Watcher was sitting on the throne of his fleet and was massaging his head as he thought about this. At this time, his ministers came to inform him that several cosmic adapters from other space civilizations were requesting for communication.

This Time Watcher did not hesitate. Very soon, the line of communication was formed between all the cosmic adapters. However, unfortunately, other than him, all the other cosmic adapters were only grade B or C, so they were completely no match for him. However, during the communication, he did spot something weird.

This group of low level cosmic adapters all felt the presence of danger. How was that possible? None of them were Time Watchers, they were not even S grade cosmic adapter, but since even they also sensed danger... then was this danger very real? And would it come any time soon?

"These space civilizations have formed their own alliances, and they are each very powerful. Small squabbles are unavoidable, but

it is unlikely a real space war will break out unless the source of the space warp technology is suddenly exposed. Then what kind of danger could be this scary?"

Just as this Time Watcher ordered his fleet to retreat far away from the rest, until they were at the fringe of the solar system, suddenly, before their naked eyes, one of the planets that revolved around the cursed planet, it had a dark red surface, broke out in flesh-like pustules. The pustule number increased dramatically until eventually, the planet was covered in a layer of flesh!

What was happening?!

# Chapter 326: Ambitious Hero!

---

Under the surface of this planet called cursed planet, about five hours before one of the surrounding planets became infected by flesh pustules, the Noah One's survivors finally reached a tunnel near the Noah One after paying with the sacrifices of the disappearance of nearly one thousand people. After sending out several Blue Berets and two mysterious virus survivors to do some scouting, they confirmed that within the tunnel and at the pavilion near the Noah One was a large amount of humans being controlled by alien octopuses and floating alien octopuses. In other words, this was an impossibly dangerous tunnel, and there was no way they could cross it safely.

"We cannot rush headfirst into this!" Austin told the surviving military officers. "We now understand that the alien octopuses themselves are not that strong. As long as we have the mysterious virus survivors with us, we can take care of them very easily. However, having those controlled humans around changes a lot of things... According to our current data, there are at least 3,000 of these walking human zombies, and they are not afraid of pain or death. We are trapped within a small space, and our weapons will not be able to hold them back much less when they are supported by the large group of alien octopuses!"

The faces of the people were drawn. Yun Si asked directly, "Then what do you propose we do? Since you have led us here, you must have some way to continue this further, right? If there are so many of them outside, there must be more of them inside, be it the alien octopuses or controlled humans."

Austin replied after some pause, "I do have some ideas in mind, but they are very dangerous and require everyone's commitment... Let's talk about the Noah One first. All of you should know by now that the biggest difference between the Noah One and the Noah Two is the Noah One's crew was mostly military soldiers since we



are the scouting unit. Therefore, the Noah One was built mainly for the purpose of war. There are plenty of auto defense systems installed within. We all know that the alien octopuses' hypnosis only works on lifeforms, so if we activate these defense systems, the alien octopuses will not be our worry anymore..."

"In that case, why didn't we activate those systems when the alien octopuses first infiltrated the Noah One?" One of middle-aged man stood up from the crowd and hissed vehemently. If not for the situation they were in, he would definitely have yelled. His question brought everyone a sizeable shock.

Austin laughed bitterly and then shrugged. "Because of time constraint. Activating these defense systems takes time, and at the time, we didn't even know that the mysterious virus survivors could see the alien octopuses. Furthermore, the general chaos of the situation prevented us from even the thought of activating the systems."

The crowd got silent. They all thought back to those few days that felt like a nightmare. Many had fallen on that day and many more had lost their families and friends. The memories were like a nightmare that they could not wake up from. In fact, until that day, many of the survivors would still suddenly wake up from their sleep with a scream. Since Austin had brought that day up, they were silent, perhaps paying it their due respect.

Austin looked around and continued, "The first few days after we landed on this planet, before we discovered the hidden danger on this planet, we commissioned digging and structural strengthening of a few tunnels around the Noah One. Everyone knows about that, right? Now, I am telling everyone that... at the time, we also dug a direct tunnel connecting the pavilion around the Noah One to an area around where we are. The purpose of this tunnel was for the sake of tactical advantage. When the tunnel was built, it was designed with the purpose of allowing the passage of siege engines, like tanks, in mind. If we take that direct tunnel, we will be able to

reach the pavilion easily."

A middle-aged woman immediately chimed in, "Then what are we waiting for? Let's get to that tunnel, but are you sure there are no scary monsters inside it?"

Austin nodded. "That I am certain of because this tunnel is well hidden and has both password and fingerprint locks. I do happen to have both... However, the key issue is after we get through the tunnel, then what? How will we deal with the alien octopuses and controlled humans at the pavilion? I do not think we will be able to get into the Noah One that easily."

Suddenly, a contained ruckus appeared among the crowd. Only Yun Si asked calmly, "Then what kind of idea do you propose?"

Austin sighed and chuckled helplessly. "I do have an idea, but it will be quite dangerous. We can do something like this..."

A while later, about 10 humans suddenly appeared from the tunnel near the pavilion and killed many controlled humans and floating alien octopuses with a rain of bullets before retreating back to the dark tunnel. Very soon, a large amount of alien octopuses and controlled humans swarmed towards the tunnel. Waiting for them was a barricade of heavy artillery, like rocket launchers and machine guns. The artillery was embedded into the tunnel wall to prevent blowback. Humankind had investigated the underground situation of this planet a long time ago. The ground was unusually compact and stable, and there had never been even one earthquake. Dropping a H-bomb underground would not cause the tunnel to collapse, much less the artillery.

Just like that, relying on the bottleneck entrance of the tunnel and the barricade of heavy artilleries, the alien octopuses and controlled humans were unable to get into the small tunnel. Furthermore, beside the people operating the artilleries were one or two mysterious virus survivors. This was because the surviving humans recently found out that while they were still unable to see

the alien octopuses, being around the mysterious virus survivors would help prevent them from being hypnotized. That was why they could keep up the defense.

The sound of bullets and bombing attracted more and more controlled humans and alien octopuses to gather around the small tunnel. This heavy artillery unit was pushed deeper and deeper into the tunnel. The tunnel had light fixtures and smoothened walls, signs of human construction.

"Quick, hurry up, do not separate yourself from the group! All the survivors, keep a lookout for those alien octopuses! Focus your fire, we have to keep holding them and attract more monsters our way to buy more time for the other unit!" a captain, brandishing his assault rifle, yelled non-stop at the soldiers around him. After his yelling, the sound of firearms increased and a mess of flesh and blood had started to pile up at the tunnel entrance. However, more controlled humans stepped over the mound of flesh and rushed in, giving no notice to the guns that were firing at them...

In the middle of the tunnel, a large number of civilians were helping each other. Even though they were shivering, they kept taking one step after another. Even though what waited for them was a myriad of dangers or even despair, at least Austin had given them a sliver of hope, a hope at survival. It was already more than enough. Everyone was deeply appreciative of this hope given by Austin. In fact, many had deified him in their hearts.

"...We cannot save so many people!"

Austin whispered as he trudged forward. Around him were handpicked elite Blue Berets and his trusted allies who knew the full scope of his plan. There were 36 of them in total.

"...Because when we left Earth, many scientists were already worried that we would stumble across scary alien creatures and the Noah One might be taken over. If the aliens were clever enough to deduce Earth's location from the information inside the Noah One,

then the whole Earth would be in danger. Therefore, even though there are auto defense systems inside the Noah One, they attack indiscriminately. There is only one safe spot inside the entire the Noah One, but it is only big enough to fit less than 50 people. These 50 people are supposed to activate the Noah One's self-destruct sequence after the auto defense system cleanses the Noah One. So how can we possibly save so many people?"

Austin mumbled as his eyes darkened. He looked at the people around him. There was sadness and hesitation in their eyes, but they still followed behind him. He continued, "I shall bear all the sin. It is a fact that we are unable to save so many people. It is not an issue of should or should not, but we simply cannot. Since we have no other choice, then we will find a way to live with this sin... There is still sperm and the ovum bank on the Noah One and sleep devices. Even though it was not the same as the ones in sci-fi where one's lifespan can be drastically extended during sleep, at least it can slow down our aging during sleep. When the new generation matures, we can continue reproduction and ensure that the human line lives on... Shoulder this sin and let us live, at least we still have a reason to live!"

After hearing Austin's words, even though the sadness in these people's eyes had not dissipated, at least the hesitation had. There was resolution in their footsteps, and right in front of them was the end of the tunnel...

About 10 minutes later, suddenly, the whole cave shook. At the end of the tunnel, there was a loud explosion. Following the explosion, the exit collapsed and everyone inside the tunnel was trapped within!

They could only face the controlled humans and alien octopuses that were attracted by them alone!

Outside of the collapsed tunnel, Austin's carefully group found their way into the Noah One. The pavilion was almost empty, and the small number of alien octopuses that remained was not enough

to slow them down. Within the crowd, Austin was calm, but his eyes were solemn...

At the same time, in a galaxy far away, Yao Yuan sat on the captain's chair and ordered while looking at the screen before him, "I order..."

"The Hope to start warping!"

# Chapter 327: Cursed! Demonization and Arrival

---

Austin and his small group of people hid inside a hidden room with platinum walls. The room was unfurnished and every surface was an unidentified silver panel. It was unclear how thick the walls were, but when they stepped into the room, they all sighed in relief.

On the whole Noah One, no, in the entire planet, this room was the safest for humanity. Alas, the room was too small; it could only fit at most 50 people. With 30 plus people inside it, it was already crowded.

Of all the people there, Austin was the busiest. He had been busy monitoring and fixing the Noah One's internal defence system.

About 10 minutes ago, these 30 people depended on their own memories of the Noah One's internal structure to reach this hidden room, ignoring the threat of alien octopuses. They were temporarily safe; they only needed to wait for the ship's auto defence system activation. After the aliens near and about the Noah One were cleansed, then... they would be totally safe!

"There are different kinds of defense systems, these include high soundwave vibration, high temperature microwave, and the most common explosions and bullets. Unlike the Noah Two, this spaceship was built with the intention of facing various alien monsters. The internal metallic walls and fixtures were made with the most high-tech combat armoured alloy and could withstand these destructive attacks. Of course, atomic grade destruction is a horse of a completely different color..."

Austin kept pressing the button as he explained. Behind him, a few soldiers still guarded him solemnly... Even though there was no danger about, or rather, they had nowhere to run if there was danger, these soldiers still upheld their responsibility loyally.

In a wait that was surfeited with anxiety, consternation, fear and anticipation, 10 seconds later, a great quake shook the ground. This cause several people to lose their balance and stumble to the ground. However, everyone showed an excited expression.

Only Austin slid down the wall and looked at his watch calmly and quietly. In his brain, he was calculating the time that would be needed to cleanse the Noah One and the monster number that would swarm into the Noah One after the fact.

"...Enough supplies, at least more than enough to last us until the first future generation matures into adulthood. Furthermore, the Noah One has an internal homeostatic system, artificial sunlight, and hydroponic technology. The original emergency supplies that were meant for 10,000 people is more than enough to help keep the 30 plus of us alive for a long time. Even in the future, when we have hundreds or thousands of people, it will still be more than enough.

"The key issue will still be energy. Space warp requires energy, the homeostatic system requires energy, even the life support system requires energy... Thankfully, perhaps it has been destined, before sh\*t hits the fan, we managed to mine many radioactive ores, and they have been stored on the ship. If the ship was carrying less than 10,000 people, then the ores were enough to allow us to warp hundreds of times and enable us to live in space for hundreds of years... Perhaps it has already been destined..."

Austin thought back to the earlier maintenance and repairs on the Noah One. When the old captain was still around, even though he did not completely fix the Noah One, since that would require too much resources and manpower, he did fix the damages around the links between the ship cabins. This prevented air leakage, and the internal circulatory system was also updated. All of this seemed to be foundation for the mission that day, or else, even if Austin managed to lead these people inside the room, they would not have any chance at survival.

"The sperm and ovum banks have been depleted by 30 percent, but we can still use the remaining resources to cultivate tens of thousands of people, but we need to find a new base first, and that will be a worry after several decades or even several hundred years..."

Austin sat at the corner of the wall, his thoughts as his only company. When the quake in the room had stopped, he pulled himself up and said, "Let us go to complete our last step... Space warp!"

Then, several minutes later...

"It has appeared! A disturbance in space! The high-tier civilization inside the cursed planet is showing itself!"

Just as the Noah One entered space warp state, almost simultaneously, all of the space civilizations around the cursed planet detected the change in space within the planet itself. Actually, when a civilization entered level 3, they would interact closely with technologies that dealt with space manipulation. In fact, as early as level 1, there were already researches on systemization of space, like the relationship between space and time, the relationship between space and energy, the relationship between space and gravity, and the like.

At the peak of a level 2 space civilization, there would be some rudimentary devices that could detect the disturbance in space around them. Most of the space civilizations had their devices targeted on the cursed planet. When they discovered the change in space reading, in the next few minutes, a large amount of planet boarding fleets rushed towards the cursed planet. The various alliances in space and the few independent level 3 space civilizations were cautious around each other. There was tension in the air; any spark could lead to a full scale space war!

In reality, the existence of human beings, alien octopuses, and the combination of the two had been detected by the many space



civilizations. The main reason they did not do anything about it was due to the scary legend surrounding the cursed planet. Even though no one knew about its validity, the rumours had survived for millions of years, and it was a weighty spiritual pressure that pressed down on all the space civilizations there. Therefore, other than the rash Parlei Race, who was on a rampage on the surface of cursed planet, all the other space civilizations watched the development with a detached eye. However, when the ruin presented itself, they would not allow the Parlei Race to claim it so easily.

Therefore, the moment the space reading went off the chart, the entire space fleet mobilized. All the space civilizations started to sweat, even the civilizations in the same alliance started to get cautious of one another. When this space technology revealed itself, it would be the start of a space war!

Under such circumstances, a drastic change exploded... or rather a drastic change slowly exploded.

The first change was the Parlei Race that had been pillaging the cursed planet. There were various weird evolutions happening to their bodies. Either their bodies suddenly began metallic, or their muscles expanded crazily, tearing open their skin, and they evolved into a shapeless meat blobs, or their bodies suddenly became wooden. There were innumerable curious evolutions. It was a monster freak show.

Of course, this was not that surprising. Even though Pa Race creatures were renown for their high resistance against contamination and infection, it did not mean that they were immune to all strains of viruses. The scariest change was... these Parlei soldiers did not seem to notice their changes, or rather, it appeared like in their eyes, they were still unchanged, they continued talking and fighting like nothing unusual was happening before their eyes...

Not only had their bodies changed, even the spacecrafts operated

by the Parlei Race had undergone similar changes. Either they became flesh, wood, metal, rock, flame, liquid, and the like. Every spacecraft changed into a different form, and the changes kept happening!

Just like how the Parlei Race ignored the changes that were happening to and around them, the civilizations that were closest to the Parlei Race's fleet ignored the changes. Even if the change was right in front of their eyes, they did not respond to it in any way. Even the fleets that were further away were only startled slightly when they noticed this before they continued on to the cursed planet.

Only the civilizations with cosmic adaptors that stayed far away looked at this crazy evolution with stunned looks. The twisted spaceships that had lost their shapes were truly a sight to behold... However, the scariest thing was that all of them could still operate, and if anything, they moved even faster, as if the twisted evolution had increased their physical abilities. This kind of irregular, unscientific evolution... was like a scene out of one's nightmare; it was completely illogical.

These civilization saw the evolution spread across the cosmos like a wave with the cursed planet as its centre. Everything within the wave was slowly evolving into different twisted form, and they saw the effect coming towards them.

At the same time, underneath the cursed planet, the people who were caught in the tunnel were in throes of despair. The tunnel's exit towards the Noah One had caved in and the other end was swarming with endless controlled humans and alien octopuses. The heavy artillery barricade could not hold on forever.

This was real despair!

Almost all of the mysterious virus survivors were led by Yun Si to stand guard at the front of the defence barricade. Behind them were almost 10,000 human survivors. They were scientists,

technicians, the injured, women, and children. They were fighting a losing battle!

The normal civilians behind them felt their consciousness giving, because they started to see illusions. The injured no longer felt the pain of their injuries, and in reality, under the gaze of the naked eye, their legs started to become metal, rocks, bones, and weirder stuff. Compelled by the will to live, they started to walk towards the direction of the alien octopuses... Indeed, it was as if they were offering themselves up to be eaten...

However, the scariest thing was that no one had noticed this change in the people around them. In their eyes, everything was the same. They did not realize that some humans were no longer... "humans"!

The space civilization with the S-grade space adapter that was furthest away from the cursed planet saw the changes happening clearly. They saw one of the planets around the cursed planet became flesh and eventually, on the surface, there were folds of flesh and bulbous tumours.

Right then, an inconspicuous spaceship, long and flat, with the shape of a chopstick, suddenly appeared in this piece of chaotic space, dangerously close to the cursed planet...

# Chapter 328: Nightmare in Reality

---

The Hope would warp to its destination after another 30 minutes, the location of the Noah One.

Everyone on the Hope knew that this was going to be an unimaginably harsh battle. It had gone beyond the question of how many people would die, because the whole spaceship might die.

Therefore, even with Yao Yuan's incomparable popularity and Cheng Wen's dark strategy, as the time drew near, the sounds of protest still appeared. The voices of protest were small, but it was obvious that a part of the citizens was not satisfied with this mission.

30 minutes before the warp, Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen were discussing the details of the missions at the ship's bridge.

"Ol' Wong, just like how we've discussed earlier, I will leave you to handle everything on the surface. You will lead 150 Black Star Troopers, including all the Black Star Unit members, Zhang Heng, Xiao Niao, and the latest Black Star Space Armor Prototype Two and all the latest weapons. Ask and you shall receive! There is only one order: save as many as you can and remember to take the data on the Noah One, especially the data on Project Eden. I need all of those!"

Guang Zhen gave a solemn salute. He treated this seriously even though he was friends with Yao Yuan. After the salute, he stood at ready and said, "Yes, Sir!"

Yao Yuan responded with his own salute before continuing, "Of course... bring all the kids back. They are all great soldiers. I've seen their training, and they are all stand-up soldiers. This mission is going to be really dangerous, but none of them complained, so you and everyone... please return safely."

Guang Zhen nodded silently. Then he added, "Ol' Yao, there are

more of those voices in these few days. You have to be careful, some people are starting to get uneasy about your orders. This kind of situation..."

Yao Yuan interrupted him, "Ol' Wong, I've noticed all that, but they are still within reasonable range. I understand... The family background you're from and your education cause you to be cautious of voices like this. Your go-to response to these voices of dissent, no matter how small, is to squash them using military law. I am not saying this to lecture you, because your way of doing things is even necessary in certain situations. However, when managing over 100,000 people from multiple countries, and with the majority of them being children, things are going to be a bit different.

"So believe in me. After all, we are no longer on Earth. The issue of whether we have accommodated to life in space aside, we are already in space. It might not be voluntary, but it is the reality we have to live with. Furthermore, following that was a scientific renaissance. Basically, we have blown through progress in a decade which normally would require us thousands of years to complete. Our societal progress is thus lacking behind compared to our science. Our civil sensitivity is lacking by a lot, and that is not something you or I can solve. The only solution is to allow it to grow organically, give the public freedom to choose. The only thing I can do is to give a range to limit this growth within a reasonable range."

Yao Yuan did not elaborate after that. Instead, he advised Guang Zhen to focus on the mission before returning to central command where he could direct and command the Hope in case some accidents happened.

"On the other end of the warp will be our battlefield..." Yao Yuan sat in the captain's chair. Standing beside him were Ren Tao and Bo Li, their expressions normal.

Ren Tao could not help but add, "You sure do trust him..."

"He is your superior!" Yao Yuan of course knew what Ren Tao was talking about. In reality, in terms of Thinker's power, it was only when formulating extremely difficult problems that he would lack behind Ren Tao and Xiao Niao. During normal situations, he was no different from them, so he immediately interrupted him. "Wong Guang Zhen is your superior, so show some reason! And... he is a comrade who you can trust your life with, your superior and comrade! This is a lesson I've learned after much bloodshed!"

Ren Tao shrugged and said, "Of course I know that all of you from the Black Star Unit are impressive characters. Combat and war should come naturally to all of you, I have never questioned that... You should know what I am talking about. Wong Guang Zhen... Fine, General Wong has a different way of thinking from most, and that is very dangerous. Not only is the public suspicious and fearful of him, even the westerners in the Black Star Troopers are cautious of General Wong. Normally, this would be a non-issue, but you yourself understand how important this mission is. It is not hard to envision that suspicion be an insidious presence in this mission, so I just have to say, you sure have faith in him."

Yao Yuan was silent and stared at Ren Tao. After a long time, he explained slowly, "Two points. One, I believe in my soldiers, and they are Black Star Troopers. They are the best of the best. Perhaps it is as you have said, maybe a difference in opinion might cause some friction, but this small suspicion will not be huge enough to make them lose their common sense and obedience to their superior. You have to understand that they are Black Star Troopers!

"Two, Ol' Wong is more fair than you give him credit. I will admit his way of thinking is very much influenced by his life back on Earth, but during combat, he will not be influenced by his personal opinion. He is a real combat expert. Since I am unable to personally participate in this rescue, he is the most qualified person on the Hope to lead this mission... So you don't need to

worry yourself over this. Make sure that you focus on your responsibility. When we come into any emergency, give me the solution at the shortest notice!"

Ren Tao shrugged once more. He did not think much about it. Even though the mission was important and incredibly dangerous, for the sake of the mission, both the Academy and the Barracks had committed a great amount of pre-battle preparation. For example, the 150 Black Star Troopers were equipped with the latest Space Armor Prototype Two. Other than an embedded hydrogen atomic battery as its energy source, it was also equipped with a high efficiency electromagnetic shield. Its defense capability was ten times the defense capability of the Space Armor Prototype One!

Not only that, in the Space Armor Prototype Two, its metallic materials were from the alien plant's special alloy, the kind that could withstand the damage from plasma weapons. Even though it was less powerful than energy shields, at least it could withstand around four shots of normal plasma weapons. This was created using the template from Blue 6's spacesuit after they surrendered. Due to the time constraint, it was still a prototype. In the future, maybe energy shields will be added to this armor.

There were also many other preparations work. For example, a high frequency supermagnetic radar to confirm the Noah One's location, the latest anti-gravity high speed transport ship, as well as the completed Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s that were sitting in the hangar. Furthermore, after the Hope warped, it would start to charge energy for a subsequent warp. If the situation was not right, they would directly warp even if it meant giving up the Noah One. As a Thinker, naturally Ren Tao understood all that and he believed Yao Yuan would not hesitate to abandon the Noah One if the overall safety of the Hope was threatened!

Therefore, even though Ren Tao did not really approve of this mission, he was not worried about it. After all, space warp was their ultimate trump card. According to Blue 6's information, level

3 space civilizations had no method to prevent space warp unless it was done internally, like what the space merchants did.

According to Blue 6, level 4 space civilizations and above were simply too rare, so much so that it was hard to ascertain whether there was one level 4 or above space civilization within the space of several thousand light years. In other words, with the space warp technology, the Hope was invincible. Therefore, even though Ren Tao did not have much faith in the rescue mission, he had complete faith in the Hope's safety. Therefore, he did not think his capability as a Thinker would be of any use.

In truth, his assumption would be broken after about ten minutes...

This was the Hope's last controlled warp. Normally, after ZERO set the coordinates, she would stay to chat with Xiao Niao. However, perhaps she knew that Xiao Niao was part of the rescue party. After she set the last coordinates, she disappeared without a trace. This did irk Xiao Niao in some ways.

"What's wrong?" Standing beside Xiao Niao were his two best friends, Qiu Qiu and Dan Dan. They were Homo Evolutis, so they were part of the 150 Black Star Troopers that would land on the planet.

Xiao Niao shook his head and tossed the uncomfortable feeling that he could not explain himself out of his mind. He said, "No, nothing's wrong. We will be warping soon, so let's prepare for combat..."

A few seconds after Xiao Niao said those words, the Hope entered warp. In the blink of an eye, the Hope blinked out of their original space. Then the videos on the various surveillance devices and sceneries outside the spaceship windows showed...

A creepy scene that one could only see in a dream!

It was like they had warped from reality into someone's dream!



And it was definitely a nightmare...

# Chapter 329: The Great Madness

---

"What is happening?!"

Ten seconds after the last warp, this question was issued across all over the Hope. The things that unfolded before their eyes were too weird and too illogical.

Outside of the Hope, a great amount of unknown things were changing...

Unknown things, because it was hard to tell what they were. Globes of unknown gyrating masses were shifting not far away from the Hope. Some of them were illogically large, the smallest of them being several thousand square meters, while the larger ones were bigger than the Hope, as large as a small planet.

These unknown masses filled up the space around the Hope. Some of them were metallic, others looked like rocks, flesh tumors that looked suspiciously like the zerg's mother nest, and rolling fire and ice. They were all still changing and shifting.

If there were only changes in forms, then it would not have been so surprising. After all, since they had left Earth, the people on the Hope had seen many miracles from various high tier space civilizations. For example, the trademark in the alien plant was one of them. Perhaps this kind of weird form was something high tier space civilizations wanted?

However, things were more complicated than that because the changes were simply too curious. For example, a four-legged creature would suddenly appear from a ball of flame before extending previously absent wings or changing into a giant weapon. However, the scariest was that it would change into a shapeless monster and start consuming the smaller unknown masses around it.

This kind of weird interaction was happening all over the space.

The unknown masses kept morphing into unknown creatures to consume the other unknown masses around it. Some of them even morphed into creatures with obvious sexual properties and started mating in space. This was not even the weirdest of them all...

Many shapeless creatures, after consuming many unknown masses, would hug themselves and curl into eggs that would start beating like a heart...

Inside the Hope, after the initial shock, the related personnel started closely scanning the situation in space. The first thing they noticed about this curious place were the five lifeless planet revolving around the one life-preserving planet. This was something that would not happen in space. Around this one planet was where most of these unknown masses congregated. However, the other thing that attracted the Hope's attention was that in the space further away from this planet was a fleet of spaceships. This observation sent more chills down the spines of people on the Hope compared to the earlier creepy freak show.

"Open the creator's particle! The Hope is entering ECS system, and send out all Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s!"

Yao Yuan spotted the mass of alien spaceship as soon as they arrived and felt extreme danger within this space. He immediately ordered the Hope to set up its defenses. Next, a large amount of creator's particle was released from the Hope and the Hope slowly disappeared from everyone's eyes. This was the optical illusion courtesy of the ECS system. 10 seconds after that, the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s that had been waiting flew out of the Hope. Soon, there were around a hundred of combat jets surrounding the Hope... But!

The creator's particle suddenly disappeared!

Yes, the creator's particles that had supposedly spread across this space suddenly disappeared. No matter how hard the Hope tried to create more creator's particles, they all disappeared!

The first to observe this were the personnel in the surveillance room. This news was quickly brought to central command. Yao Yuan and all the people there started to break out in cold sweat, some of them even fainted from extreme pressure.

This was something that had never happened before! Ever since the creator's particle technology landed in humans' hands, be it the information taken from the space merchants or information given by Blue 6, there was no technology known in space that could wipe out a wide area of creator's particle completely. The most one could do was to create a space using a creator's particle isolator.

In other words, in the recorded wars of level 6 space civilizations, the creator's particle remained a wall that could not be broken. This wall had protected a large number of weak space civilizations, like humans on the Hope, against enemies who had overwhelming advantages in technology, resources, or weapons. The creator's particle was that last shred of hope at escaping, and it would not be wrong to call it the last safety measure, but at that moment, the Hope's last safety measure had been taken away!

"Start moving! F\*ck, don't stop here! Start moving using the Hope's biggest propulsion force available. What? Where to? F\*ck, do you really have to ask that? Towards that life-preserving planet!"

Yao Yuan's eyes were red from anger and agitation. He stood up from his captain's chair and yelled out his orders. When the few fainted workers still lied there unmoving, he himself rushed to the control panel to help. Even Ren Tao, who was standing beside him earlier, moved to contribute.

Several seconds later, Yao Yuan started to calm down. His hands remained moving, but he asked, "Ren Tao, do you think there is a space civilization above level six? The fact that our creator's particle has disappeared, is it... due to the presence of such a high tier space civilization?"

Ren Tao was sweating profusely beside him. Other than the fact that he had to operate something he did not quite understand, he was worried and fearful of many things. However, he took a deep breath before answering, "That is unlikely. The rarity of high tier space civilizations aside, if there is really such a high level space civilization around, this part of the space would have been wiped clean. We would not have seen these many unknown things and other space fleets floating about. If you told me that those high level space civilizations could directly convert a planet into fuel or collect all these planets into their spaceship, I would believe it. If that were the case, would we still see something like this?"

Yao Yuan had given his orders and the Hope was accelerating as he commanded. The Hope was preparing to enter warp drive to get close to the planet. Right then, he turned back to ask Bo Li, "Bo Li, could it be that something is wrong with the spaceship internally? Like the creator's particle vibrator needs maintenance or something of that sort? Can that explain the creator's particle situation?"

Bo Li shook her head and said, "Unlikely. The important devices within the Hope have undergone more than 10 inspections, so the chance of them breaking down is extremely low. You need not worry about that... The only explanation I can give regarding this is that this area of space is covered with creator's particle isolators."

"Covered with creator's particle isolators?"

Yao Yuan turned to look at the dark and empty space that spread indefinitely. How could such an empty space be filled with creator's particle isolators? Furthermore, the isolators could not exist in nano form. The size of the machinery aside, there was also the issue of energy requirement. The isolators required a large amount of energy to operate. If they were made into nano size, their effect would probably last for a second before short circuiting.

To put it simply, before becoming a level 4 or 5 civilization, there was no way the creator's particle isolator could be made into nano size and then spread across space. This was the natural limitation of productivity. It was something possible for high tier space civilizations only, and herein laid the question. If there was a high tier space civilization, wouldn't it be easier and simpler for them to wipe out the entire solar system using their scientific power than waste their resources building nano isolators?

"In other words, it is unlikely that there are creator's particle isolators spread across space, and it is not something wrong with the Hope internally... then could it be these curious masses we see before us, or there is a high level civilization's ruin nearby?"

At that moment, Yao Yuan's mind came up with such an answer. However, he understood that it was only speculation. After all, there were too many variables to consider. The loss of the creator's particles could lead to many unforeseeable troubles, so much so that Yao Yuan had the thought to have the Hope immediately warp away.

Just as Yao Yuan was hesitating, the fleet of spaceships started to change as well!

It was not that they started attacking the Hope, but these spaceships started to melt... Well, melt was not exactly the right word, but they were undergoing constitutional changes. Some of them changed into rocks, others fire, ice, or more substances that humans could not name. Then they started to spread out in space, like all the spaceships were infected with some kind of disease....

The more shocking discovery was that one of the planets revolving around the life-preserving planet suddenly started to grow tumors, flesh, and tentacles...

An indescribable madness unfolded before the humans' eyes in this dark space!

# Chapter 330: Closer

---

"What is this?!"

This was how everyone who saw the scene felt. They saw the spaceships morph like they were infected and the planet that was becoming flesh. This change was unlike the zerg's fake planet as it was a real planet undergoing this ridiculous change. The sight was really shocking!

Yao Yuan was rendered speechless for a long time. He and the majority could not understand what they were looking at. A great amount of spaceships were changing in front of their eyes, but none of them had any clues as to why it was happening. Was it some kind of super high technology? Or an extremely dangerous space virus? After all, the cosmos was limitless, perhaps there was a virus that could infect even non-living substances? It was not impossible.

When the people on the Hope saw this, they felt fear shaking the very essence of their souls, because... the Hope was in the range of this infection! The disease was spreading across the group of spaceships in a conspicuous manner, and the Hope was right in its pathway!

"What is going on? These spaceships are morphing! Is this some kind of high-tech weapon? Or is it some kind of weird infection?" Yao Yuan roared with his eyes flashing red. Unfortunately, no one was able to answer his question, not even Ren Tao or Bo Li beside him.

"Recall all the Combat Jets, we are using the space warp..." Yao Yuan could feel danger encroaching, so he finally decided to give the orders to warp. After all... even though they were there to save the Noah One and its members, it was silly to sacrifice the Hope for that.

However, right then, Ren Tao pressed down hard on his shoulder

and said, "Wait... Don't you feel that something is weird? Those changes to the spaceships happened in the blink of an eye. Every spaceship within the range of infection has morphed, and technically speaking, the Hope is in that range, but nothing has happened to it. So don't be so rash... or are your senses are telling you we could be destroyed at any moment?"

Yao Yuan was startled. He did not finish the orders he wanted to give and thought about it before adding, "You're right, it doesn't feel like the danger is enough to engulf the spaceship completely. The danger is there, but it is incoming danger like usual."

"Then that answers your question," Ren Tao said as he pulled back his hand. "Just now I remembered something. You still remember how Blue 6 once said that the so-called cursed planet is where demons are born and the demon race is the greediest race in the whole cosmos? They are the cosmos' biggest enemy, but what exactly is the demon race? No one knows, not even Blue 6, who came from a level 3 space civilization. He only mentioned one thing about them..."

"Mentioned one thing? Wait, mentioned one thing..." Yao Yuan's Thinker power started operating, and known clues as well as the situation before him started to collect in his mind. Suddenly, he said, "That's right! Only cosmic adapters could defend themselves against the demons! Blue 6 once said that this legendary demon race could only be fought by cosmic adapters!"

Ren Tao pointed at the screen and said, "Doesn't this confirm that? This is the cursed planet, and since none of us know what the demon race is, could it not be a kind of mysterious space virus? And these are all the materials and lives that have been infected! From the information taken from the space merchants and the messages given by Blue 6, we can confirm one thing, and that is the rarity of cosmic adapters. There will not be another existence like us human beings. In that case... does this not confirm the hypothesis? The Hope has plenty of cosmic adapters, and that is



why we are not getting infected!"

Yao Yuan sat back down the captain's chair. He thought about it and said, "You make sense, but most of it is still hypothesis. There is no evidence to show that you're right, but... we can still continue to try out the plan, or else the preparations and sacrifices we have made along the way will have been for naught. Of course, if the danger I sense reaches the maximum, I will immediately order the Hope to warp!"

Ren Tao shrugged. "You're the chancellor, Yao Yuan. That is your decision to make, I'm just giving you my analysis."

Then central command started to quiet down. After a few minutes, Yao Yuan suddenly whispered, "Haven't you been averse to this rescue mission? Then... why did you stop me just now?"

Ren Tao turned to say, "Who knows? Perhaps it was force of habit that compelled me to conduct the analysis, or someone or something was clamping down my mind, or... I was touched by your desire to save your fellow man. And deserting all the plans at the last minute seems too much of a waste. In any case, you can make of it any way you want."

"...Is that so? Regardless, thank you..."

At the same time, in the group of alien spaceships, even though they were in the infection range and were already morphing, that was not true for all of them. Among them, a small number of spaceships did not enter that scary evolution, or rather... the morphing was decelerated due to some reasons.

One of these spaceships belonged to a mammalian race. They walked on the ground with two feet and had a pair of arms. However, their arms were slender and long like they had no skeleton. They looked more like tentacles than arms. Furthermore, they had more than 10 fingers on each tentacle, and they too were slender and long. Comparatively speaking, their tentacles seemed to be more agile than human hands. Their brains were round and

big and their eyes were large. They looked like how human beings pictured alien would look like.

In this spaceship, everyone was in this despair. This spaceship's leader was a grade A cosmic adapter. It was because of him that the infection was slowed down, but the ship only had one cosmic adapter. Even though the infection was slowed down, it was not stopped. The lifeform furthest from this cosmic adapter was the first to experience this change. Some became monsters and others robots. Even in central command, where this cosmic adapter was seated, there was small degree infection happening. For example, one of the ship operators suddenly realized that stray flesh tumours had replaced some of the control buttons. That was why they were in despair.

"...There is no need to run. After calculating the speed of the curse spread, its speed is faster than light. We need time to enter warp drive. Before then, we will be completely infected."

This cosmic adapter sounded calm even though he was delivering their death sentence. However, the way his body was shaking belied his anxiety and frustration. He was leading his main race's strongest fleet, and he was his race's only cosmic adapter. After his race lost these two important assets, they would slowly decline towards extinction. It was inevitable. The curse was exceptionally cruel because it was slow. This cosmic adapter had to sit there and watch his civilization crumble before him. No matter how old one was, this was not something one could accept easily.

The people around this cosmic adapter hugged each other and started to wail... they could only wait helplessly as the curse caught up to them. Then again, the cosmic adapter had in his hand a self-destruct button. At least they would be able to die in their original form. This was the only consolation they had, and they were luckier than other races in this aspect.

"Then let us begin. Let us use our most perfect form to return to Star God's embrace..."

The cosmic adapter closed his eyes. When he was going to press the button, he suddenly sensed something. A palpitation in his heart made him open his eyes. He then yelled, "Quick! Use all available surveillance devices to scan this area!" He pointed to a direction into space, and down that direction was exactly where the Hope appeared!

In the next second, in front of everyone's eyes, a large, perfectly fine spaceship appeared in empty space. The ship was... not infected in the smallest of ways!

"Is that... the sun? No, it is something greater than the sun. It feels so warm, like the feeling of home... Star God, have you arrived to save your people?!"

When the cosmic adapter saw this spaceship, tears came out of his eyes. He yelled excitedly, "Activate all propulsion systems that are still usable! Get us close to that ship as fast as we can! That place, that right there is our only lifeline!"

At the same time, many ships that had cosmic adapters on them also used the very last of the energy that they had to rush towards the Hope at their highest speed...

Simultaneously, the planet that had started to change seemed to have achieved life, because it started to vibrate like an egg or like a beating heart. Some kind of sinister change was happening within it...

# Chapter 331: Blue 6's First Mission!

---

The Hope was flying towards that life-preserving planet at its highest speed. As they got closer, they realized that the strange evolution around them was becoming increasingly common. Many of the curiosities started consuming each other before exploding or disappearing. This struck fear into people on the Hope who did not really understand what was happening.

"Scary, these things around us are very scary."

This kind of observation could be heard all around the Hope. Thankfully, it was Yao Yuan who gave the orders. The Hope had been through many scary moments like this, and Yao Yuan had managed to lead everyone to safety every time. Yao Yuan's influence on the ship was unimaginably high because he was someone who had led the human civilization to survival and improvement in space. It was not crazy if some of the citizens directly treated him like a god!

Therefore, even though the citizens on the Hope were nervous, they were not worried. They prayed silently for the success of this mission, and those who had families and friends in the Black Star Troopers looked at the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s that protected the Hope with both pride and worry in their eyes. On one hand, they wished that their families and friends would return as heroes, but on the other, they wished they would just stay out of danger...

Compared to the public, the military and political party within the Hope felt much better, especially since it was Yao Yuan and not Guang Zhen who was leading the Hope. In fact, this was one of the reasons why Guang Zhen was leading the rescue mission and not Yao Yuan. This way, no matter how weird the scenery outside the Hope looked, the people within would still feel safe.

Yao Yuan was currently in central command ordering the Hope

to move forward. However, they did not move at a straight line because Yao Yuan wanted them to avoid coming into contact with those random masses that flew in irregular patterns in space. The closer they got the planet, the greater the number of these masses. Thankfully, there were still pockets of emptiness that the Hope could make use of as it flew towards the planet. Therefore, the Hope was dancing on a steel wire. No one could be sure what would happen if they bumped into those masses, and no one wanted to try. Getting to the planet thus required contribution from the Diviners as well as Thinkers who could analyse and calculate the speed and direction quickly. This was the time for Yao Yuan as the All-Rounder to shine. Even though his power was weaker than Zhang Heng's as well as Xiao Niao's and Ren Tao's in terms of Diviner and Thinker power respectively, having the combination of both at that time outshined everyone else.

With Yao Yuan commanding, the Hope reached the planet without coming into danger. As they neared the planet, suddenly seven or eight large, giant, red dots appeared on the surveillance screen.

These seven or eight dots represented seven or eight large alien spaceships. Even though they were smaller than the junkyard aliens' super large mothership, they were each incredibly huge, at least several ten times bigger than the Hope. Even among all the spaceships and unknown masses, these seven or eight spaceships were the largest of them all.

The spaceships appeared on the screen. For some reasons, unlike the others, they had not undergone serious mutation. Even though there were signs of contained mutations on the surface, generally speaking, one could still see that they were spaceships, and these spaceships were rushing at the Hope at their top speed!

At that moment, the Hope had entered another conundrum. What kinds of spaceships were these? Why would they rush towards the Hope, and what was the Hope to do?

"Attack! Yao Yuan! We must attack first! With the advantage the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s provide us and the pilots' advantage, we must destroy these approaching spaceships! We mustn't expose the public to dangers like these!"

This was the first response transmitted from Guang Zhen. He was the commander of the rescue mission, and they were gathered around the hangar. Of course, the place was also fitted with a giant 3D screen that allowed them to know about the encroaching spaceships.

Even though Guang Zhen was not a Homo Evolutis, his power was only smaller than Yao Yuan's on the Hope. He was the Hope's successor, the main commander of the Defense Unit, and the vice leader of Black Star Troopers. Yao Yuan valued his opinions of course, but Yao Yuan would not buy into his words completely. After all, Guang Zhen was not a Thinker who could pick out the many aspects of a situation.

"...First, there is one thing I can be certain about, and that is that all these spaceships have Homo Evolutis... or cosmic adapters. This is definite, or else they would not have been able to maintain the rough shapes of their spaceships. Next... the number of their cosmic adapters must be pitifully low. Perhaps only one, and that is why we can see that the closer they are to the planet, the more obvious the mutation gets." Ren Tao scratched his head as he continued with his analysis, "Secondly, their purpose is probably not to attack us. If anything, they are coming to us to seek shelter, or grab at that last sign of hope. Just look... they do not care about anything else, their only wish is to get close to us as soon as possible!"

Yao Yuan nodded and agreed. "You're right, I think the same way, and according to our current situation... Ren Tao, don't you think that these unknown masses around us and the mutations... are incredibly scary? For some reason, I feel that these things will change into demons to attack us. I fear the Hope is not strong

enough to fight against these monstrosities."

Ren Tao's face shifted. He thought about it and shrugged. "It's your call cause you're the chancellor. In any case, I still maintain my stance... when the Hope is in irrevocable danger, I hope you will remember your promise towards us. We are the ones you have sworn to protect, not the strangers on the Noah One! Don't use our lives to try to be a hero!"

Yao Yuan nodded solemnly. "I promise you and promise everyone else! Now, get me Blue 6. Hasn't he been petitioning for a position of power within our society and wishes to be a part of the Hope's governmental structure? Go and tell him... if he manages to finish this mission, then he will become the Hope's Minister of Foreign Affairs!"

Blue 6 was walking back and forth in his own room. In fact, when he found out that the Hope's destination was the cursed planet, he had been incredibly worried. At the same time, after his contact with the larger society of this race called human beings, he was shocked by the scope of humanity and its miraculous potential!

Just what kind of race was this!? He did not know of their history, but the key issue was... they had several hundred cosmic adapters, and there were almost one hundred Grade-S cosmic adapters. They even had the legendary Immortal-grade that could create godtier civilizations. So what in the world was really going on?! As long as no accident happened to this race, this race was definitely going to become a middle-tier space civilization!

Yes, that was the least of their potential!

The difference might sound small on paper, but a level 4 space civilization could completely ignore the other space civilizations beneath it. Wasn't that the target the Blue Race has been slaving for? However, becoming a middle-tier space civilization... was immensely difficult. The Blue Race was an optimistic race, but even the most optimistic among them did not think that the Blue

Race would become a level 4 space civilization before declining. This dream of many space civilizations, Blue 6 could see it coming into fruition easily for this human race!

Therefore, he desperately wanted power within this human race. From what he had observed, this human race seemed to respect each other's influence and power. This was similar to the Blue Race's internal structure. Therefore, he wished to gain power within the human society. In that case, when the human race becomes a level 4 space civilization in the future, as a part of the higher hierarchy, he could help the Blue Race gain benefits. He could even help Blue Race become a middle-tier space civilization by asking the human race to lend them aid!

At that moment, he received the message from central command...

"What? Minister of Foreign Affairs? What does that mean? This minister... means a secretariat? In other words, your human emperor wishes for me to become the secretary of foreign affairs?!"

Blue 6 roared in excitement. He started running back and forth in his room. His excitement could not be contained. Even his underlings had faces full of happiness. It completely undid the months of depression from being locked up. Everyone congratulated Blue 6. One of them said, with a huge smile, "Your Highness, congratulations. This is so surprising that the human emperor is so open that he is willing to give you a position as important as the secretary of foreign affairs, but... Your Highness, this might not be the time, but since you are going to represent the human race on this mission, then please..."

Blue 6 waved him away and said, "That is for certain, it is only feudal! It is such a sacred contract! I will use my soul and my life to protect this sacred contract that has saved the Blue Race multiple times. I will use the best of my ability and passion to help this human race that we are in service of! Even if the enemy is the Blue Race, there will be no partiality!"



"Come on! Let us go fulfil our first mission!"

# Chapter 332: Foreign Affairs in Space

---

When Blue 6 arrived at central command, he was briefed on the situation along the way. He understood everything when he arrived.

"Do not let them get any closer!"

Blue 6's earlier melancholy had completely disappeared. Now he stood straighter and his voice had confidence. After he arrived at central command, he bowed at Yao Yuan slightly before straightening himself and saying loudly, "We must not allow them to get close. One is the issue of navigational direction and speed. To prevent them from directly ramming into our ship, we have to inform them this. Second, it is about the unsaid contract in space. When both parties are at an unequal level... have their leaders directly come to negotiate with us, or else there is nothing left to say. You Majesty, it is time for me to complete my duties!"

The people around him stared at Blue 6 with their jaws dropped. In reality, their minds were stunned into dumbness. How does one put this? How could this Blue Race alien be so thick-skinned? He was their prisoner, and giving him the role of Minister of Foreign Affairs was only on paper, but he treated it for real and seemed very happy about it... What was going on?

Blue 6 continued on and even ignored Yao Yuan's curious gaze. "There is no creator's particles in this space, right? Then change the communication frequency to the space merchants'. That is the lingua franca for space communication. Then transfer my words over to them."

The operators were stunned. They all looked towards Yao Yuan and Blue 6 said as comprehension dawned, "I am sorry, Your Majesty. I have overstepped my boundaries, but that is only because I was too excited. After all, this is my first mission, and I hope I perform to the best of my ability. So please forgive my

mistake... With that in mind, I request to have some power equal to my status as the Secretary of Foreign Affairs. First, I request that there is one space embassy unit that will enable me to respond at first notice whenever an alien race comes into contact with us humans.

"Secondly, I need some staff, like negotiators and my adjutant... Well, I can figure out a way regarding my adjutant, but Your Majesty, there is something I have to say: as the human race's Minister of Foreign Affairs, don't you think it is a bit unruly for me to not have a group of honor guard? Of course, I can understand the conundrum we are in at the moment, so I hope that after the main fighting force has been formed, I hope Your Majesty will remember to assign some to the Department of Foreign Affairs. Lastly, I hope Your Majesty will give the Department of Foreign Affairs some degree of control over the ability to announce war. After all, as someone from the Blue Race, I am familiar with the power and psychology of most alien races, and it will help greatly in my responsibilities."

Even Yao Yuan was baffled by the series of sentences Blue 6 had rattled off. He could not collect himself to respond. Thankfully, Ren Tao beside him coughed and his own Thinker power started to activate. He composed himself and said calmly, "Very good, these powers should be yours since you are willing to take the responsibility of the Minister of Foreign Affairs. Then... I will give you 21 Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s, 20 Black Star Troopers, as well as 100 Defense Unit soldiers to protect and act as your embassy staff. Regarding your honor guard... After we humans have developed some more, I will arrange that for you immediately. Of course, before that, I hope you can resolve this immediate problem facing us."

Blue 6 was practically glowing. He felt like his heart was going to explode. In fact, when he heard he was going to lead 20 Black Star Troopers, the hesitation in his heart dissipated. Earlier, he was

worried that these humans were just pulling his leg, but 20 Black Star Troopers... Yes, Blue 6 knew what the Black Star Troopers were, they were 20 cosmic adapters. This was... such a fortune! 20 cosmic adapters were such a strange concept! F\*ck, even level 6 space civilizations had to be cautious around him. If Blue 6 and his men were harmed in any way, they would be hounded by a large amount of same level civilizations!

"Of course, Your Majesty! I will go perform my duties now!"

Blue 6 immediately turned to face the operators. In a voice that was bordering on yelling, he said, "What are you people standing there for? Get moving! Send out the messages before these alien spaceships block our ship's forward path!"

This time, the operators did not hesitate. After all, this was the most important thing at the moment, and Yao Yuan had given Blue 6 permission. So no matter whether he really wanted Blue 6 to be the Minister of Foreign Affairs or not, they had to solve this imminent crisis first.

Just like that, several seconds later, all of these spaceships received the message from the Hope in the space merchants' language. This made the different civilizations sigh in relief... After all, this meant that the other party was familiar with space rules and was civilized. That was important for communication and enabled them to seek help.

"Your ship is not allowed to be closer than three combat spaces..."

"Please send out foreign affairs ships to conduct a discussion with our party..."

"To slow down the demonization of your ship, and to monitor possible hostile activities, please do not use any defense mechanisms and allow our combat jets to get close and escort..."

"Please answer in 60 seconds ,or we will treat your contact as hostility, and we reserve the right to attack you directly!"

At that moment, all those ships were at the brink of despair because the closer they got to the Hope, the closer they got to the cursed planet. The signs of demonization were getting rampant. Almost all of the spaceships outside had morphed and around 80 percent of the lifeforms within had changed. So to put it simply, no matter what the Hope ordered them to do, they would obey. It was their last chance at survival.

Very soon, the Hope received the replies. They all agreed to the Hope's three demands easily, but they requested that the Hope would solve their demonization problem as soon as possible.

When he saw their replies, Blue 6 laughed coldly. He said, "Only with written detailed contracts and the support of powerful battle capability can real contracts be born. This kind of easily given promise is nothing more than a delay strategy. Tell them that we will send out our men to protect their foreign affairs ships to come negotiate with us. At the same time, we will promise to keep their demonization under control, but..."

Blue 6 said, with a wicked smile, "These two! The two that are most affected by demonization. Ignore them completely. After they have fully demonized, get our men to shoot them down! Let these civilizations understand one thing: their lives are in our hands. We are not someone they can afford to swindle or make light of..."

Because Yao Yuan did not interrupt, and because Blue 6 was indeed the successor to the Blue Race's throne, and because humans really did not know much about space diplomacy, Blue 6 had taken over the operation easily. He did not hesitate to make use of his power. He requested the tour spaceship that was captured to be brought to the hangar. Then he brought 20 Black Star Troopers, about 10 Defense Unit soldiers, and his own people from the Blue Race to leave the Hope with 21 Space Combat Jets Prototype 011s leading the way.

The few spaceships also sent out their own foreign affairs ships

in the attempt to make contact. Due to multiple reasons, three spaceships did not send out their people. Under Yao Yuan's watchful gaze, every alien embassy spaceship was surrounded by 12 Space Combat Jets. Only those three larger spaceships were left completely alone. All of this took less than five minutes to organize. Since there was no creator's particle, the orders could be given with the press of a button.

Around 10 minutes later, these embassy spaceships gathered at the empty space between the Hope and their motherships. To everyone's surprise, these few embassy spaceships had started to demonize when they left their motherships, but when they got about 10 kilometers of Blue 6's ship, the signs of demonization disappeared completely. Of course, the damages were not undone, but all of the weird evolutions like flesh, fire, and ice disappeared and the ships reverted to normal albeit damaged spaceships.

Blue 6, as the Minister of Foreign Affairs, was the most powerful officer there in spite of his captive identity. Yao Yuan had given him the responsibility to settle this issue. When these spaceships neared their tour spaceship, Blue 6 whispered his order to the Black Star Troopers and soldiers around him. "When they enter the spaceship, strip them of their weapons and defense equipment. You do not need to be courteous with them."

The few Blue Race citizens nodded naturally, but the soldiers looked at each other with confusion. One of the troopers asked after a short hesitation, "But Minister of Foreign Affairs... Minister Blue, is that really suitable for space negotiations?"

Blue 6 turned to give him a smile. "It is absolutely suitable. The human race has not had much contact with other civilizations, right? As my unit members, I will first teach you one important lesson... this is how we do diplomacy in space!"

When Blue 6 said that, the three demonized spaceships lit up with giant explosions. Several Space Combat Jets were ordered to blow them up!

# Chapter 333: Survivor Union

---

There was a constitutional difference between war in space and war on Earth, and that was for space combat, there was no depth of strategy!

The cosmos might be vast, but in the event of a war, unless there was planet-based building or bases involved, then both sides were fighting with their lives on the line.

Depth of strategy? If your spaceship was blown up, it was impossible for anyone in the spaceship to survive, because lifeforms in space needed spaceships to survive. In other words, war in space was putting everything on the line. The best strategy was to branch out into more fleet units and sequester the public away on safer grounds, but it did not take away from the danger of the situation.

Therefore, from level 2 space civilizations onwards... in fact, for one to be called a space civilization, other than unique cases like humankind, one would have to start at level 2. When this civilization started building their space travelling gear, the most important aspect to focus on was naturally the defence technology. For example, the electromagnetic shield for level 2 space civilizations and plasma energy shields for level 3 space civilizations. It was these defensive measures that helped save the spaceships and the general civilization!

Compared to the energy shields, the spaceships themselves were relatively weaker. After all, even if one became a level 3 space civilization, the materials used in the construction of their spaceship was mostly enhanced metals. They used plasma energy to rearrange the metals at an atomic level. This kind of metal had great tensile strength and malleability. To put it simply, if such a metal dropped down to Earth, perhaps humankind would not be able to even bend its shape, much less melt it or smith it.

This kind of metallurgy was no better than paper making for level 3 space civilizations. Almost any weapon from a level 3 space civilization could tear through these metals like tofu. The only thing that could stand up to the threat of weapons from the same level was... the different energy shields!

When the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s fought the demonized spaceships, this kind of result could be seen!

There is no need to reiterate the details of the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011. Basically, the Hope had pulled its belt tight to squeeze out as many materials and human resources as it could to contribute to the construction of these flying machines that were at the peak of level 2 space civilization! Bo Li's design was truly the best of space combat.

The three demonized spaceships, even though they looked scary, honestly speaking, their weapons had completely been destroyed and their defense systems had collapsed. Using Gaussian weapons, these ships were like tofu. With the collective fire of multiple Space Combat Jets, the spaceships directly exploded. They only wanted to fire some warning shots, but the power of the jets was greater than they assumed.

Witnessing this from his tour spaceship, Blue 6 revealed a great smile when the three large spaceships exploded in sparks and flames. He said excitedly, "This is amazing. The designs of these jets are amazing. Do we humans really have such a brilliant designer? The Emperor should really reward him the best honor!"

Blue 6 seemed to suddenly remember something. He turned to look at the few troopers with shock and asked, "By the way, I did ask this earlier... Could the designer be an Academic of Dark Science?"

The troopers were confused. One of them whispered, "Minister Blue, the designer for this space jet is a female professor called Bo Li. She is a Whisperer. How can I explain this? When she is in the



middle of her research, she will naturally hear something whispered into her ear, and she uses this as guidance to design these things..."

"That is it!" Blue 6 clapped and he said excitedly, "This is such a pleasant surprise! Our technological staff contains an Academic of Dark Science?! It is so impossible to believe! However, now that I think about it, it seems normal... Since we have someone as legendary as the Immortal, having Academics of Dark Science, Artists of Logical Concept, and Soul Webbers seems completely normal, right? Looks like our human race is heading for glory, and the way is just ahead of us!"

Blue 6 was gladdened. When he thought about his role as the Secretary of Foreign Affairs, his excitement grew. However, he maintained a calm composure on the surface. After all, the diplomacy department was one of the three most important bodies in a civilization. He had to maintain his royal conduct to not lower the human race's standards.

As Blue 6 busied himself with the thoughts of the human race, the alien spaceships continuously arrived at this tour ship. Before the spaceships even entered the tour ship, the hearts of these aliens were pulled tight and their malicious thoughts were extinguished.

Even though the tour ship was small in size, it was definitely the creation of a level 3 space civilization! Just the obvious plasma energy shield alone was enough to extinguish all the negative thoughts in the aliens from level 2 space civilizations. Furthermore, when they entered the ship, their weapons were confiscated by a group of armed lifeforms. Every alien lifeforms sighed internally because this was a civilization that knew space diplomacy very well. They knew it was impossible to swindle their way into a good deal and that they would have to pay.

Very soon, after all the aliens had arrived, Blue 6 entered the room escorted by 20 Black Star Troopers and around 10 Defense Unit soldiers. About 10 embassy members from the different alien

races offered their most respectful greetings and sighed a deep sigh internally. They were truly dealing with a level 3 space civilization, and the most famous level 3 space civilization of all, the Blue Race.

Blue 6 seemed to have read their thoughts, because he said, in the space merchant's language, "First I would like to remind everyone that I am not here as a member of the Blue Race, but I am representing a new race, and the ones standing in front of you now is the human race that will sweep across the cosmos in the future! Now, with that out of the way, I am sure the current situation is clear as day for everyone here. Your main ships are protected by us humans' cosmic adapters, but this situation is only temporary, or rather there has to be compensation for this service. I am sure everyone is in agreement of that, right? Lastly, I wish to remind everyone that the one speaking right now is the human race's Minister of Foreign Affairs, and that means that I have the right to decide your life or death. That is all you need to know."

The aliens communicated among themselves. Several seconds later, a long, line-shaped intelligent lifeform said, "Honorable Minister of Foreign Affairs, we are willing to abide by your race's requirements and pay accordingly for keeping us alive, but I would like to remind your grace... that in all these spaceships, each has a cosmic adapter, so please don't cross your hands and do nothing."

Blue 6 scoffed coldly/ He asked the Blue Race adjutant beside him, "Which race is he from? Which one is his race's spaceship? Tell the combat jets to get away from it. Why waste time arguing? One cosmic adapter and you dare to request so many things? Remember, we are not actively hurting your cosmic adapter, we are only saving our own cosmic adapters. Pass down the order."

Right then, the long lifeform started to shiver all over. He collapsed to the floor and begged, "Minister of Foreign Affairs, please forgive my misspoken words, it was my mistake... No, my greed is at fault. I am willing to use my life in exchange for Minister's forgiveness. I am offering my deepest and sincerest

apology. As long as your race is willing to save our cosmic adapter, we are willing to use one-third of our population as trade. Of course, according to the space contract, please return our cosmic adapter after the crisis is over."

Blue 6 waved his hand to stop the Blue Race adjutant who was going to send out the order. He said, with a smile, "You should have led with that instead. I do not need you to use your life to pay for your sin. Relay this information to your races' cosmic adapters. According to the space contract, before the crisis is over, I demand that they move to our mothership. This decision is for your own good since our mothership is the safest place to defend against demonization...

"Secondly, I demand to have us humans as the leader to form a survivors union to survive this demonization catastrophe. All of you will be our vassals to support us humans' survival."

Blue 6 took a break to point at the cloud of unknown masses. He smiled coldly and said, "Let me remind all of you, do you really think this evolution is the end? The demon race... is the greediest existence in space, so don't tell me you really think this is everything they will do.

"No, this is just the beginning! You see that planet that has become flesh? That change is only barely the beginning! So, if you want to live, surrender to us humans and be our vassals. Fight for us and we will face this greediest race in the cosmos together!"

Several minutes later, in the Hope's central command, a jaw-dropping agreement appeared on screen. This agreement made those who were involved in the negotiation with the space merchants hide their faces from shame... in comparison, this agreement was so much better!

"Survivors Union Treaty?" Yao Yuan read the agreement with his eyes glowing. At the same time, he told Ren Tao beside him, "Blue 6... can continue in his post as our Minister of Foreign Affairs.

Until he decides to betray us, he will enjoy all the privileges his post brings!"

# Chapter 334: Landing!

---

"...That is the basic situation!"

Blue 6 told Yao Yuan and the gathered human officials there with a face full of excitement.

They were at the Hope's main meeting room. As Blue 6 led the five alien cosmic adapters back to the Hope, he walked at the forefront with his head held high like a hero in his return. He also requested Yao Yuan gather all the free government officials and royalty because he wished to announce his diplomacy result.

Honestly, Yao Yaun really did not want to agree to this demand. After all, they were heading towards the cursed planet. War could break out at any moment, so why were they still doing something like this?

However, after thinking about it some more, firstly, Blue 6 had just completed an impossible mission. One could say that with this Survivors Alliance Contract, humankind reaching the peak of level 2 space civilization was pretty much a done deal. Secondly, they might get several motherships as protection barriers and could get more useful information from the aliens. This mission had changed generously due to Blue 6's contribution. In other words, Blue 6 had technically saved plenty of human lives with his diplomacy skills.

Furthermore, Blue 6 was from the Blue Race, whose culture Yao Yuan did not understand. Perhaps that race thought that not having a meeting was a grave offense and that could create more problems, especially if Blue 6 felt slighted by it, thus increasing his desire to betray humanity. Therefore, after giving it some thought, Yao Yuan decided to abide by Blue 6's request.

Blue 6 and the other Blue Race members seemed to treat this as normal. They lifted their heads and returned with their heads held high. Then, in front of all the representatives and high officials, he

introduced the five alien cosmic adapters and the contract. At the same time, he said, "Here, I wish to announce proudly... this will be us humans' first vassal race, but it will not be the last. We humans will only be stronger from now on!"

The words were powerful... even though the term 'we humans' coming out of a blue-colored skin alien on stage was plenty weird. Of course, these professional people did not point that out but offered a great round of applause.

The Blue Race members were shocked because for the Blue Race, when one wanted to show respect or joy, they also would clap their hands. Naturally, Blue 6 did not dwell on that, instead he said, "And so I announce proudly that my task as Minister of Foreign Affairs has ended. I wish the royal committee and Your Majesty will give me a fair evaluation. Ladies and gentlemen, please cheer for me!"

Just like that, the meeting ended in a sea of applause. Right after that, Blue 6 searched Yao Yuan out to request for an upgrade to his room to match his current position, and he even requested for an accommodation upgrade for the 20 Black Star Troopers who had aided him.

After Yao Yuan fielded all the requests from Blue 6, he and Ren Tao moved towards central command. He asked Ren Tao along the way, "Evaluation? What is that?"

Ren Tao scratched his head and said, "It should be related Blue Race's societal system... Even though there are still many things I do not understand, the Blue Race definitely uses the feudal system, and the most important point within feudalism is the recognition of individual freedom. In other words, a dog can enter my private space freely, but the emperor cannot. Of course, that is an exaggerated analogy, but that is the basis of feudalism. I think what Blue 6 meant was simple: he used feudalistic ideals to understand our current system, so he assumed that by finishing his task, he deserves corresponding rewards. In that case... I really do

not know what the normal reward for the Blue Race is, but this evaluation has plenty to do with rewards."

Yao Yuan said with a frown, "Reward you say? What types of things does the Blue Race like? Blue-colored stuff? Damn, we have no idea what they like, so how am I supposed to reward them... But honestly speaking, Blue 6 has done a splendid job for this mission. Because of him, our situation has improved manifold. It would not be wrong to say he perhaps has managed to save the Hope. We might need him a lot more in the future, so the mark for his evaluation cannot be low... In any case, I guess it is just simplest to ask him directly what kind of reward he prefers."

Without noticing it, the two had arrived at central command. When they reached the place, Yao Yuan's secretary briefed them on everything that had happened while they were away attending the meeting.

"We are 27 minutes away from reaching the cursed planet. All of the boarding ships are ready. With your order, they can depart any minute now. However, there are too many unknown masses around this area, so we have to change our path to avoid them."

Yao Yuan sat in his captain's chair. He used his finger to press a button on his seat's arm and told the worker, "Order battleships A and B to attack all the unknown masses. Tell them it is integral for them to make sure the unknown masses are not allowed to get close to the Hope! At the same time, order battleships C, D, and E to protect the Hope, especially after the boarding ships leave the ship. Have them protect the ship to the best of their abilities!"

Battleships A, B, C, D, and E were the motherships of the five races who luckily survived. Even though they were not super battleships, any one of them was at least five to ten times bigger than the Hope. Even though they were damaged from the earlier demonization, the remaining aliens activated all of their still usable weapon systems according to Yao Yuan's order.

Battleships A and B focused fire on the unknown masses around the Hope. A great amount of Gaussian weapons and some plasma weapon fired at once. The unknown masses that did not have energy shield protection were shattered into minute pieces. This was the power of civilizations peaking at level 2!

Everyone on the Hope sighed in relief. If not for Blue 6's contract, these spaceships... would be a huge threat to the Hope!

"I order the three boarding ships to depart now. 150 Black Star Troopers, prepare to land! Destination, point S!"

On the Hope's surveillance system, there was a large hole underneath the Hope's surface. There was residual radioactive energy found at the spot. This energy was not natural radioactive energy but evidence of radioactive reactors. In other words, it was probably where the Noah One was... That spot would be this mission's main target!

"But unfortunately, for some reason, when the surveillance devices tried to scan deeper into the surface of the planet, they were interrupted. If not for that, we would know for sure whether there are humans on the planet." Yao Yuan sighed after giving his order.

Ren Tao grumbled, "Learn to be satisfied. You think you're a god? Unless you're the main character of a story, life is not going to be smooth sailing. Regardless, this situation... is already better than what we predicted."

"You're right." Yao Yuan sighed and continued, "Now... everything depends on Ol' Wong."

At the same time, Guang Zhen and the 150 people who had been waiting at the hangar boarded the three boarding ships... They might be called boarding ships, but they were more like giant, metallic buckets. After the troopers got in, the bottoms of the buckets extended out particle flux streams. With the propulsion energy, the three boarding ships rushed towards the cursed planet.



As they entered its atmosphere, the three ships fell toward the surface following the planet's gravity. Their falling speed increased like there were three fireballs in the sky.

Several minutes later...

Using the anti-gravitational system, the three boarding ships landed successfully next to the giant hole where the Noah One once was and the scenery that unfolded before them...

Several green-colored meat blobs were morphing, struggling, consuming, and attacking. Among them... a large meat blob was hatching...

A new lifeform!

# Chapter 335: Appearance of the Demon Race!

---

The cosmos is millennia old, and there have always been the legends of three greatest threats in space. The third was AI. Low-level AI, middle-level AI, and high-level AI were respectively low-tier space civilizations (level 1 to 3), middle-tier space civilizations (level 4 to 6) and high-tier space civilizations (level 7 to 9). Since there was no need for soul balance or exhaustion, AI civilizations were usually unimaginably huge. The AI would swallow one galaxy after another to convert the materials and energy into its resources. Therefore, AI civilizations would always be a threat, even to space civilizations of similar levels. Only space civilizations that were one level higher than the AI would be able to squash the AI civilization completely. Normally, the only choice was to run. However, there was a fatal flaw to the AI civilizations, and that was their lack of soul. Due to the lack of soul, there would not be improvement in science. A level 3 AI civilization, without encountering some miraculous events, would still be a level 3 AI civilization even after one billion years. Eventually, it would stumble across a civilization more powerful than it and get promptly destroyed!

There was another legend that stated that AI civilizations could only manage to become level 9 space civilizations at most. They could never become a godlike-tier civilization!

The second threat was the zerg civilization... Actually, they could hardly be called a civilization, because among the entire zerg civilization, there was only one being with sentience, and that was the so-called mother nest.

The difference between the zerg and AI was hard to tell. One thing to note was that out of all of the zerg colonies in the cosmos, it was guaranteed there would be no colony that had similar DNA.

In other words, even though they were all called the zerg race, each zerg colony was its own isolated existence. They had the same properties of endless consumption, which lumped them together as the zerg race.

Indeed, the zerg race travelled through space evolving and improving through consumption of all living DNA. The mother nest contained soul, so it could manipulate its own DNA. Therefore, the zerg race could engulf a whole planet to drain its minerals and energy. If it was a life-preserving planet, the zerg race would even end up with a wealth of DNA samples, improving its own race's power.

If that was everything the zerg did, then possibly any level 2 space civilization could demolish them. However, the scariest thing about the zerg race was that they were capable of consuming technology!

Yes, the zerg could consume anything, and if those things were technological products, then the zerg race could even use its own flesh to simulate these products. This was why the zerg race was so scary! Think about it, if the zerg race consumed H-bombs and then used that to create H-bomb flies... Based on the zerg race's productivity, the sky would be filled with H-bomb flies in just hours... if the opposing race could not handle H-bomb power, then what would happen to them?

Therefore, the zerg race with great numbers, super productivity and mobility, and insatiable hunger was scarier than AI civilizations. The ability to manipulate technology edged them one ladder higher than AI. There were also rumours stating that the zerg race could never become a godlike-tier space civilization...

Next would be legends about the demon race...

Legends about the demon race were understandably fewer in number than ones about AI and the zerg. This was because no known civilization could provide any real detailed information

about the demon race. Therefore, this greediest race in the cosmos was stuff of make believe for many.

Of course, Guang Zhen knew everything that Blue 6 had told Yao Yuan about the demon race, but when he saw the things before him for himself, he truly understood what the demon race was...

When the three boarding ships landed on the surface, the first thing everyone saw was the innumerable green meat blobs. Of course, these were what the Black Star Troopers saw. The normal human being, Guang Zhen, saw something completely different.

In his eyes, the world was as miraculous as his dream. The scenery was shifting every other minute; one moment it was the battlefields that he was familiar with, another second it was dates he used to have with his girlfriends, then it would change to his battles side by side with the Black Star Unit...

These memories from the past brought tears to Guang Zhen's eyes. However, he was a real warrior, one who had survived hundreds of battles, so it only took him several seconds to decide on biting on his tongue in order to pull himself out of the illusion. Then he saw what the others were seeing.

"You saw that?" Guang Zhen was solemn. He looked at the 150 plus Black Star Troopers behind and whispered at Xiao Niao beside him.

Xiao Niao was startled and replied curiously, "Saw what? You're talking about these green blobs? Yes, we definitely see those, but it sounds like you're not referring to them... so why? Did you see something different from what we see?"

Guang Zhen gazed into the distance and said, "I... I seemed to be in a dream. It is hard to describe. It was a weird feeling. I seemed to hear a voice calling me deeper into the dream, into happiness. To put it simply... I felt seduced!"

Xiao Niao's gaze suddenly sharpened when he heard Guang Zhen

say those words. He looked at the green blobs around him and replied, "That's weird because I did not see those things. Why is that?" Then Xiao Niao asked several Black Star Troopers, including Zhang Heng, and none of them said they had the same experience as Guang Zhen. Zhang Heng added that the planet was extremely dangerous, but the danger was not imminent enough to warrant retreat.

"Looks like the problem is yours alone..." Xiao Niao kept thinking, and he said to no one in particular, "Now that I think about it, the biggest difference between you and the rest of us is you are not a Homo Evolutis... I think I got it. Perhaps there is some unique circumstance here that only affects the mental state of non-Homo Evolutis."

Guang Zhen patted his own space armor and said, "This armor is completely sealed, it is like a spacesuit. I have no contact with the outside world. Let's say the virus or air of this planet can induce hallucinations, but how would it affect me?"

Xiao Niao shrugged and said, "Perhaps hypnosis... Physical contact isn't necessary to cause hallucinations. In any case, you have to be careful because you're our leader. If you fall, this mission will fail... If not, why don't you call Yao Yuan and have him switch positions with you?"

Guang Zhen smacked his chest and the metallic clang of the armor rang like bells. At the same time, he pulled out his Gaussian gun and sawblade to say, "That is easier said than done. Every minute here is dangerous. How long you think it will take for me to swap places with Yao Yuan? Furthermore, who do you think I am? I am not that weak..."

Here, Guang Zhen's eyes turned deeper and he looked into the distance again. "These scary dreams seem... to start changing. I now see many creepy monsters. The friends and memories from before have changed into monsters. They were rushing towards those green meat blobs, but... they seemed to be extremely afraid

of them. One of them dared to approach us, but it melted into nothingness like it was splashed with a bath of acid..."

When Guang Zhen said that, the green blobs around them started to change. Many meat blobs had their colors changed and were morphing into other strange shapes...

At the same time, within the underground tunnel, Yun Si's party was completely cornered. At the front of the tunnel entrance was a large number of controlled humans and schools of alien octopuses. Even though they did not come armed with high-tech weapons, their numbers were endless. If not for the advantage of the tunnel, this small group of humans would have been swarmed by now.

Alas, at that crucial moment, there was a report of problems coming from deeper in the tunnel. There was rumor of monsters among the human group.

"F\*ck, the exit has already been sealed off and blocked! Where will the monsters come from? Do you believe I won't kill you with a shot right now? The entrance is already breaking and you come to me with this nonsense report from the back? Do you really wish for death?"

One of the mysterious vice captains roared angrily. He gripped the soldier's cuff with his eyes blazing, and his gun was pointed at this soldier's forehead.

The soldier was innocent, and he could not really give an explanation. Honestly, it was impossible for such a thing to happen, but he really did receive such a report. How else was he going to explain the accidents happening among the civilians? Self-inflicted damage?

Yun Si, the Diviner, stepped in to calm the captain. He looked down the deep tunnel with cold eyes and said, "Calm down. From that side... I really do sense danger, and look closely, that person right there... does he look like a human being to you?"

# Chapter 336: So-Called Demon

---

"Demons... are the ones mentioned in your human race's bible, or the demon within the heart described within the eastern scriptures."

Xiao Niao remembered such conversations with ZERO. Even though ZERO had not conversed with him face-to-face, she had always relied on typing, and thus there was always a mechanical feeling to her conversation. But at that moment, Xiao Niao felt the sense of surprise between ZERO's lines.

"I have watched you humans evolve from chimps. I can assure you that you humans are normal sentient lifeforms. There are many lifeforms like yourselves in the whole cosmos. You humans are not as exceptional as portrayed in your literature. However, there is one thing that is incredibly curious. In your many civilizations, be it western or eastern, the similarity between the human race's origin has always been related to earth and the soul (the breath or blood of the gods). Weirdly enough, it is from this origin that the start of the demon race was described...

"Could it be that you humans have a history that is unbeknownst to me as well?"

Xiao Niao thought back to all of this. It overlapped with the story Guang Zhen told him. The demon in the bible and in human heart... what kind of existence would that be?

The demon in the bible should be the angel who betrayed God. He went against God's order and reached out towards mankind's ancestor, Adam. One third of the angels joined Lucifer's rebellion and they were all sent by God into hell and became demons. These demons eventually made a deal with God. God would lead humanity towards good while demons would lead humanity towards depravity. The good people would go the heavens and the depraved to hell, thus creating the worldview described in the

bible.

The demon within the human heart in eastern scriptures referred to the possibility of falling into a demonic state during cultivation. The types of demons included sins of greed or envy. They affected the cultivators mentally.

The similarity between the two was their abstract nature... For example, the demon in the bible might have a shape or form, but due to the limitations set down by God, demons are unable to physically harm human beings. They can only rely on sins and lies to lead humans towards depravity. It was the same for the demons in human hearts.

The second similarity was their ability to draw human beings into depravity mentioned above. Both types of demons lure human beings into hell or death through pure deceit. In other words, their influence was purely mental. On the physical plane, demons were non-existent!

The information above was the product of the many discussions between Xiao Niao and Ren Tao. However, since there were still too many things that were unknown about the demon race, the discussions weren't much more than things to pass the time.

Until they captured Blue 6 and obtained more information from him, the discussion between the two Thinkers started in earnest again, but in the end, however, they could not come up with any valid conclusion because they had not seen the demons in action for themselves...

Until then, when Xiao Niao heard those words from Guang Zhen, he finally had some ideas in his mind.

"I remembered a hypothesis from a famous scientist... He asked another scientist if there is a type of living creature that cannot feel, see, nor touch. The other scientist replied, 'If there is a creature that cannot feel, see, nor touch, then it is not a living creature...'"



Xiao Niao studied the morphing organisms and said this to Guang Zhen matter-of-factly.

Guang Zhen was in the middle of assigning orders to the Black Star Troopers. He paused when Xiao Niao said those things. He then turned towards him and barked, "Be clear and concise, don't play puzzles with me. I am not afraid of you Thinkers, I am not Yao Yuan, and this is a battlefield. If your little puzzles cause any delay in the mission, I will be the first to put a bullet in your head!"

Xiao Niao shrugged helplessly and said, "I meant what I said, literally... Fine, I will put it in simpler terms, and I believe you. Do you remember what Blue 6 told us? In legends, the demons could only be fought by cosmic adapters. In reality, us Homo Evolutis cannot see the illusions that you see, so we will not be affected, and I suspect that if you fall for the illusion... you too will change into those meat blobs. Perhaps...

"The supposed demon race is a type of lifeform that exists purely in soul form. We cannot see them, touch them, or detect them on our radar. Only under specific circumstances will they appear, and when they do, they will use some kind of method to infect materials or lifeforms, changing them into different forms. They use this method to achieve some kind of goal!"

When Xiao Niao reached this part of his analysis, his face was drawn, but he continued, "And isn't this... exactly the way the demon in the bible or in our hearts materialize themselves?!"

At the same time, before the eyes of 150 Black Star Troopers, the several green meat blobs had finished their transformations... The end result was hard to describe. It wasn't certain whether they were still living organism or not. Some of the meat blobs had morphed into giants, but they were weird-looking and disgusting. The biggest were 20 plus meters tall and were made out of bones. Some of them had seven to eight bones sticking out of their flesh, like spiders.

Some had minimized to become sheets of meat boils that covered the floor. They were about 20 cubic meters in size.

Others morphed into rocks or metals. Some parts of their bodies looked like weapons, while others were fire or ice. Some were moving or roaring, while others were completely twisted. It was something that human language failed to describe. It was something out of one's nightmares.

These few meat creatures appeared before the Black Star Troopers. Even though the troopers had been through several wars and some of them were soldiers when they were still on Earth, they felt chills when looking at this situation. The chills came from the fear of the unknown... Because what exactly were these things before them!?

Regardless, there was nothing else they could do but fight!

Guang Zhen took a deep breath because he saw several mirage creatures slipping into those green meat blobs. The mirages looked exactly like the things that appeared before them now... Was it like Xiao Niao said, could they only exist in soul form and had to rely on inducing evolution in material stuff to pass into the physical world?

"Fire! Fire! Get into combat!"

Guang Zhen waved the sawblade in his hand and roared, "We are Black Star Troopers! We are humankind's best weapon and armor! We are steel! We are the end for humankind's enemies! We fight for humanity! We have no fear!"

"Kill all the monsters! Cowards will die from shame! Do you wish for your name to appear in the Hall of Remembrance as cowards?! Kill for the Hope! For humanity!"

A hail of Gaussian bullets rained on those monsters!

To everyone's surprise, when the bullets neared the monsters, they disappeared... Yes, all the bullets evaporated into thin air

without causing any damage to the monsters. There were no signs of bullet damage on the monsters, nor the ground around the monsters. The blanket fire resulted in... nothing!

"Electromagnetic shields? Plasma shields?!" Guang Zhen almost bit through his lip because he was the most familiar with what was happening before them. These creatures' weird and sudden appearance had already rocked the troopers' confidence in battle. However, if they could win this one battle, then their confidence would be recovered. The troopers had fought bigger and stronger enemies before, like the zerg. The thing that caused fear in their hearts at the moment was the unknown... They would not be afraid of these scary-looking monsters because they were Black Star Troopers, and they had survived multiple space wars and had unimaginable combat capability!

But now... their attack was useless? And it was not just that the bullets got blocked physically, but this mystery added to the unknown. If this was allowed to continue, then the confidence of the troopers would break...

Guang Zhen gritted his teeth. After a sudden roar, he charged into the fray, his sawblade whizzing through the air. After that, a few of the other Black Star Unit members who came to, the first being Ebon, who was flashing red in his eyes, yelled loudly, "Those that want to accomplish their mission and become a real Black Star Trooper, follow me!" He picked up his speed to chase after Guang Zhen. In fact, he ran past him and was the first to charge into the middle of the monsters. He lifted his sawblade and swiped at a metal monster.

The sawblade tore through metals...

The sawblade was like cutting through tofu. Ebon had sliced the legs off this monster before he even realized what had happened. Ebon did not stop there. He was a Perceptor, the Homo Evolutis most suited for combat. While he was charging towards another target, he kicked the ground under his feet and the power within

his space armor exploded. Following a small tremor, he leaped several meters into the air, and there were two particle flux streams behind him. He landed before a meat mountain monster. Under everyone's gazes, he charged at it...

Ebon came out from the other side of the monster as the monster was cut into two by him!

These so-called demons... were so weak?!

# Chapter 337: Underground!

---

Demon race...

Of course, that was if these weird things they were facing were indeed the demon race. In any case, the 150 Black Star Troopers annihilated these monsters using their sawblades while suffering zero loss. Then the plasma weapons were used to decimate the monsters' remains. All of this only took several minutes.

"This is the so-called demon race? They are so weak!" Ebon laughed in his booming voice.

Ebon was covered in so many broken remains that his space armor had lost its original color. However, it did not worry him, because after pressing a button, a flash of electricity pulsed through his armor's surface and the remains were evaporated. The shining space armour was now as good as new.

Guang Zhen sidled to Ebon's side while laughing and said solemnly, "Is this really the time for that? Have you forgotten the rules of the battlefield after a few years of peace?"

Ebon segued into dry laughs and quickly ordered a few troopers to get to work. Right then, Liu Bai walked to Guang Zhen's side and said, "Commander, as the leading medic of this unit, my suggestion is that... we do not take any samples of these creatures with us, because I cannot guarantee we have really demolished them."

Guang Zhen nodded as he lifted his head to gaze into the distance. "You are right, we did not really destroy them... or rather, we did not destroy them all. You guys are unable to see what I have seen... These monsters, after their physical bodies were destroyed, other than the few that surrounded several troopers, the rest all changed back to become part of the nightmare. They surround us heavily, roaring at us relentlessly..."

Liu Bai looked at him with a frown. He scoffed, "Commander, don't tell me you're afraid? What is there to be afraid of regarding these monsters?"

Guang Zhen did not get mad from the interrogation. After all, Liu Bai was one of his earliest comrades. He merely smiled and said, "I'm not really afraid... but these dreams are frighteningly real. Even the desire deep down in my heart was presented before me. This feeling... is horrible!"

Liu Bai was silent for some time after he heard that. Suddenly, he waved at a group of Gaussian snipers a distance away from them. As the long-ranged unit got closer, he turned to Guang Zhen and said, "Commander, where is this nightmare that you see?"

Guang Zhen was taken aback by the question. He replied as his gaze scanned the troopers that had gathered around them. "This is not necessary. Haven't we tried this before? All long range weapons are useless against them. The bullets will disappear when they get close or will be changed into something else. Other than close combat, there is no way..."

Liu Bai ignored Guang Zhen and ordered the few troopers to fire down the direction Guang Zhen was looking at earlier. The focus fire riddled the ground with bullets, but it did not seem to have done any damage.

Guang Zhen was silent. He clapped Liu Bai on his soldier. He then walked towards the technical team not far away and said, "You're worried about me... Don't worry, I will survive. I know Ying's death is hanging on your mind. It's hanging on mine too, so don't worry. I will not be defeated by mere dreams so easily!"

On the other hand, Xiao Niao and Zhang Heng were busy alongside 10 plus Black Star Troopers. Among them, a large device was being built. Xiao Niao was ordering the troopers around to fix the parts. The device would be completed soon.

Right then, Guang Zhen joined them. He asked Xiao Niao, "How

long will it take for the super functionality electromagnetic radar to be built?"

Xiao Niao answered instantly, "It will be done in the next three minutes. Don't worry, we have had dry runs building this device on the Hope, so it will not take that long. What I am worried about though is what if this device still cannot help us find the Noah One?"

Guang Zhen sighed. "In that case, we will try our best to spread out. Now, none of us can guarantee that the Noah One is still there, and we cannot guarantee there are still living humans on it, but... since we're already here, then we will have to complete this mission."

Xiao Niao thought about it before shrugging helplessly. Then Guang Zhen turned to Zhang Heng and said, "How is the danger level now? Is there anything we should be concerned about?"

Zhang Heng gave a curious expression before shaking his head. "Actually... I have been feeling the danger ever since we landed on this planet. It has never stopped, and if you want the truth, this kind of danger is similar to life-threatening danger, and it is only getting stronger."

When Zhang Heng said that, everyone there shivered from chills. After all, Zhang Heng was the most famous Diviner, and he was the strongest Diviner on the Hope (Eva being the exception). His danger sense had never failed them before, so when he said the danger was life-threatening, no one dared to doubt him.

"In any case..." Guang Zhen was calm. He said as he turned back around, "Get the device ready first and try to scan the situation on this planet. If there is really nothing... we will come up with another plan or we will return to the Hope."

Several minutes later, the device was activated and supermagnetic waves scanned the planet. In just seconds, the situation all over the planet was recorded by the device. This was

several million times better than Earth's radars!

When one said the situation all over the planet, it meant all over the planet, from the surface to the underground. In actuality, if they were allowed to use the radar on the Hope, they would be able to scan the entire solar system. This too was a product of the 4th revolution.

The scan result was presented to everyone. Like how it was on the Hope, due to some reasons, the electromagnetic waves were greatly blocked. Most of the radar results were blank spaces. However, perhaps because they were on the planet itself, the 200 kilometers around them were successfully scanned, and what they saw was frightening and exciting.

"Look! This underground space is too suspicious. Look at that, those are human beings! They are in combat with creatures of some kind. There are several thousand of those creatures!"

Ebon was the first to cry out when they saw the result. He was ready to wrangle the troops together.

However, the more experienced Guang Zhen asked the operator, "That's all? There's no evidence of a spaceship? Where is the Noah One? These humans couldn't have just appeared out of nowhere. Where is the important Noah One?"

The operator continued working for several seconds before replying, "Sorry, the rest of the places are still blank. This is the limit that we can scan, and we did not discover any spaceship parts. But Commander, please look at this... This area near those humans, those are human buildings, and this part on the surface looks like a small town. There are humanoids there. Those are probably humans as well."

Xiao Niao chimed in, "I have a hypothesis. Perhaps the Noah One suffered irreparable damage during warp, so the survivors built this town on the surface to survive. Then most humans moved in, this is evidenced by our scan result, and then they probably



chopped the Noah One apart to be salvaged as building materials for this base. The humans underground... Perhaps it has to do with the demonization on this planet. They were trapped underground due to some reasons. This is the only possibility I can think of."

Guang Zhen's eyebrows were locked in deep thought. Even though he was not a Thinker, he was still a veteran soldier. For some reason, his instinct told him that these humans underground were a trap and that the town on the surface was too suspicious. Why would the environment for these two groups of humans be so different? One of them was surrounded and the other was safely inside a town?

However, the situation demanded action. The several thousand people trapped underground, according to Yao Yuan's information, were important talents, and they were the main targets of this mission. They were heavily surrounded by unknown creatures and could be wiped out at any minute, so there was no time to waste.

"...Liu Bai, you and Ebon bring 30 troopers to head towards the town. Be careful and don't let your guard down just because it is a supposedly human town. The rest of you, follow me. We are going underground!"

# Chapter 338: Deep Infestation

---

"Any news from the landing unit?" Yao Yuan asked Barbie.

Barbie checked current information before answering, "No, Sir. The landing unit hasn't reported back yet."

"Is that so?" Yao Yuan nodded. Actually, he expected this result. The planet had some kind of unknown message disruptor that blocked the communication technology of level 2 space civilizations. Even the main spaceship's device could not override the disruption, much less the landing unit.

"Deploy the connecting satellites as soon as possible. We must gain contact with the landing unit as early as we can." Yao Yuan sighed. Then he snuck a look at Xi Kong, who was nearby. She still looked like a spooked rabbit. Upon witnessing that, Yao Yuan sighed once more.

For some reason, even the soul web, which could ignore the limitation of the creator's particle, was blocked by this planet. This was something that had happened for the first time. It made Yao Yuan more alarmed about this planet.

However, the mission had to be done. The only thing Yao Yuan could do was try his best to protect the landing unit and to provide them with the best benefits.

At the same time, the changes on the spaceships outside of the cursed planet intensified. The mutual consumption from earlier had decreased and now these unknown masses started gelling together to form something like a heart or an egg. They kept palpating like they were birthing some kind of creature within.

Under these circumstances, Yao Yuan did not dare to send more Black Star Troopers to land on the planet. He needed to keep them to pilot the Space Combat Jet 011s to help maintain the Hope's safety.

"In any case... let's have faith in Ol' Wong. He's a qualified commander and is a combat veteran. If the situation demands it, he will retreat. He is an expert and will not be affected by emotions. I believe in him."

At the same time, Guang Zhen was staring at the masses of human dolls before him with his mouth open.

Yes, the creatures that appeared looked exactly like humans, except for the tentacles protruding out of their brains. It gave the impression that their brains were taken over by something. These human-like creatures were attacking them using weapons from old Earth.

Of course, the strongest of such weapons, the rifle, could do no damage against the space armor. The purpose of the space armor was to prevent the penetration of strong Gaussian weapons, so when facing these almost prehistoric weapons, the troopers did not even spend the energy to move out of the way.

"...Are they humans? Or have they morphed due to some kind of infection? Or is this the effect of this planet's demonization?"

These questions were passed among the troopers. They hesitated and held off their attacks; they even wondered if they should identify themselves as humans or not.

Right then, Guang Zhen roared, "They are not humans! I have seen it, there are giant brains above their heads, and these brains are controlling the bodies. These are the demons! Evolved demons! Kill them! Destroy all the demons!"

It has to be said that Guang Zhen was a respectful individual within the Hope's military structure. As the leader of the ship, Yao Yuan might've been the leader of the Black Star Troopers, but he was often distracted by paperwork and meetings. The time he could spend with the military was short; therefore, for the Hope's military, be it the Defense Unit or the Black Star Troopers, their actual leader was Guang Zhen. He used his military standards to

cultivate the troops on the Hope. Since he was also the leader for the Defense Unit, his words were just as weighty as Yao Yuan's.

After his orders, even though some troopers still had their hesitation, the reflex that had been drilled into them through training made them lift their weapons and start firing. However, many started to frown not long after because they realized that the demons could only be cut down through close combat.

However, to everyone's surprise, the Gaussian weapons' penetration power and damage was effective this time. In just a few minutes, the several thousand "humans" were torn into pieces, and they did not show any signs of recovering or evolving. This situation made many widen their eyes in shock, and some even doubted Guang Zhen's orders... Could these people really be humans? And had they killed innocent people?

Just as the hesitation passed through the troopers, the Seekers among them yelled out in alarm because they had spotted many weird organisms floating out from the broken meat pieces. They were the size of footballs and had many tentacles. They floated in mid-air, just like octopuses. But upon closer inspection... they had the appearance of human brains and spines after separating from the skeletal frame!

After witnessing this, the doubt dissipated. Guang Zhen was right. These creatures were demons. Following the firing of many weapons, these creatures were equally fragile as the human dolls, and they were torn into pieces as well.

"We are indeed lucky..." Xiao Niao followed closely behind Guang Zhen. He sighed and said, "It is lucky that you are leading this mission. Even though Homo Evolutis are not afraid of demonization and are unable to see the illusions, at the same time, we are unable to detect that presence. But you can do that for us. If you weren't here, this mission would have failed grandly."

Guang Zhen ignored him and stared curiously at the empty space

that his troops were firing at. Then he whispered at Xiao Niao, "Be quiet, but tell me... What were they shooting at?"

Xiao Niao looked at him with a certain degree of shock. After all, he was a Thinker, so the shock quickly disappeared. He answered, "They were shooting at the brain creature that you described earlier, but they were small, only the size of footballs. They came out of these humanoid creatures' brains... You couldn't see them escaping the dead humanoids' skulls?"

Guang Zhen shook his head. "Indeed I saw nothing... Looks like this is a fight that needs both normal humans and Homo Evolutis. This demon race is indeed weird. Some parts of them normal humans could see, but others are only visible to Homo Evolutis..."

Comprehension seemed to dawn for Xiao Niao, but he did not elaborate. He followed Guang Zhen silently deeper into the darkness.

With Guang Zhen leading the way, the 120 Black Star Troopers continued marching into the underground. The underground space was huge. Even though the place was dark, the space armors came with their own electromagnetic scanners, so they could see clearly in the darkness. The "humans" and brain monsters were like little animals to them. No matter how many there were, they were easily squished. Their speed was not hindered by the monsters, and very soon they were going to reach the spot where the signals of humans were found. The "humans" they came into slowly increased. There were males and females, and they looked like teenagers. They flailed crazily at the troopers.

At the same time, echoing from a tunnel structure in front of them was the sound of gunfire. It was the sound of the guns humans used to carry.

"It's the sound of machine guns..." Guang Zhen concluded. He ordered, "The place in front is where we found the signal. However, these people are different from these dolls that we have

encountered along the way. Regardless, their situation is dire, and they could be wiped out any time soon..."

Guang Zhen paused before continuing, with determination, "Xiao Niao, I order you to take Zhang Heng and another 20 assault troopers to rush ahead to the signal point. The rest of us will act as your support. You must open a path for the rest of us to get through as soon as you can!"

Xiao Niao saluted after a shocked pause. He then waved for Zhang Heng and the troopers to gather around him. The 22 troopers rushed towards the signal point, brandishing their sawblades. The small group was like a tank ramming down the "humans" who stood in their path, leaving in their wake a pool of broken meat pieces...

Back in space, Yao Yuan, the surviving aliens, and the rest of humanity had their guts in a twisted knot because before them... one of the five planets revolving around the cursed planet, the one that had become flesh, suddenly grew a scary-looking cartilaginous claw. It was growing out of the planet's surface... The claw was unimaginably huge, the length was several tens of thousands of meters...

It was as if a planet-sized monster was trying to escape from inside the planet itself!

# Chapter 339: Genesis!

---

In chaos darkness, there was an egg. One day, the egg hatched, birthing a giant. He saw the chaos darkness and split it into two. The pure would rise and the corrupted would fall. The chaos that the giant stepped on became Earth and his arms that rose became the sky. The giant grew ten feet every day, the sky expanded by ten feet every day, and the ground grew thicker by ten feet every day. 18,000 years later, they became the sky and the ground. This was... the eastern myth, the Pangu creation myth.

In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth. Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters. And God said, "Let there be light," and there was light. God saw that the light was good, and he separated the light from the darkness. God called the light "day," and the darkness he called "night." And there was evening, and there was morning—the first day.... The bible, Genesis 1.

"Do you see the similarities?" ZERO asked Xiao Niao.

Xiao Niao studied it for a long time before answering, "They both talk about an omnipotent being creating the world... Wait, both of them seem to mention the same thing, the world or light was created out of chaos and darkness. Is that right?"

ZERO answered, "Indeed. This is the biggest secret within the cosmos. The birth of the cosmos, or rather the origin of material and soul, came from... the so-called emptiness, darkness, and chaos. In other words, the cosmos."

For some reasons, Xiao Niao who was rushing deep underground, suddenly remembered this conversation with ZERO. But it disappeared as suddenly as it appeared.

At the same time, in space, everyone looked at the giant planet in shock. Its surface had completely become flesh, becoming a giant,

flesh planet that looked like a heart or an egg. Even the naked eye could see it vibrating.

Initially, everyone thought this was the result of demonization, but when the indescribably large meat claw came out of this planet, everyone had another realization... this was true result of demonization, a giant, planet-like lifeform!

"Even so, this kind of lifeform can't be called the greediest race in space." Yao Yuan's face was drawn. However, he was, to a certain degree, collected. At that moment, anyone would lose their cool, but not him. If he did, then the rescue mission would truly be over. Speaking of which, Guang Zhen's troop was still suffering an unknown fate.

Ren Tao beside him commented as his face shifted as he observed the claw on the planet's surface, "Indeed. It is not like we have not heard of a planet-sized lifeform before. For example, a large zerg race colony, according to the information provided by the space merchants and Blue 6, can grow to the size of two normal planets, so size alone means nothing. Level 2 space civilizations already have weapons that can directly damage a planet, so big size is not that powerful... What I am worried about is the range of demonization."

"Range of demonization?" Yao Yuan turned to look at him.

Ren Tao nodded and said, "We have seen this earlier. The range started around this planet, going from near to far, increasing in effect. We have no way to gauge the area covered by this range... Actually, that is not true, we know we cannot use the creator's particle within this range, so this could be used as a detection method. Therefore, until now, we have no idea how big this demonization range is. What if... and I'm talking about if, this demonization range doesn't stop growing? Eventually, the whole solar system will be demonized. Is that not the work of the greediest race in the cosmos?"



Yao Yuan did not understand where Ren Tao was going with this initially, but he shivered uncontrollably when the latter came to his conclusion. He said, "That sounds impossible. The demonization was caused by a small planet influencing the whole solar system? That is just..."

"Impossible?" Ren Tao scoffed. "Speaking of impossible, what do you think about this situation that is unfolding before us? What kind of mechanism created this series of demonizations? What kind of virus, radiation, or super technology has created these monsters and this planet-like lifeform? All of these are impossibilities, so tell me, what kind of things are impossible?"

Yao Yuan was rendered speechless. He looked at the claw that was struggling on the planet's surface silently before laying his eyes on the life-preserving planet just beneath the Hope. He gritted his teeth and ordered, "Make sure the combat unit is ready. The Hope's third deck better be prepared. Rescind the artilleries on the side and activate the propulsion system... Start activating the Genesis!"

At the same time, underneath the life-preserving planet, the landing unit had gone through the blockage built by the layers of "humans". The sounds of bullets lodging into flesh sounded non-stop along the way. Before them was a manmade underground tunnel, and several heavy artillery were left by the tunnel's entrance. Deeper into the tunnel, one could see the chaotic shadows of human beings, and outside of the tunnel were bodies that littered the ground. They were body parts of the possessed human dolls.

The humans inside the tunnel were in despair. This was because other than the alien octopuses and controlled humans blocking the entrance of the tunnel, the end of the tunnel had collapsed. They were trapped with no chance to hide or escape.

Not only that, the normal humans inside the tunnel started to rampage. It seemed like several hundred people were turning into

monsters, and this chaos started to affect the soldiers who were defending them.

Under such dire circumstances, about 10 three-meter-tall, dark-colored robots appeared. Their appearance was even more shocking than the monsters. No one knew where these robots came from; were they more aliens? Even so, the damage they showcased was intense. They steamrolled over the controlled humans and alien octopuses. Their weapons were so advanced that they could not see their bullet trajectories. After a minute or two, the tunnel was covered with guts and blood. The swords that looked like saws were insane as well. No matter what stood before them, it would be cut in two with a single slash, be it stone or metal.

And now the robots were storming into the tunnel. The hearts of the soldiers inside the tunnel were chilled. At the same time, the rifles started firing, all of them aimed at the robots, but the results only made things worse. This was because no matter how many of them fired, the bullets made not even a dent. The bullets were bounced back with a cling whenever they got closer. The robots ignored the hail of bullets and crushed the alien octopuses and controlled humans as they moved closer to the trapped humans.

Just as the soldiers were ready to kill themselves out of despair, suddenly, a human voice came out of the robot.

"Members from the Noah One, we are the rescue unit from the Noah Two. Please remain calm. I repeat, we are the rescue unit from the Noah Two. Everyone, please remain calm, we are here to rescue you!"

Everyone was stunned by this announcement. Those who had grenades ready in their hands stopped moving. However, most still did not believe this. This pause was out of common instinct. Every lifeform had the instinct for survival, even though they knew that the people on Noah Two would not have survived, much less come to save them.

Right then, a male voice started shouting, "You said you are the rescue unit from the Noah Two?! Since when did our human technology become so advanced? Stop kidding with us. Also, according to the plan, the Noah Two will arrive only after several decades. Who are you people? Do not come any closer, or we will blow up this place with all of us in it!"

The trooper who spoke earlier was Xiao Niao. He yelled back and said, "Hold your arms. I will have one of us open the armor to let you see clearly... Zhang Heng, sense the danger around you. When you sense that it is safe enough to open your helmet, do it to let them see whether we are really humans or not!"

Zhang Heng responded and started to feel his surroundings. The gunfire stopped, and several seconds later, Zhang Heng issued to his space armor the order to open his helmet. His helmet was pulled back to reveal his face. The soldiers in the tunnel immediately used their night vision goggles to look their way, to study Zhang Heng's face closely.

The few mysterious virus survivors among the military observed. "There is no sign of octopus infection. Yes, indeed, he is a human... But we can only see so much, we cannot see the body inside the spacesuit."

The person with the highest military ranking there was an African American major. He looked forward with some hesitation and heard the cries and roars coming from the down the tunnel. Several minutes earlier, Yun Si took a bunch of people deeper into the tunnel. God knows what had happened in there. They really... did not have time to waste.

"Let them come in... If they are hostile, they would have crushed us directly, just like those alien octopuses. Even though I still cannot believe they are people from the Noah Two... this is our only hope."

The African American yelled loudly to his men before turning to

Xiao Niao and the rest, "I am Jacko, the major for the Noah One's second military unit! I wish to converse with the commander of your military!"

"As you wish!"

A voice came from the human dolls. Soon, a large group of Black Star Troopers stormed into the space. The one leading them removed his space helmet. That person was Guang Zhen. He looked at the African American major and ordered, "The Hope's Defense Unit commander and Black Star Trooper's vice-captain, Wong Guang Zhen... I ask that your military listen to my orders. Now we will escort the civilians out into safety!"

# Chapter 340: Rescue Begin

---

With the help of the Black Star Troopers, even though there were only one hundred plus of them, their power was immeasurable. The thousands of controlled humans and alien octopuses were cleared before the group of surviving soldiers' shocked gazes. Then they broke off into teams of ten to form a defensive perimeter outside of the tunnel. The ease with which they carried out their mission shocked the survivors in the tunnel.

Following the guidance of the major by the name of Jacko, Guang Zhen led twenty troopers deeper into the tunnel. Along the way, they saw the rows of civilians standing or lying by the tunnel walls, looking at the encroaching Black Star Troopers in fear. Major Jacko immediately had his men go comfort and console the civilians.

On the way, Jacko asked Guang Zhen, "Commander Wong... if you don't mind me asking, I have not heard of any country's highest commander by the name of Wong Guang Zhen. Were you elected after we left Earth?"

Even though each country had their own differing military system, there was one common thing: it was hard to reach the position of commander unless one was born within a military family, or else a normal soldier would spend his or her lifetime without even getting close to being given that honor. Of course, during a time of war, this tradition had to be relaxed considerably.

Regardless, the fact that he was given the task of leading such a rescue mission meant that it was likely that Guang Zhen came from military family who relied on connections. Furthermore, from the little contact that they had had, Jacko was all the more certain Guang Zhen came to his position through actual warzone and combat. Therefore, he was even more curious.

Guang Zhen answered after a short pause, "No, I am not from

Earth's military or rather, not anymore..."

"Not anymore?" Jacko was befuddled, and he thought back to what Guang Zhen had said earlier. "Then what is the Hope? Aren't you from the Noah Two?"

"The Noah Two is the Hope." Guang Zhen shook his head and said, "It is complicated. Many things happened after the Noah One left Earth... It's unbelievable, but I can tell you for certain that we are indeed humans and we came from the same place as you all. We were tasked with the mission to rescue you and lead you all out of this cursed planet. We will answer your questions when we reach the Noah Two."

Jacko wanted to ask some more questions, but at that time, several hundred civilians rushed towards them, their faces painted with fear and terror. Chasing after them was a "monster" whose brain and neck were horribly twisted and elongated. It grabbed an unfortunate soul and with a crack and pop of bones... it shoved the human into his stomach. Some screams and howls later, the human completely disappeared and the monster grew more twisted and bigger.

Jacko's face fell when he saw this, because they were close to the tunnel's caved-in entrance. If a monster appeared at this place, one could only imagine how bad it would be inside the tunnel. There were several thousand civilians in there, and if anything happened to them... then the rescue mission would have failed grandly.

Guang Zhen reacted quickly. He ordered immediately, "This is a demonized human being, it is no longer one of us. I saw the human's soul being pulled out of his body when he was still dreaming. It is a demon now. Kill it, Black Star Troopers, then push forward! Destroy any humans that have been demonized!"

Under Guang Zhen's order, the troopers pressed on. They did not show any fear towards these monsters. After all... when they were on the surface, they had killed many such monsters. Just like that,

a trooper rushed towards the monster and allowed the monster to twist him using its strengthened limbs. The space armor was tough enough to withstand assault from tanks, much less this monster of the flesh. The trooper shook the monster off, tearing its limbs along the way. The trooper waved his sawblade and the monster was cut into two instantly. In just seconds, this scary-looking monster was cut into meat pieces like tofu.

Jacko witnessed this and sighed internally. If they had this armor when they were facing the alien octopuses, then they would have been able to overcome the crisis easily and would not have ended up in such a desperate situation.

However, he did not have time to dwell on this. He followed the troopers, rushed into the tunnel, and found many safe civilians along the way. However, there were also many monsters, as well as... humans who were in the middle of demonization, creatures that were half demon, half humans...

The tunnel was like a unique type of hell. Due to the earlier lack of Homo Evolutis, normal people were unable to notice the demonization of the people beside them. As the Black Star Troopers passed through the tunnel, the originally quietly sitting civilians suddenly realized that there was a scary monster sitting or lying beside them. It created a massive chaos, and the scariest thing was that some civilians did not even realize that they were slowly being eaten by the monsters. When the troopers passed, they finally saw that their bodies had been half-chewed off. This kind of terror... would only appear in hell!

When Guang Zhen's group saw this, the Black Star Troopers and surviving soldiers from the Noah One felt suppressed by their heavy hearts. If one was to calculate carefully, the surviving number of civilians would be less than 3,000. About half of the citizens had been demonized or were demonizing, and these people... were treasures for humanity! Any dead person could have the ability to become humanity's greatest scientist...

After a short journey and after Guang Zhen realized that there were about only 3,000 human survivors, a series of gunshots suddenly came from somewhere ahead. It startled everyone, and they picked up their pace. They turned a small corner and saw that several hundred soldiers were retreating and protecting the hundreds of civilians behind them. In front of them was a large, cylindrical worm chewing down on the bodies that littered the floor. The worm was as large as the tunnel itself and was moving towards them with some strange motion, forcing them back. However, the scariest thing was that the worm... had a human face!

Among the soldiers, a young man by the age of twenty seemed to have realized something. When he turned back and noticed Jacko, he immediately yelled, "Major Jacko, please lead the civilians out of the tunnels. There are no longer any surviving humans ahead. The more this thing consumes, the bigger it becomes. We cannot hold it off any longer, and our bullets do no damage to it because it can consume even bullets!"

Then the young man seemed to have noticed Guang Zhen and the troopers. Shock registered on his face before he and the soldiers behind him lifted their weapons to aim at Guang Zhen.

Jacko roared, "Yang Yun Si, they are humans! They are members from the Noah Two tasked to come save us. Hold your fire, they are here to help us..." Then, he turned to face Guang Zhen.

"Commander Wong, I will leave this to you and your soldiers. I will lead the civilians out. There are many seniors, ladies, and children, so they might not move fast. Therefore, please hold up our rear and prevent all the monsters from getting to us."

Guang Zhen nodded. "Of course. My orders were to save everyone that still has a breath in them. But please remember, there must be a Homo Evolutis among the crowd, or there might be demonization... Homo Evolutis are people like my soldiers. Therefore, I will give you five troopers to protect the civilians, I



will hold up the rear."

Jacko beamed happily and saluted Guang Zhen. He then ran towards the civilians. After Guang Zhen assigned him five troopers, he addressed the rest. "Attention. These people are humanity's greatest treasures. They are either great scientists or the best technical workers. They are instrumental to the Hope's future development, so this is a fight for our children and grandchildren, for the continuation of humanity's future! Follow me!"

Guang Zhen then rushed towards the human-faced worm. Several seconds later, one trooper, two troopers, three troopers... they ran past Guang Zhen and charged at the worm with an indomitable will...

At the same time, Yao Yuan had received the latest update from the planet. The satellites had been dispersed throughout the planet. According to the disturbance around the planet, he would receive updates from the landing unit after about one minute.

However, after this message came in, the Hope's surveillance unit also sent in a bad update...

The surface of this planet showed signs of morphing into flesh, metal, and energy layers...

Yes, the cursed planet itself was demonizing!

## Chapter 341: Exit...

---

"There are in total 3,441 people, including 426 military. The rest are the survivors from the Noah One... However, 100 plus of them have shown signs of demonization of varying degrees."

When Guang Zhen led the 50 Black Star Troopers out of the tunnel and ordered them to collapse the tunnel's entrance, Xiao Niao came to report to Guang Zhen.

Guang Zhen nodded suddenly. There was a melancholy in his heart not only because the 'reward' for this mission was so lacking, but also because he lamented the fragility of human lives. The Noah One started with 30,000 plus people, but now there was only one-tenth of them left, and around 100 of them had half-demonized. This was too cruel... Could cruelty be the only thing that the vast cosmos could present?

However, Guang Zhen was still Guang Zhen, so this melancholy lasted only for a minute. Soon, he turned to tell Xiao Niao, "Abandon all the demonized civilians and lead the rest to the surface. By the way, has contact been made with the Hope?"

Xiao Niao nodded immediately. "That was what I was going to report. Commander Wong, communication has been made with the Hope, but the connection is not steady. It keeps breaking and disruption is strong. According to what we can see, the disruption is only getting stronger."

Guang Zhen was startled before continuing, "Then what are we waiting for? I will contact Yao Yuan immediately. The situation here is worse than we previously imagined..."

Just like that, Yao Yuan managed to contact Guang Zhen after several seconds. They managed to have a conversation of sorts despite the static.

When only static could be heard from the communicator, Guang

Zhen turned to address the rest. "The situation in space is not looking so good either. We have to increase our pace. Xiao Niao will still lead the Black Star Troopers to open up a path and I will lead part of the troopers to bring up the rear. That is the plan, so start moving. Our aim is the surface. The Hope will enter the planet's atmosphere and use a large amount of transportation vessels to come fetch us. We will definitely be able to evacuate in the shortest amount of time."

After Guang Zhen gave his order, Yun Si, Jacko, and a few military officers accosted him. The leading Yun Si said directly, "Commander Wong, I heard your army plans to abandon those civilians who are demonizing, but there are at least 100 of them..."

Guang Zhen nodded. "Indeed, those were my orders. We have to hurry and evacuate, there is no time to waste. You all are military soldiers from the Noah One, and I order you now to go comfort the remaining civilians and lead them to follow us to the surface."

Yun Si frowned and said coldly, "Commander Wong, I respectfully decline your orders. These 100 plus people still have the consciousness of humans, and there is only minor demonization on their bodies. If anything, they might be caused by virus infection or radiation and not demonization. We cannot abandon them like this!"

Guang Zhen looked at Yun Si coldly and he continued in his emotionless tone, "The situation is worse than you can possibly imagine, and I can guarantee you this is not caused by infection or radiation, this is something worse... Follow my orders, understand that I am the commander here!"

Yun Si's eyes reddened, not from tears but from sheer anger. He responded by glaring at Guang Zhen in return. "You want us to abandon these innocent citizens? Do you understand the kind of existence they have led? If we were on Earth, each and every one of them would have more power than you and me! They are humanity's most valuable treasures! Their scientific knowledge is

enough to change humanity for the better, and you wish to abandon them? Plus, some of them came with their families. You want us to abandon them together with their families?"

"I understand," Guang Zhen said as gentleness entered his eyes, but his expression was cold as before as he continued, "Frankly, this is a disease worse than any normal infection. Even full quarantine would not be of use, unless the person is a Homo Evolutis. He or she will only become another source of infection. You have to understand.... The spaceship that we are heading towards have 200,000 plus people, and many are children. If we carry along these 100 people, we are putting 10,000 people's lives at risk. Yang Yun Si, you are also a soldier, right? Under this situation, please follow my orders. I don't have the luxury to explain the situation for the third time."

"Never!" Yun Si's eyes were blazing with passion. He yelled, "Abandoning them once was enough! Do you want me to abandon them for a second time? If you can, execute me on the spot, or else I will resist this order as long as I have a breath in me!"

As he said so, Guang Zhen had already pulled out his gun to aim at Yun Si. As he prepared to fire, Jacko behind Yun Si knocked him out with a smack to the back of his head. At the same time, Jacko said, "He is one of the Homo Evolutis you have mentioned earlier. He is an asset to help us in our retreat. Please forgive him for now. If there is really a need for punishment, we will bring him to military court when we are safe on the ship!"

Xiao Niao moved to Guang Zhen's side and pulled down his arm that held the gun, adding, "There are some things that happened earlier... When you were inside, I heard about the general situation from them. In any case... just let him go for now. After all, he has fainted, so he cannot stop our retreat mission anymore."

Guang Zhen retracted his gun silently and roared at the people around him, "Start moving. Everyone follow your orders and your immediate superior. Do not leave your unit! Move out! Qi Xiao

Niao, stay by my side, summarize for me what has happened. Why did this group of people leave the city? Where is the Noah One? Why is the number of fatalities so high?"

Xiao Niao laughed bitterly and relayed to Guang Zhen what he had heard. Instantly, Guang Zhen frowned.

The rescue mission's purpose was naturally to save all the survivors from the Noah One. After all, even though the Hope had a great population, the number of scientists, researchers, and technical workers was comparatively low. Especially with the arrival of 4th revolution and the start of technological specialization, the required number of scientists had starkly increased. With assistance of the talents from the Noah One, the Hope would save at least ten years in research!

Other than this main mission, Guang Zhen still had a side mission, it was to locate the Noah One and retrieve all the information available within it. It would help complement the information in the Noah Two and there would be detailed explanations from the various countries when they first built these two spaceships.

And now the Noah One had disappeared into thin air, so this side mission was a complete failure.

"Is that so... This Austin is indeed an impressive character. The clarity of his mind is startling. Under those circumstances, saving everyone was indeed impossible, so he just took a few people with him and initiated space warp... I wonder where the Noah One is now, and also whether they can last for several decades while waiting for a new batch of humans to arrive." Guang Zhen sighed, but suddenly his face changed as if he had just remembered a tragedy.

"F\*ck, Liu Bai and the rest are in danger."

Xiao Niao shrugged. "That was what I intended to say... If the city was taken over by the demons, this means danger for Liu Bai's

group, but I wouldn't worry too much. Since Liu Bai's group are mostly Black Star Unit members, they are better than the Black Star Troopers. I suspect they noticed the incongruity the moment they got near and have already retreated. After all, with the power of the space armor, as long as they were not heavily surrounded, escape should not be an issue."

Guang Zhen hesitated before nodding and saying, "Hopefully you are right... Wait, what is happening? Why did we stop moving? We have to get to the surface as soon as possible!"

Not long after that, Zhang Heng led two people and rushed from the front in a hurry. Zhang Heng told them directly, "The road ahead is blocked. The opening we used to come down has disappeared, but that is not the worst... the stone there has become metals, and the metallization is slowly spreading across the surface!"

Guang Zhen's face was ashen, but thankfully, he was wearing his space helmet, or the morale of the team would've drastically decreased. Several seconds later, he yelled, "Use all the heavy artillery and cannons to blow us an exit! Even if there is a diamond wall, cut a hole in it!"

Zhang Heng laughed bitterly. "We have tried that. Even with the Gaussian cannons we brought along, the metallic wall... is like a living thing. No matter how many holes we punched in it, it recovered in the shortest amount of time. We are unable to blow through this metallic layer with the amount of firepower we have!"

When he said that, not only was Guang Zhen baffled, the people around him were of the same expression. It was over... really over!

At the same time, outside of the human city, Liu Bai and his group had cut down a group of demon monsters. Right then, they were studying the city using their telescope. They had confirmed that the creatures in the city were not normal human beings. They were demon monsters, so they did not enter the city but chose to

retreat to meet up with Guang Zhen's unit.

"Hey, do you feel that?"

Suddenly, Ebon said curiously, "Why do I feel the earth moving? Earthquake?"

Before the rest of them could answer, suddenly, they were all stunned because their reflections were staring at them from the floor. They were suddenly standing on top of a metallic surface!

The piece of land had completely metallized!

# Chapter 342: Aerial Combat

---

"This is bad!"

In the Hope's control room, Yao Yuan and the rest saw for themselves the changes happening to the planet's surface. Their faces were ashen and withdrawn, especially when the changes reached the entrance Guang Zhen's unit took to enter the underground. The despair stifled everyone's words.

"No, we have to save them!" Yao Yuan roared immediately, and it helped to calm his mind. "We cannot use any large scale weapons, because they are trapped underground. We cannot control the penetrating power of Gaussian weapons, so they will be harmed even if they are in space armours."

Yao Yuan's brain started moving. He had entered the Thinker's state, similar to Ren Tao beside him. Both understood that, emotional factors aside, losing Guang Zhen and the Black Star Troopers would be a loss the Hope was unable to handle.

The death of 150 Homo Evolutis would deal a heavy blow to the Hope's strongest military regiment, and this was a loss that most likely would not be recoverable.

Other than that, Guang Zhen himself was invaluable... Yes, he was a normal human being, and yes, his position as the successor to the Hope still received many protest, yes, he might have a conservative thinking, yes, he had many weaknesses...

But it was undeniable that Guang Zhen was the person who had the most right to rule the Hope other than Yao Yuan. This was because from the perspective of law and logic, Guang Zhen was the most suitable candidate to inherit the Hope's government. If anything bad did happen to Yao Yuan, then his presence would be able to unite the people on the Hope. This was Guang Zhen's instrumental use, or else... the Hope would be dominated by Yao Yuan alone. If he decided to become a dictator, then there would



be no one available to stop him or balance out his power... this was why many learned politicians did not resist Guang Zhen but chose to side with him.

Therefore, Guang Zhen could not die!

Time trickled by, but Yao Yuan and Ren Tao were silent. They could not come up with a solution to solve this conundrum. Sweat was pouring down their faces, and their heads seemed ready to explode. However, something happened that pulled them out of their contemplation.

Suddenly, the screens in the control center blinked into darkness and all the information disappeared. This had happened once before, it was when the space merchants had taken over the Hope's central mainframe. So why had this happened again? Could it be that... those aliens who swore loyalty to humanity were up to something?!

Yao Yuan was assaulted by surprise and anger. He was going to call Xi Kong to enter the soul web to have the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s attack the vassal races when a series of words appeared on the screen.

"Nice to meet you, humanity's leader, the captain of the Hope, and the natural leader of all Homo Evolutis, I am ZERO."

Yao Yuan was first shocked before he calmed down. He looked at the screen and said, "You can hear me, right? Or is communication only possible through typing? I am running out of time. I think you also understand this. Qi Xiao Niao is also on this planet. If you wish to save him, then stop adding distractions at a critical moment like this!"

"I can hear you, translating speech to words is not that difficult... I know you also want to save them, but your method is wrong. When facing a demonized planet, other than using the planet-annihilating cannon, normal weapons are useless against it. They would heal automatically and will demonize all sorts of materials.

There is only one unique exception..."

Yao Yuan asked impatiently, "What unique exception? You have a way to save them?"

"I cannot do anything. Overseeing the numerous controlled warps has exhausted my store of energy, so I cannot help... But you can. You are the Immortal, or what you call the All-rounder. You are the demon race's achilles' heel. If you take your Space Combat Jet Prototype 011 and fire at the demonized area from within the atmosphere of the planet, then the area will return to its original form and will not be demonized, at least for a short period of time. Only you... can save them!"

At the same time, Liu Bai's group on the surface was in the midst of despair. They had returned to the underground entrance where Guang Zhen's unit was earlier. They realized that the entrance had been completely sealed off because it had metallized. God knows how thick this metal layer was. No matter how hard they tried to attack the ground, the metal layer would recover on its own.

"What do we do? Captain Wong and his team are still down there! I am certain that the underground tunnels haven't caved in and that they are still alive. We have to save them!" Ebon howled loudly. He used his sawblade to swipe at the metal surface, but no matter how many lesions he left on it, it would heal after a moment or two. This metallic layer was indestructible.

Liu Bai grabbed hold of Ebon and said, "Stop! Preserve your energy. There are demon creatures all around us. Te must secure this location until Captain Wong leads his team out of there or until we receive a new order. Remember your identity! You are a member of the Black Star Unit! Not ruffians on the streets! I believe... the old captain is trying his best to save us, I am sure of it!"

Ebon quieted down before he continued in his signature loud voice, "That is for sure! When has old captain ever abandoned us

before? He is not Ying... In any case, I will stand my ground here. No one is going to pull me away!"

Liu Bai shrugged. He stopped paying Ebon attention and turned to address the rest. "We will rest. Black Star Unit members, please be on alert. Wa Luo, continue checking the communication device. Are we still unable to communicate with the Hope?"

Wa Luo was the team's communications member. He laughed bitterly. "Nope, still nothing. This planet's disturbance is too strong, so our communication devices cannot even function properly. Unless we're talking face-to-face, or else..."

"Is that so... Continue trying, don't give up." Liu Bai patted Wa Luo on his shoulder, the collision of their space armors creating a metallic clink. Both stopped talking and maintained their silence.

However, right then, the static from the communication device cleared slightly. Both of them tensed when they noticed this. Wa Luo grabbed the microphone and yelled, "This is the landing unit. Black Star Troopers fourth unit's unit leader, Yang Wa Luo, requesting to communicate with the Hope's central command. I repeat, this is the landing unit, Black Star Troopers fourth unit's unit leader, Yang Wa Luo, request to communicate with the Hope's central command."

Just like that, both men had their hearts hanging on a thread. They waited patiently as the signal got clearer and clearer. Finally, the static cleared and they could hear the voice of a man.

"This is Yao Yuan! Wa Luo, report on your situation now!"

Wa Luo immediately responded, "We were separated from Captain Wong's team when we reached the surface. We have 30 Black Star Troopers and all the Black Star Unit members with us, while Captain Wong went down the underground with the rest. From our earlier communication, they have saved part of the Noah One's passengers, but about 3 minutes ago, the surface here metalized and our weapons can do no damage to it. The entrance

used by Captain Wong has been sealed off. Awaiting the Hope's orders."

Yao Yuan paused before continuing, "Understood... Now, your team will be responsible to clear all the demon monsters around the entrance. At the same time, move a bit further away from the entrance and be on the ready to cover for the civilians who come from the underground. Those are your orders, keep operating it until new orders are given."

"Yes, Sir!"

They congregated a distance away from the entrance when the unit saw several Space Combat Jets fly from the sky. The jets still maintained their three jets per unit formation, and the leading jet was bright red in color. In the entire Black Star Troop, the only red-colored space armor and combat jet belonged to Yao Yuan!

In other words, Yao Yuan had personally led the troop to enter this cursed planet!

"Didn't I say that old captain would not abandon us!"

Ebon started running, following the combat jets in the sky. He also started laughing, and one could hear the joy in it. Behind him, the rest of the Black Star Troopers also got inspired. Only Liu Bai said calmly, "Be careful! Pay attention to your surroundings. We mustn't fail this mission... Also, Ebon, stop your cackling! You're attracting the enemies!"

Ebon, though, appeared to not have heard Liu Bai. He continued laughing, and his laugh permeated far and wide into everyone's hearts...

Telling them that they... had not been abandoned!

# Chapter 343: Deeper Underground Kingdom

---

Deep underground, in just a matter of minutes, several people already had white hairs growing out of their skulls.

Waiting for death at a dead end, this was the real despair. This kind of waiting was the worse, it was worse than death itself. Every second was like spending it in hell.

Thankfully, Guang Zhen still managed to maintain his cool. He ordered the Black Star Troopers to set up a perimeter and ordered the Noah One's soldiers to comfort the public. However, there appeared to be a parting layer within Guang Zhen and his army. Even though they still followed his orders, their actions and expressions showed their reluctance.

"You abandoned those demonizing civilians, pooling these forces together in resentment against you," Xiao Niao whispered to Guang Zhen.

Guang Zhen nodded and shrugged it off because he was only doing the right thing. Whether it was beneficial or not, he would allow time to prove himself. No matter what, there was nothing bothering him on his conscience, or else he would not have made that decision.

"Stop chitchatting. You are a Thinker, solve this problem facing us," Guang Zhen told Xiao Niao directly.

Xiao Niao shrugged helplessly. "It's not that I don't want to, but there is no solution. You think I don't want to live? But the fact is, there is no solution. Unless we receive external aid, we are definitely trapped in here."

"That is what I'm afraid of," Guang Zhen said openly when Xiao Niao finished. "If even you come to that conclusion, then Ren Tao and Yao Yuan will do the same. I don't want to comment too much

on Ren Tao, but you also know how he is. During critical times, other than his sister, everyone else is disposable... I am worried about Yao Yuan. He will definitely come save us, and he will do that personally. In that case, if anything were to happen to him... The Hope and humanity would be done for!"

Xiao Niao was silent, but he was thinking about something else. In his memories, there appeared to be no situation where both Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen were absent from the Hope. The only time that happened was when they were on that life-preserving planet when the zerg attacked. However, that was, in a way, humanity's last stand. After all, the prize was humanity's final dream, to have a planet where they could live in peace and breathe its open air. Under those circumstances, it was the first and only time that both Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen were out of the Hope at the same time. Now that he thought about it... Yao Yuan was indeed extremely careful.

"No matter what, the only thing we can do now is wait," Xiao Niao commented with another shrug.

Guang Zhen then stood there quietly...

This silent torment lasted for several minutes until a static cleared from the communicator. Everyone was first stunned before they broke out in celebration. They all pooled around the communicator, waiting for the message.

"Hello, can the people down there hear me? This is Yao Yuan. I order the unit underground to continue moving deeper underground. Stay far away from the metal layer. We will use heavy artillery to blow open this metal layer. I repeat, this is Yao Yuan..."

The message was still breaking in places and was interspersed with static, but at least they had heard hope coming from the outside, and the most exciting part was that it came directly from Yao Yuan!

As aforementioned, Yao Yuan's influence in the Hope was immeasurably huge because he had saved the Hope from the brink of extinction multiple times. He had also led the Black Star Troopers to complete many unimaginably hard missions. In other words, if it were not banned by Yao Yuan himself, there might've been a religion on the Hope which prayed to him. He was called "savior" by many on the Hope, "the man of miracles" and the like. In the Black Star Troopers, many had these beliefs, especially those who were "summoned" by Yao Yuan.

Therefore, when Yao Yuan's voice appeared through the mist of static, almost everyone's spirits were soaring. There was no longer any hesitation as they waited for Guang Zhen to order them to go deeper underground.

Guang Zhen kept yelling at the communicator, but no matter how hard he did so, the message coming through it was the same and the message was disappearing before it became all static.

Then everyone turned to focus on Guang Zhen, waiting for him to arrange the next step. After a short contemplation, Guang Zhen ordered, "Zhang Heng will still lead the way and my unit will close up the rear. Xiao Niao will be in the middle, and that is how the formation will be. Let's move out! We need to get deeper underground with the highest speed!"

The unit started to move with chaos, but it was quickly suppressed. The remaining 3,000 plus people had already gotten their senses dulled. They were now following the Black Star Troopers like sheep. Nobody cared what lied ahead, because there was only despair in their hearts...

Time passed as they trudged deeper underground. However, the deeper they got, the more anxious they became. From Zhang Heng's danger sense, they could tell that even though the danger from aboveground had diminished, it was not enough to a level where it was no longer life-threatening. At the same time, the deeper they trekked, the stronger the sense of danger that came

from deep underground. Zhang Heng could not pinpoint the origin of the danger, but it was as large as the danger aboveground.

The conundrum once again fell on Guang Zhen's shoulders. Should they push forward or stop there and wait for the layer above them to open?

"We... will continue going down!" Guang Zhen lifted his head to observe the rock layer above him. The metal layer could no longer be seen, but according to the penetration of Gaussian weapons, where they were standing was still fatal. Therefore, between the choice of combat with the demons or death through friendly fire, Guang Zhen chose the former. He assumed that the danger from underground came from the demon monsters...

"We will follow Zhang Heng's instincts. He is the Hope's, no, humanity's, strongest Diviner. We will follow his instincts and choose the option that is the safest!"

At the same time, the few Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s were combining. Yes, all three jets had opened their electromagnetic fusion parts to fuse together. The three jets formed a large Gaussian weapon. This was the true face of Space Combat Jet Prototype 011, this was the strongest weapon the jets could carry!

"Ol' Wong... Everyone, you have to survive!"

Yao Yuan looked at the silvery-white metal surface and prayed internally. Then he yelled, "Using the coordinates as target, fire at will! We have to create an opening that is at least one kilometer wide!"

"Fire!"

Following Yao Yuan's command, the fused 20 plus jets had their weapons roaring at the same time. The moment the Gaussian weapons started firing, the surface started flaking with large metallic pieces. The power of the Gaussian weapons was on full display, but to everyone's consternation, even though the metal



layer was riddled with weapon damages, it was recovering with a speed that was observable to the naked eye. When the layer was about to fully recover, Yao Yuan's red color combat jet flew down to the surface. Its body was almost touching the ground. For some unknown reason, the seemingly living metallic surface stopped moving, the opening remained open, the ground became ground again, and even the metal pieces that were blown back reverted to rocks.

"Continue attacking! Do not stop! Let us blow a big hole in the ground to give our heroes a grand return!" Yao Yuan howled as he controlled his combat jet to continue attacking the surface...

At the same time, in space, Bo Li sat in the captain's chair. Before her and the rest of the workers, a large screen was displaying everything that was happening on the cursed planet. With Yao Yuan as the center, more than a thousand kilometers from Yao Yuan, all the signs of demonization were receding. This was a welcoming observation.

However, ten seconds later, everyone's faces changed again because another giant claw came out of the planet that had become flesh. The two claws scratched at the planet's surface like it was trying to pull itself out. The fleshy planet surface was hard as rubber, so no matter how ferocious these two claws were, they kept them attached to the planet, but it was public knowledge that it was only a matter of time before the owner of the two claws would escape the shackles of the planet...

Back underground, the unit stopped moving directly forward but turned corners following Zhang Heng's instinct. During the moving process, the earth started vibrating and there were cracks on the rock layers above them. Thankfully, the cracks were not serious enough to cause cave ins. Even though there were already recorded injuries, if the metal layer was completely punctured, it would be more than injuries, they would be buried alive...

Just as everyone was in the throes of panic and Guang Zhen

wanted to increase the pace of the group to avoid the possible cave in, they turned a large corner. What unveiled before their eyes...

Was a large, metallic underground city. The buildings had crumbled in places, but one could still see the general shape and size of a large underground metropolis...

An alien underground metropolis!

# Chapter 344: Discovery!

---

An alien underground city?!

This was something beyond imagination!

Guang Zhen was first shocked when he saw this, and the thought of what Blue 6 said cropped up in his mind. The legend about cursed planets and how they were life-preserving planets who avoided the attack from a neutron star fragment.

When sentient lifeforms appear on a life-preserving planet, with the natural advancement of technology, they eventually venture into space as long as the race does not face extinction through lack of materials or infighting.

When this race manages to colonize every corner of its solar system, they will naturally wish to venture out of the confines of its own solar system. When that happens, the race becomes a level 2 space civilization.

When a spaceship leaves its home solar system and returns to its solar system, within three years, a neutron star fragment that warped to a place outside this solar system will start flying towards the sun. This will obviously cause the sun to explode and thus destroy all life in the solar system. Of course, before that catastrophe, there will be enough time for this level 2 space civilization to leave and become an actual space-faring civilization.

However, the vast cosmos was home to many miracles. Of the millions upon millions of life-preserving planets, there had to be exceptions, no matter how small that probability was. When a level 2 space civilization returned to its home solar system and there was no neutron star fragment that appeared to threaten its existence, then the life-preserving planet of this solar system would be called a cursed planet, the place where demons were born!

If one followed this train of thought, then this city...

Was the ruins of the level 2 space civilization who returned to this planet?

While this thought was percolating through Guang Zhen's mind, the rock layer above his head suddenly started to shake and a large amount of rocks fell on them. They did not have the time to waste on speculation. Guang Zhen immediately yelled, "Black Star Troopers, hack out a way forward, remove all demon monsters. The rest of soldiers, follow closely behind. We will enter the metallic buildings of this city to temporarily hide from the collapse!"

Very soon, the Black Star Troopers disperse to clean out the alien octopuses. They also discovered many small alien octopuses, but it was not the time to dwell on that. After a short commotion, they managed to locate several relatively sturdy metallic buildings. With the Black Star Troopers as the guards, the civilians were moved into such buildings.

These metallic structures were incredibly stable. No matter how many piles of rocks fell on them, creating massive crashes, these buildings did not even vibrate. They were very sturdy.

Right then, Guang Zhen saw Jacko lead an old man whose ankle was sprained towards him. Before the old gentleman could say anything, Jacko introduced, "Commander One, this is Professor Fernando from the Noah One. He is the leading expert in the field of metallurgy, and he seems to have something on his mind and wishes to discuss with the Commander."

Jacko still had his hesitation. He was worried that Guang Zhen would mistreat this senior professor like how he treated his soldiers.

However, Guang Zhen was most impressed by these senior professors, especially after they had saved the Hope many times with their experience. There were even some who sacrificed their

lives for research, so the respect was deep in Guang Zhen's bones. He immediately went to aid the senior and said, "Professor, is there anything I can help you with?"

Fernando might have sprained his ankle, but he was still fine. He replied in a firm voice, "Commander, if possible, I wish your soldiers will be able to help me cut down a square of this building's metallic wall. I just took a look at it and this metal does not seem like something we humans have already discovered... if we manage to get out of here alive, with a sample, our metallurgy technology will have a great increase."

Guang Zhen's first response was to deny his request. After all, the scientists from the Noah One were still stuck in the 3rd revolution era and had the thinking of a level 1 space civilization, while the Hope's science was already in 4th revolution and was a mid-tier of level 2 space civilization. With enough time, becoming a level 3 space civilization was guaranteed. Did they still need metal samples? The Hope still had the alloys from the alien plant that still needed research.

However, he thought about it, and no matter what, this must be at least the metal product of a level 2 space civilization, so procuring it would be no harm to the Hope's scientific community. After all, the Black Star Troopers would not spend too much energy cutting down a tank, so a few metal plates wouldn't trouble them too much.

Guang Zhen's imagination continued to fester. Since they were only waiting in this city, why not explore it further? Perhaps the city might have some unique records of its history, like how to avoid the attack of neutron star fragment.

Since the Noah One had warped away and gaining the information inside it was impossible, then returning with the information from a level 2 space civilization was not so bad either...

With this in mind, Guang Zhen brought Xiao Niao, Zhang Heng, and about 15 Black Star Troopers out of the buildings and deeper into the city. They saw plenty of alien octopuses along the way, and they even discovered their nest. For some reason, the nests of these alien octopuses were constructed using blood and flesh. It was unknown what kind of flesh it was, but they were moulded into a globular form and the alien octopuses formed their nests in the middle of it.

The unit's speed was not fast. Thankfully, other than Guang Zhen, the rest of them were Homo Evolutis, so no matter how numerous the alien octopuses, they did not slow down the unit. They continued their search of the city practically unimpeded. However, they discovered that the city had nothing worth investigating. Other than the metals, most of the stuff had either disappeared or was crushed into sand. This went to show the long history of this city; it was at least several thousand years old.

Thankfully, it was the Black Star Troopers who were responsible for the search, because the helmets of the space armors allowed them to see many things that were invisible to the naked eye, like heat distribution, infrared light, and even energy and electricity circuits. It was because of this that Guang Zhen had the idea of exploring this city. They could rely on the electricity to trace the center of the city. From the path of the electricity, there was still a building with energy storage at the center of the city, and that was the purpose of this search.

The search was silent and they did not come across any real danger. This unit soon arrived at this building that still possessed energy. It was a completely sealed-off, metallic, circular building. There was no visible entrance on the sides or on top. It seemed gaining entry was not going to be easy. Therefore, after a routine search, Guang Zhen decided to use force to create an opening.

Ten seconds later, with the combination of the sawblade and Gaussian rifles, Guang Zhen's unit stepped into this building. This

place was completely different from the rest of the city. There was no trace of destruction or even dust, it was clean like brand new and there were no signs of alien octopuses or their nests. In fact, it looked like a high-tech laboratory humans used to have on Earth.

"Be on your guard!" Xiao Niao ordered in Guang Zhen's place. He was acting as Guang Zhen's adjutant. He had the troopers check out the surroundings while he and Zhang Heng stood close to Guang Zhen.

For some unknown reason, the whole building was suddenly flooded with light, light sources coming out from every corner. They were not harsh on the eyes but were enough to light up the interior of the building. Revealed before them was a large, oval structure at the center of the room. Guang Zhen's unit had a hard time deciding what it was at first. A computer? Weapon? Research equipment? Or a small spaceship?

Before Guang Zhen's unit could do anything, a sharp ray of light came from above and fell on this structure. In just a few seconds, a slender lifeform with obvious female properties appeared in the light. She was graceful. Even though she did not look like a human, she still impressed upon them a sense of femininity. It was the most beautiful alien Guang Zhen's unit had seen since they ventured into space. Most aliens would appear scary to human eyes due to the difference in appreciation of beauty, but this was an exception.

The slender lifeform that appeared like she was flouncing about like seaweed in the ocean stood on two feet and had two arms. She had a head like a human's and had an appearance of frailty and fragility.

"So this is 3D imaging..." Guang Zhen told the people beside him in a whisper.

The female lifeform opened her mouth-equivalent to say something, but since it was in alien language, no one present

understood her. However, they quickly recorded her with the devices in their space armors. After she finished her piece, she pressed something beside her and behind her appeared a large space map.

In this space picture, a planet shone like a blue sapphire. A spaceship fleet departed from this planet, passing other planets and leaving further and further away from this blue planet...

Yes, this fleet was leaving the solar system to venture into the cosmos...



# Chapter 345: Returning Demon

---

In the 3D video, everyone saw the fleet drift away far from the limits of this solar system. Of course, since no one present was a scientist, they had no idea that there was a limit to a solar system in space. In fact, humanity was still arguing about the exact limit of a solar system, so none of them there realized that this fleet had left its solar system.

Just like that, this fleet disappeared in darkened space. At the same time, this sapphire-like planet kept on progressing. Even though the planet was only the size of a basketball in the 3D video, it could be seen with the naked eye. The green surface on the planet was decreasing and the ozone layer appeared to be polluted by something grey, creating flaws on this gorgeous planet.

As the time passed, the planets surrounding this planet appeared to have metallic sheens, and these metallic sheens expanded from the initial few to a large surface area. Many colonized planets started to show signs of buildings and the sapphire planet slowly returned to its former glow. The pollution had disappeared and the planet became healthy again...

However, under everyone's watchful gazes, in the 3D video, from the vast space, an incomplete spaceship fleet returned from the darkness. It was the same fleet that left the life-preserving planet earlier. The number of people that returned had halved. However, it was also because of that when the fleet returned to the life-preserving planet, in the zoomed in 3D video, everyone could see that the survivors of this fleet had a hero's welcome and that this civilization was in a mood of celebration...

However, the celebration did not last long. The heroes who returned soon perished from various illnesses. Even though they had no idea how much time had passed in the 3D video, from the progress of the civilization, it had been more than three years since the return of the spaceship fleet, and there was no sign of a

neutron star fragment in that period. The civilization was progressing at a normal speed.

To be accurate, this civilization was improving at a speed faster than "normal". Civilizations in solar systems with life-preserving planets, a large amount of terrestrial planets, asteroid belts, and moons would not understand the pain and difficulties of space-faring civilizations. The continuous deterioration, the increasing number of retards among the newborns, the need to search for materials in space, and the need to avoid contact with high level civilizations, all of these pains made progress, if there was any, incredibly slow. This was why most level 2 space civilizations had a hard time evolving into level 3 space civilizations and why level 3 space civilizations had a hard time evolving into level 4 space civilizations.

Civilizations with life-preserving planets did not worry about any of that. This was a weird phenomenon in space. Unless there was an absolute coincidence, even high level space civilizations would not normally stumble across the presence of a life-preserving planet. This was already an understanding among the space civilizations, perhaps one laid down by the godlike-tier space civilizations. Therefore, the space civilizations did not spend time discussing this lest they attracted the wrath of others.

Because of this, with a stable environment, almost infinite resources, and a wealth of "soul" as basis, any civilization on a life-preserving planet could easily welcome tons of progress. In reality, this was why for level 3 space civilizations and above, many technological trees would be incomplete. Without sufficient human and material resources and no wealth or free time to dedicate to research, they could only focus on a few pertinent technologies, and this caused the phenomenon of an incomplete technological tree.

However, for this civilization in the 3D image, they did not suffer from the problem. With the explosion of population, the

completion of all scientific technologies, the colonization of other planets, the whole civilization was progressing by leaps and bounds. The progress was vibrant and full of vitality. This was a civilization with a bright future. Give it 100 years and it would become a level 3 space civilization.

But... there was always a but...

Even though the neutron star fragment did not appear, crisis still occurred within this civilization. First was the malformation of their newborns. In the 3D image, in the ten years after the fleet returned, there was a small number of malformed babies. One could see the general shape of this race, but as time passed, about 50 years after the fleet's return, around one-fifth of the newborns would morph, be it physical body or intelligence, there was a giant change.

This was a scary ratio. If the morphing ratio was any higher, the future of this race was doomed. One-fifth, it meant of five babies, one would be deformed. As intelligent beings and not basic mammals, having ten babies in their one lifetime was already something rare. As a civilization who had not tasted the cruelty of space, a civilization who grew up in the warm embrace of a life-preserving planet, their kindness and charity was something space civilizations could not imagine. Therefore, these deformed babies were not executed but raised by their parents or the government.

In the 3D video, this race used all its power to research the trigger for birthing deformed babies, but it was to no avail. They had only found one pseudo-condition: the babies who were born on the life-preserving planet had a much smaller deformation chance than those born on the colonized planets. This was why most pregnant females chose to give birth on the life-preserving planet. Slowly, from the range that the 3D video could show, the signs of colonization on the other planets within the solar system had gradually decreased. The whole civilization started to deteriorate. Finally, almost all lifeforms returned to the life-preserving

planet...

However, that was not the end of the tragedy for this civilization. Those deformed babies did not gain any intellect as they grew up. If anything, their deformation only got worse. Of course, those who were greatly deformed and deemed dangerous were destroyed, but as time passed, even the normal citizens started morphing. The morphing was uniformed. The citizen's brain escaped from its body. Yes, the brain with the nervous and spinal systems attached to it tore itself apart from the rest of its body.

However, these creatures were still alive and could live by consuming other creatures' brains. They even maintained their complete memory and consciousness. In other words, other than the lack of physical body, they were still the race's citizens spiritually. However, this was their biggest terror, so most with normal intelligence could not accept this change, and most with deformities of this kind committed suicide.

However, a small portion of them survived. This combined with the morphing of the deformed babies once they grew up meant the proliferation of these creatures on the planet. The scariest part was that these creatures knew how to mate... yes, it was that weird. They were creatures made up of pure brain matter and nerves, but they could feed and mate... there was nothing more curious and scary than this.

As the brain creatures with normal consciousness slowly died out, the remaining were the brains without normal consciousness and memories. They kept mating and increasing. Eventually, they started attacking the normal citizens of the race who remained, consuming their brains through hypnosis and using their bodies to attack other normal citizens. This ugly cycle continued until the race reached its point of extinction...

The final generation of this race used the last vestiges of their energy to build this underground city. Everything here was controlled by the central computer, this machine that was before

Guang Zhen's unit. It was the brain of this city. The city was defended by the computer's technology, which could not be detected nor hypnotized by the brain creatures. Whenever there was signs of deformation among the internal unit, they would be executed by the computer. Just like that, the last generation of this race managed to stay in the city for hundreds of years using the sperm and ovum bank of their earlier generations. However, the numbers of this dying civilization kept on decreasing until this last normal female citizen remained. When she was all alone, she left the city and ventured to the surface.

Guang Zhen's unit knew that this was the ending of the 3D video. This 3D video was captivating. It was like they were watching an award-winning film, but it was more authentic and real than those movies. When the video ended, everyone had a melancholy in their hearts. This race did not even have the chance to venture into space, but they still had such a regrettable ending. The last female survivor left the city alone to try to get to the surface, to see for herself the glory of the night sky that her ancestors once claimed.

She was lucky. She did not meet any brain creatures along the way. When she reached the surface, she used her personal jetpack to fly into the sky and out of the ozone layer... yes, this civilization had become an early level 3 space civilization! And they were not a level 2 space civilization as everyone on the Hope thought!

Then, before her eyes, several planets had aligned themselves and circulated around the life-preserving planet, just like... the several planets were monitoring or guarding this life-preserving planet!

This phenomenon was familiar to Guang Zhen's group. This was the cursed planet!

# Chapter 346: Reward... Command!

---

"This is the central computer?"

After everyone finished watching the 3D video, other than the shock in their hearts, there were also a glow in their eyes. Everyone stared directly at the weird-looking creation. This was the central computer of a level 3 space civilization, and it was technically the last survivor of the civilization. It was responsible for overseeing the existence of the dying civilization, so... just how much information was within it? Could it be that the civilization's entire knowledge was in it so that the future generations of this civilization could use it to rebuild itself?

Even the collected Guang Zhen unconsciously took a gulp of his saliva. No one was more familiar than him regarding the meaning of this central computer. The central computer in the Noah One was nothing compared to this gem. It was weighty enough to be a perfect war reward. With it, the scientific issue that had been worrying Yao Yuan could be solved. In that case, the Hope becoming level 3 space civilization... was in its grasp!

Level 3 space civilization! How many space civilizations thought of reaching that level? This was the peak of low level space civilizations!

When humanity enters that stage, even though they only had one spaceship, they would not be afraid of any large level 2 space civilization fleets. Combined with the full power of the Black Star Troopers, as long as they do not stumble across a rare mid-tier space civilizations and do not provoke the experienced level 3 space civilizations, then the Hope will face no danger in space. They could find any planet and start a small yet secluded underground colony, and then... did that not mean a life of peace would finally be theirs?

"Extract the whole thing without harming it... But this is too big!"

Guang Zhen ordered, but then he immediately frowned. The computer was too big! It was at least 18 meters tall and was the size of a small house. They did not even know its weight. The issue of weight aside, moving such a large thing when a war was happening was not going to be easy. Where would they have the time to busy themselves with something like this?

Zhang Heng beside him seemed to come to the same conclusion. He suggested, "Can we spilt it open? It is so big because of the shell, right? Its internal systems shouldn't be so big. Can't we just take the internal systems?"

Xiao Niao immediately retorted, "That is not possible. This is an alien creation, its building basis is different from ours. Who can really tell which part is important? As a famous person once said, the screw itself isn't important, but where to put the screw is, and what we're lacking now is the knowledge of its construction and basically everything else. This thing is too important. Who will be responsible if it's damaged? So either we take the whole damn thing with us or we leave it be. That is better than regretting it later!"

Guang Zhen was ready to take Zhang Heng's advice when Xiao Niao jumped in with his warning. Without hesitation, he ordered harshly, "Lift it up! F\*ck it, we are second generation Black Star Troopers. As Bo Li has said, the strength output of the second generation space armor is three times the output of the first generation. If we put our hearts into it, we can theoretically lift up a small ferry. This is the time to see whether she was bluffing or not... Lift this thing up! This is the thing that will extend the Hope's longevity for at least several thousand years!"

There was one sentence that Guang Zhen did not say. As the second in command on the Hope, Yao Yuan had basically told him everything. He was the only person other than Yao Yuan who knew the password to start the Hope's self-destruct sequence. Therefore, he knew many confidential secrets, like the natural

deterioration of space civilizations.

This generation of humans was unique in the sense that it had several hundred cosmic adapters and even three Whisperers. They did not need to worry about deterioration, and it was the time for them to progress. If they did not make use of this opportunity, when the first generation still remembered Earth and their lives on it, when they reach the second or third generation, humanity might join the long list of space civilizations who were languishing in space.

Therefore, the first generation was key. Even with the genetic mesomeric technology, humans could only extend their lifespan until 150 to 200 years old. The extended 100 years was barely the blink of an eye calculated in space time.

However, when a space civilization becomes level 3 space civilizations, its central technology is related to minimization of energy application, like plasma weapons. At that time, using the combination of plasma energy and nano technology, they will create a type of nano plasma cellular gene recovery technology. It's more advanced than genetic mesomeric technology and can extend the lifespan by 500 to 1000 years. The extension is dependent on the properties of different lifeforms. For example, the Blue Race people can live for more than 1,000 years. If humanity's first generation can survive until they become a level 3 space civilization, with the added 500 to 1000 years of lifespan, becoming a level 4 space civilization was not impossible...

Therefore, other than Xiao Niao, no one knew about the importance of this alien computer to humanity. In other words, even though this might be cruel, this central computer was worth more than the 3,000 humans from the Noah One...

With Guang Zhen's order, seven troopers sawed through the bottom part of the computer. To preserve it as completely as possible, they sawed through the metallic flooring. The product was thus a 10 plus meters tall, 8 meters wide, and 5 meters thick



creation. It was heavy, at least heavy enough that even when one of the troopers tried to move it, it was unmovable. Finally, 8 troopers hoisted it from below to lift it up. However, that was not the end of their troubles.

The entrance opening of this building was not big enough to fit this thing through. With no choice, the troopers started deconstructing again. They cut a bigger hole and carefully moved this thing back to the human crowd.

Such a curious phenomenon naturally attracted the people's attention. Many came to enquire about it; however, due to the importance of the computer, Guang Zhen only gave vague answers, saying this thing was very important to the Hope. He did not explain further. He then waited alongside everyone else for rescue.

On the surface of the planet, due to the inability of communication, Yao Yuan had no idea that Guang Zhen's team had stumbled upon a treasure. If anything, he was so worried that his hair almost turned white.

The people out there had no clue what was happening underground. They could only see that the surface kept metalizing and a large surface of at least several thousand meters had become metal. Who knows how it was underground? The worst outcome... was the whole underground had become metal and Guang Zhen along with the 3,000 citizens had all died.

Of course, that was the worst ending. Before they could know for sure, the rescue had to continue. Yao Yuan was complaining about the lack of progress. The metal layer was too strong and thick. Even with his presence, which prevented the metal layer from recovering on its own, the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011 was still rather powerless before such a thick layer of metal. After so long, they only managed to blow open a crevice that was about several 100 meters deeps and several 10 meters wide. F\*ck, what was this metal layer? Diamond layer?

"This is useless! We have to use the heavy weapon on the Hope. The Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s are fighter jets, they are not meant to do damage to the ground!"

Yao Yuan came to this conclusion using his Thinker power. Without hesitation, he flew his combat jet back into space. After breaking through the ozone layer, he contacted the Hope's central command.

"Is this Bo Li? This is Yao Yuan. Start calculating the coordinates of the crevice and fire a shot of the Planet Annihilating Cannon at it... No matter what, we have to make an opening as soon as possible," Yao Yuan said into the communicator.

The other end of the communicator was silent for a while before a female voice answered, "Due to some unknown reasons, Professor Bo Li fainted earlier. A few Black Star Troopers and myself have temporarily taken over the control of the Hope."

Yao Yuan frowned immediately and demanded, "Who is this? Your voice is very familiar... Is this Ming Ji Jie? Why would you be at central command? What about the residential area and Defense Unit camp? Are there still Black Star Troopers there? Also, what exactly happened to Bo Li?"

Ji Jie answered, "Professor Bo seems to have fainted from overexerting her Homo Evolutis power. The doctor came to check on her and it did not seem serious. She will not enter coma, but since there was no one to head central command, those of us who are close came to give our support... What is Chancellor's order?"

Yao Yuan was silent as the image of the rather shy and cute girl appeared in his mind. He sighed under his breath and said, "Then, temporarily, you all will command the Hope. However, you do not have the required experience. How about this, there are three majors from the Defense Unit. They are all veterans. Have them join the commanding post. Also, add House Speaker Matt and Lee Cheng Wen, the human resources minister, to the list. All of you

will form a tribunal to temporarily oversee everything on the Hope until me or Commander Guang Zhen return."

Ji Jie replied, "Understood. Then what is our immediate order?"

"Aim at the ground!" Yao Yuan had flown back towards the surface as he spoke into the communicator. "Use the Planet Annihilating Cannon to puncture a hole in the ground!"

# Chapter 347: Big Danger!

---

Yao Yuan's order was quickly carried out. The Hope started to descend towards the planet's atmosphere. The alien vassals who saw this were white with fear. They thought that extinction was definitely going to happen.

This was because the Hope was their only hope. They really had never seen so many cosmic adapters in one ship before, and they could survive in the war against the demon with so many cosmic adapters. But now, something seemed wrong with the Hope. The whole spaceship was heading towards the planet's atmosphere.

This was a common knowledge for all space civilizations. Under normal circumstances, other than landing ships, larger spaceships would never land on a planet, especially one with ozone and atmosphere. This was because the bigger the size and greater the mass, the harder it would be for it to escape the planet's gravity. Even for level 3 space civilizations, it was hard for them to remove their main battleships from a life-perserving planet easily. When the size was bigger, the spaceships could even be torn open by the pulling forces between the planets.

Because the Hope that had a weird shape, descending to the ozone layer was a suicide mission. Such a weirdly shaped spaceship would only snap when it entered the ozone layer. In fact, when these alien vassals first saw the Hope, they thought that the spaceship was curious. This kind of structure was not suitable for space travelling, it was more like... a toy created by a level 1 space civilization.

However, what happened next made all the alien vassals open their eyes wide... or their eye equivalents.

The Hope seemed to not be affected by the gravity and descend to the planet with a speed that was constant. It later stopped within the ozone layer, in a floating manner... This was already inside the

planet's gravitational pull. According to the Hope's size and mass, the particular flux was definitely not enough for it to float in the atmosphere. However, when these alien vassals used their computers to scan the elevation of the Hope, it showed no signs of going up and down, it had gone perfectly still in the sky!

"How is this possible?!"

This question was repeated among the vassal races. In fact, the thing they were seeing before them was already beyond their scientific comprehension. For level 3 space civilizations, even after gaining cold agglutination reactors, the energy output and efficiency was at least 100 hundred times better than level 2 space civilizations. However, even considering that, this thing that the Hope was doing should've been impossible.

For it to maintain idleness in a situation where they had to deal with gravity, air pressure, the mass of the ship itself, and multiple influences from the solar system, no level 3 space civilization could manage it. In fact, even level 4 or 5 space civilizations would have a hard time accomplishing it. This was not some manmade planet but a real life-preserving planet.

Those with real knowledge were shocked by these little observations that they saw. The ability to keep idle with not even an inch of movement sent tremors across the vassal races. Even Blue 6, who was in the Hope and could not scan the Hope's current situation, had spotted the anomaly on the video feed. He was greatly shocked and was inspired as a member of the human race.

Back to the Hope's central command, the place was indeed a bit crowded. However, this was Yao Yuan's order. Furthermore, at the time, Yao Yuan was right in the battlefield and Guang Zhen's condition was unknown. Bo Li, who was basically the Chancellor's wife, was indisposed, so the leadership of the Hope was empty. Even though most of the adults on the Hope were the first generation who left Earth and were feisty and earnest, they did not dare to do anything brash. After all, with both Guang Zhen and

Yao Yuan not on the Hope, if anything happened to the spaceship, they might as well blow up the ship, because that would be faster than the tragedy that they could face.

Therefore, the high number had its benefits, one of them being stability. This was probably why Yao Yuan had so many people come to central command. However, there was a weakness as well, which was speed. The discussions would take more time than a decision made by a singular wise man.

Basically, it was the Black Star Troopers' 11th unit's leader, Ming Ji Jie, who was giving orders. There were a few Defense Unit generals giving suggestions and questions, while the rest were there as observers.

Then, with Ji Jie's order, the several side cannons on the Hope started to initiate and point at the surface. This was the super electromagnetic Planet Annihilating Cannon and not super rail cannon. In fact, one could discern humanity's technological improvement from this. Earlier, the super electromagnetic Planet Annihilating Cannon and super rail cannon were both unfinished super weapons, but now they were only side cannons, with the super rail cannon acting as the main cannon while the real main cannon, the Genesis, was still in construction.

"Charging complete, locking on target. AI alert limit open..."

"Super electromagnetic rail cannon, fire!"

Just as the three cannon barrels on the Hope extended out, a metallic ball slammed into the ground with a speed that the naked eye could not observe. The surface of the planet shook from the force. Even though the surface was metallic and thus did not cause any roiling dust, plenty of metallic pieces still got thrown into the air, and due to the spread of high temperature, many metal pieces even melted.

Liu Bai's group was already more than 100 kilometers away, but when the shot hit the ground, they were still knocked off their feet

by the gigantic tremors. They only managed to stand up after several seconds. The winds that came their way were laced with metallic pieces that made noises as they flung themselves against their space armors.

"On the floor! Everyone on the floor!" Liu Bai yelled as he jumped to the floor.

The second generation space armour was made using the alloy from the alien plants and its tensile strength was greater than the Hope's main defense board. Combined with the electromagnetic shield, the metal storm was definitely unable to harm the Black Star Troopers, but who knew how long the storm would last? After all, the space armors would run on energy and they were out of the Hope and thus away from the charger. Plus, they were on the battlefield, so they had to do everything to preserve the armors' energy.

Everyone quickly followed his order. When they dropped to the floor, they could feel the vibrations of the Earth more clearly as the wind whipped through their ears. This continued for several minutes before the wind started to slow down. Looked from afar, the area that was assaulted by the cannon was a site of blazing red. The sight was twisted due to high temperature.

At the same time, in the metallic underground city, the whole city was shaking. The size of the quake made everyone feel like they were going to be buried alive.

The crowd started to panic immediately. Adults were screaming and women were crying. Thankfully, there were no children left in the 3,000 people, or the situation would've been worse. Then again, who could fault them when the Black Star Troopers themselves felt fearful that the apocalypse was coming?

Thankfully, Guang Zhen managed to keep his calm. He yelled at the soldiers around him to lead the Troopers to calm the public. After the quake settled, he called the soldiers from the Noah One

and ordered them to prepare for retreat. They were running low on time, so they had to maintain order.

"Commander, you don't have to worry about that." Major Jacko saluted Guang Zhen and he said in a cold yet respectful tone, "Us from the Noah One were selected best of the best, and before boarding the Noah One, they were given training on things like emergency retreat. As long as there is enough transportation, they will not be delayed by chaos."

Guang Zhen did not mind Jacko's cold attitude. He saluted in return. "In that case, I will leave the civilians to your military unit. Do not worry about the transports. Leave the safety to us and our pilots to worry about."

Suddenly, in the middle of their conversation, Zhang Heng yelled as a rush of blood came out of his nose. Then he fell backwards. Immediately, the Black Star Troopers went into alert and they surrounded Zhang Heng. Guang Zhen and Jacko, who was in shock, rushed to Zhang Heng's side. Guang Zhen asked immediately, "What's wrong? Was he attacked? What's the damage to the space armor? How great is the injury?"

Zhang Heng was the Hope's most important asset. Other than that, he was a famed hero around the Hope, part of the Black Star Unit, and Guang Zhen's and Yao Yuan's close friend, so Guang Zhen was really worried.

Zhang Heng seemed to have kept his consciousness. He struggled to stand up and yelled simultaneously, "Danger! Very dangerous! We have to leave this place. No, leave this planet. A big danger is coming... If we do not hurry, we will all die!"

Not only Zhang Heng had felt this. This danger was too acute and obvious, so all of the Diviners felt it, only in varying degrees. Naturally, Yao Yuan sensed it as well. He was still piloting Space Combat Jet Prototype 011 when it happened, but since he did not feel it as strongly as Zhang Heng, he merely fainted for one or two



seconds before he recovered. When he did, he yelled into the communicator, "Is this the Hope? Release all the transport shuttles now! Release all the transport shuttles! At the same time, use the Genesis to shoot at the giant claw on the planet! A great danger is coming. I have no idea what it is, but my bet is on that giant claw. Help me stall for ten minutes, no, seven minutes!"

Everyone in the Hope's central command heard Yao Yuan's yelling. One of the troopers there was also a Diviner like Zhang Heng, and he too had fainted earlier. However, he did not have a nosebleed. He too was yelling about danger. Ji Jie also lost consciousness for a moment, but since she was sitting in the captain's chair, no one saw it.

"Release all transport shuttles at once!" Ji Jie did not dawdle. She gave the order as her gaze swept the room.

Speaker Matt, who was sitting in the chair beside her, had his face drawn, but he still said, "We are close to saving the people... or we are close to dying ourselves? Regardless, we have to buy more time. Just like the Chancellor ordered, we will use the Genesis to shoot at that giant claw!"

The others nodded. However, Cheng Wen, who was in another chair, snuck a glance at Ji Jie. There was a curious glow in his eyes, like he had spotted something...

Just like that, about 40 transport shuttles left the Hope. These were the transports that would be used to land and save the people. One could carry 70 soldiers. If they squeezed, transporting 3,000 citizens was definitely possible.

After the transport shuttles were released, the Hope immediately flew back into space and entered the giant claw's coordinates into the central mainframe. 10 seconds later, everything had been calculated, and with the control of the workers, the third bridge underneath the Hope slowly opened, revealing a large, circular line creation.

This was the Genesis!

"Plasma coagulation initiating!"

"Energy collection 3 percent... 8 percent... 11 percent..."

"The Hope's energy storage reaching limit, activating energy reactors..."

"Calculating anti gravity data... calculation complete, activating anti-gravity system!"

"Preparation of Genesis complete!"

Ji Jie heard the report. She looked around and others nodded silently at her. Then she raised her head to look at the giant claw on the planet and said, "Genesis, fire!"

A large, circular light beam that could be observed by the naked eye arced across space and landed on the giant claw...

Just as the transformation of the cursed planet continued, as the giant claw appeared on the planet, in the fringe of a solar system far away, strange information was being transmitted. If it was translated into human language...

"This is we race's solar system! It is the final cradle for we race to become a level 9 space civilization! Even if thy are a level 9 space civilization, for this last hope, the we race will never give up!"

"...Is that so? Then your race will disappear with this polluted solar system! Don't think a level 8 space civilization has seen everything the cosmos has to offer. Compared to our level 9 space civilization, you are still too weak. You don't even understand the scariness of demonic corruption. You will see, no, you will hear..."

"The thing that will cause you and this whole solar system to disappear..."

"The song of destruction!"

# Chapter 348: Rescue Start and... Stop!

---

The Genesis' power was greater than expected. It was no wonder it was a weapon from a level 3 space civilization. It was no longer a Gaussian weapon but a real plasma weapon!

When the light ray hit the planet's surface, in an instant, the flesh surface was vaporized. Even the ginormous claw was crackling from heat. It was crumbling, as if turning back from flesh into stone. Even though they were in space and thus could not hear any sound, when the claw retreated back into the planet, everyone could swear that they could hear cheering.

"It's working! This weapon is working!"

Everyone on the Hope, including the technicians, government officials, soldiers, and civilians cheered when they saw this. There was nothing more exciting than the showcase of the power of their own military.

However, what happened next stemmed the cheering directly. On the planet's surface, about eight claws suddenly pushed their way out. The planet looked less like a planet but an indescribable spherical spider, and this impossible creature was close to breaking out of the planet's surface.

"Continue firing!" Ji Jie commanded. "Starting from now, shut down the Genesis and initiate space warp in seven minutes, even if the transport shuttles have not returned!"

Everyone was startled. Some wanted to say something, but they ultimately didn't...

No matter how precious the people from the Noah One were... they were not more precious than the safety of the Hope. Since Yao Yuan had given the time of seven minutes, then they would be able to retreat within seven minutes, right?

At the same time, on the life-preserving planet, the place that

was shot by the super electromagnetic rail cannon had become a giant crater. The thick, metallic layer dipped inwards. Most of the metals had melted and some was vaporized, coloring the whole area a bloody red.

"The central temperature is too high. It might not affect the transport shuttles or the troopers, but normal civilians will not be able to withstand such high temperature."

Yao Yuan frowned. From his perspective, he could see 40 shuttles descending from space. The pilots of the shuttles were waiting for his command, but the temperature of the crater was so high that it made Yao Yuan hesitate.

Thankfully, the Hope was already a middle level 2 space civilization. In other words, they were at the middle stage of the 4th revolution. Metallurgy, like the heat resistance of the transport shuttles, was much greater than that of the creations back on Earth. Even if the transport shuttles landed on the planet's surface, Yao Yuan would not worry, but how would the normal civilians enter the shuttles? Such a high temperature... through conductivity, even the shuttles' surfaces would be several hundred degrees.

Right then, Yao Yuan suddenly noticed a new signal, and it was coming from underground. He broke into a smile and yelled at the communicator, "Is this Wong Guang Zhen? Hello, Ol' Wong? Is that you?"

There was still plenty of static crowding the communication, but seconds later, the static disappeared and Guang Zhen's word came through. "Ol' Yao? It is me. How is everything on the surface? How's the Hope?!"

Yao Yuan's worried heart was greatly relieved. He replied hurriedly, "The Hope is doing fine. Do not worry, but we don't have much time left. I believe you already know about the imminent great danger. Let's not waste time, I will send you the

coordinates of the opening... But there is a problem: the temperature of this place became very high when we blew open the crater. When the shuttles pass through the hole, their temperature will rise as well. The troopers will not be affected, but normal civilians will probably have a hard time even getting close to the shuttles... Do you have any underground rivers? Or a water source? We must find one!"

Right then, Guang Zhen's side was crowded with people. Other than the Black Star Troopers, there were also military officers from the Noah One. When Yao Yuan gave his order, everyone looked at each other. Where would they find a water source underground? So many people were dying from thirst already.

Suddenly, a clear voice sounded, "I know the location of a water source..."

Everyone turned to the direction of the sound and saw Yun Si sit up from his position. He was waking up from his unconsciousness, but his tone was flat. When he said that, he did not hesitate and walked to the communicator to say, "What else can this device do? Can it scan out the 3D image of various geological positions?"

Guang Zhen nodded at the trooper who was operating the communicator and he finally replied, "There is such a function. We can project the image into thin air. Do you want to use that function?"

Yun Si nodded and he saw a light screen appear before him. The screen was delineated into top and bottom layers using color.

Yun Si traced his finger through the screen and soon trails appeared on screen. He said, "You all came down from this large tunnel, right? This pavilion here is where the Noah One initially landed. If you continue down this way, there will be an underground stream. It is where the Noah One got its water supply. From where we are, we need to go down further... It should be right here. If the opening is at these coordinates, then

right under it, here. If you attack here, you will be able to siphon the water source and the stream will follow downwards, forming an underground waterfall. Then the issue of temperature will be solved."

With Yun Si's explanation, the underground's environment was clarified. The various tunnels, pathways, and steps going up or down were marked. These made Guang Zhen's group excited. With these, the chance of survival greatly increased.

However, Guang Zhen quickly asked, "Why are you helping us? Didn't you decide to stay earlier?"

Yun Si scratched the back of his head as he sat down. He said calmly, "I am not crazy. I admit I was overly emotionally earlier, but since we can still save 3,000 people, it is still worth trying... But you're sure the spaceship's leader will wait for us? You know the great danger is imminent."

"I believe," Guang Zhen said confidently. "Because he is not on the spaceship but right above us, trying his best to save us. He will not abandon us!"

Yun Si did not reply but started his own contemplation.

Back on the surface, Yao Yuan was overjoyed when he received the underground geological map. He immediately sent the map to the 40 shuttles. Even though these were shuttles for transportation purposes, they were, after all, creations from the 4th revolution. Their materials, production, fuel efficiency, and the like had surpassed Earth's technology. One of such shuttles, if put back into Earth's era, could rival several hundred fighter jets... That is if humans did not use any atomic bombs or such weapons of mass destruction.

Each of the shuttles was equipped with several automatic Gaussian gatling guns and a small Gaussian cannon. The collective power of 40 shuttles was more than enough to clear away an underground tunnel. The shuttles also had anti-gravitational

systems, so floating in the air was a non-issue.

After receiving the underground map, the 40 shuttles submerged through the opening and started clearing a pathway using the map. Thankfully, the underground had not metalized, or rather, due to Yao Yuan's presence, the metallization process had stopped. The rocks fell away easily under the shuttles' focus fire. Several seconds later, a large waterfall sprayed out from the rock's face.

The pilots cheered before they went deeper down the hole and stopped at a leveled junction. This place was exactly where the Noah One had stopped. The place was crumbling, but due to the overall size, it had not completely collapsed yet.

At the same time, Guang Zhen's unit departed from the steel city. Even though the roads were blocked by fallen rocks, the presence of the Black Star Troopers made them a non-issue. They easily cleared the rocks away, but most of the unit was tired, thirsty, hungry, and exhausted. They had elderly and injured people with them, so their progress was not fast. Guang Zhen knew about the seven minute limitation from Yao Yuan, and his heart started to palpitate as he saw the timer tick down in his helmet.

At about the 7th minute, the leading party felt a heat wave. The temperature on the Space Armors had reached about 50 degrees. It was still bearable. Before their eyes were the rocky pavilions, and in it were the 40 transport shuttles!

Back in space, the Hope had stopped firing the Genesis and siphoned that energy to space warp engine but...

"What?! The space warp engine has stopped working? You can't even charge it with energy?!"

# Chapter 349: Warp Drive!

---

Space warp!

That became humanity's trump card after they headed into space. This technology was even more valuable than Homo Evolutis because without it, there would be no humanity, much less Homo Evolutis.

Of course, without this technology, Earth wouldn't have been targeted by neutron star fragment and human beings would still be languishing in its warm cradle. In any case, this was an issue of egg first or chicken first, so we shall not get into it now.

In conclusion, space warp was humanity's biggest trump card; it was not be an exaggeration to call it humanity's lifeline. After all, the cosmos was vast, how could a "small" spaceship like the Hope possibly fly in space for tens of thousands of years? When one really thought about it, almost all the level 2 or 3 space civilizations had a mothership that was the size of a small planet. They had to be to reflect the size of the cosmos; how else was a civilization going to last thousands of years in space?

However, it was obvious that this was not the case with the Hope. Simply put, the design theory behind the Hope was an exploratory ship using the anti-gravity system and space warp. Therefore, the two main Noahs weren't meant to be used as humanity's last fortresses, or else it would not have been so small.

After losing space warp, the Hope would be a low level 2 space civilization, or even at the peak of level 1 space civilizations!

It would be a real metallic coffin that would float for several hundred years in space!

"We're doomed!"

These two words cropped up in everyone's minds. Those who knew had their faces blanched white, while the others were red



trying to figure out why.

Soon, with the aid of the AI system, the report returned. As they expected, the space warp system was down. All the mechanisms and functions of the space warp system were shut down, including energy charging. Whether it was the issue of the space warp engine itself or the effect of demonization or ZERO's tricks, no one could really tell. After all... humanity still hadn't found out how space warp truly worked, much less how to fix it.

"Repeat inspection..." Ji Jie immediately ordered the workers in central command, "Shut down all information, do not allow any information about the space warp engine to leak to the public. Call for a meeting among all the scientists and technicians familiar with the space warp engine... No, we don't have the time, ask them to use their communicators or home computers and connect to the central mainframe's secret government server. Use it to communicate with them, ask them what we should do now!"

Ji Jie was firm and resolute. While everyone was lost, her crisp voice rang out. In that instant, people still had a hard time following what had happened. They felt like Yao Yuan was still on the ship and the whole central command was in a panic. However, they still carried out Ji Jie's orders.

Several seconds later, many people there started to regain their senses. The person who gave the orders was Ji Jie and not Yao Yuan.... This woman was quite a good leader, wasn't she?

No matter what, several minutes later, several transport shuttles were already ascending from the planet. They were heading towards the Hope, and trailing behind them was a continuous stream of other shuttles. Flying alongside them was a Space Combat Jet Prototype 011. It looked like the rescue mission was reaching its end, but the Hope... had no means to leave this piece of space!

"...Impossible, we don't even know about the theory behind the

space warp engine. How do you expect us to fix it?"

On screen, a white-haired scientist shook his pale face and explained, "We tried to study the design blueprint of the space warp engine and we have been into the machine ourselves. It has a simple structure, nothing more than a few metal rings and lines like circuits, but it could bring something as massive as the Hope over several thousand light years away. This is impossible... If it is really broken, unless we build a new one according to the blueprint, we will not be able to fix or use it!"

"Professor Pavlov, aren't you originally from Russia?" Ji Jie read the name appearing on the bottom of the screen and she shook her head to say, "We do not have the time to build another space warp engine, and rebuilding such a large and key object would use all the energy on the Hope. Can we possibly do that now? Stopping any other system will mean death... So, is there any other solution? Anyone?"

A middle-aged woman appeared on screen to say, "I think I can answer that, Black Star Troopers unit leader... If there is really a problem with the space warp engine, then I can confidently say we are doomed. We have no means to escape this solar system. From the star chart we have received, the closest solar system to this one we're in is at least 6 light years away. According to our current travelling speed, even using the particle flux engine at its maximum speed... we will need at least 500 years to reach the next solar system... The supply on the Hope will at most last us for another 100 years in space."

"...What if we use these aliens' spaceships?"

Right then, a male voice entered the discussion. It was Yao Yuan's voice. He said, "Thank you, Ji Jie. You have done a perfect job, leave the rest to me."

Ji Jie was startled before sighing in relief. She smiled and said, "Chancellor, it is great that you're back."

The middle-aged woman continued without missing a beat, "Chancellor, you're back... If it is you, you must understand what I mean, right? The original design of the Hope is not meant to cross from one solar system to another. After losing the space warp engine... humanity will be done for."

Yao Yuan's stern voice replied, "That is why I ask... What if we use the spaceships of the alien vassals? Those aliens have lost plenty of their population, so they have empty spaces on their spaceships. If we fill up those spaces with enough water and various materials, can we survive until the next solar system?"

Suddenly, a middle-aged man added, "Chancellor, that is a question of logistics. Even though I cannot give you an exact number now, I can tell you for sure... we cannot because we humans still do not have the hibernation devices described in sci-fi. In other words, during these hundred of years of travel, we humans will have to continue to survive. Then I have to ask an important question... What to do about our future generations? Planned parenthood? In that case, after this generation of Homo Evolutis all dies, we humans will start to deteriorate when we reach that solar system.

"Furthermore... We do not have the time to find enough materials to fill these vassal spaceships."

The latter was the real reason. Yao Yuan laughed bitterly. In fact, if the situation did not demand for it, they would not come up with the hibernation system. It was only needed now that they were thinking about going into an alien spaceship. In that case, in the next 100 years, most humans would be in a hibernation state, but now...

"Chancellor, I think we're too limited on our thoughts. There is still another way to cross distance."

Right then, a voice rang out. It was Ren Tao, who was in central command. Without Yao Yuan asking, he continued, "Other than

space warp... we can still use warp drive."

Yao Yuan first smiled before it turned into a frown. "Our warp drive technology is still in research. It is a level 3 space civilization technology, so it is hard for us to instantly grasp it. Our current research progress doesn't allow us to use warp drive..."

"We can't, but they can..." Ren Tao said confidently. "I remember warp drive is not the spaceship itself bypassing the barrier of light speed but using some special method to warp the space in front of the spaceship, twisting the space, and thus technically bypassing the barrier of light speed, right?"

A few scientists who were responsible for dissecting warp drive nodded. One of them said, "You're right, warp drive works the way you just described."

"Then it'll work," Ren Tao said firmly. "Currently, we still have 4 vassal spaceships. Have them drive their spaceships to surround the Hope, 2 on each side, then have them use warp drive technology. Then, the Hope will exist within the warped space. In other words, we will be in the same space as the 4 spaceships. The space itself will be warping, so even though we do not know how to warp drive, we will be in warp drive! I think this is how those alien fleets deal with mass transportation. Not every spaceship will warp drive, but multiple spaceships combine together to create a warped space and the spaceships within the space will be warped together. That way, they can still maintain communication within the warped space."

When he said that, the few scientists were astounded. After a close discussion amongst themselves, they came to the same conclusion as Ren Tao... Yes, this was the only explanation to mass teleportation of alien space fleets across space. If they entered warp drive individually, there was no guarantee they would exit at the same spot.

Yao Yuan's Thinker power was activated to its maximum. In less

than 5 seconds, he made his decision. "Then we will use warp drive... Call Blue 6. Didn't he love to exact his responsibility?

"It is time for him to shine!"

# Chapter 350: Song of Destruction!

---

Blue 6 was indeed passionate about his own responsibilities. In fact, he was the kind of person who was very sensitive about his range of power. After joining the human society, he was extremely worried that others would overstep into his boundary.

Thankfully, it appeared like humanity was a race that knew about the sanctity of feudalism and no one was attempting to replace him as the minister of foreign affairs. At least in the realm of diplomacy, he was the highest ranking officer, and he was greatly satisfied by that.

"The Chancellor is right. In this situation, we human's space warp technology has been isolated. In fact, even if it wasn't, I would also wish to persuade the Chancellor to not use it, but that is the prime minister's and other ministers' responsibility and not my place to speak."

After Blue 6 gained his place of power, he heard from the Black Star Troopers that Yao Yuan was not the Emperor but the Chancellor. Of course, everyone agreed that Yao Yuan was humanity's only leader and that he was lawfully elected by congress, so it was only a change of title. There was nothing shocking about it.

Yao Yuan had already told Blue 6 his latest mission. Due to the urgency of the situation, he did not hide anything from Blue 6 and told him everything. However, he was still curious about what Blue 6 said, so he said, "Why shouldn't we use space warp? That is the safest and fastest transportation method."

Blue 6 answered since Yao Yuan had asked, "Because the Blue Race has an axiom that is sacred even in feudal society: there will be people who are desperate enough to do stupid stuff, so it is best to hide your wealth... Similarly, even though we humans have great potential, we currently are still too weak. These vassal races

will be valuable to us in the future, but we cannot bring them to warp with us, right? Therefore, for our future, I personally suggest we rely on warp drive."

"Don't show your gold and silver. We humans have that axiom too..." Yao Yuan nodded then told Blue 6, "Then I will leave everything to you. From this second onwards, we still have five minutes before the rescue mission will be completed. After that, we will enter warp drive immediately."

A flustered Blue 6 said hurriedly, "Your Highness, humanity's technology level is already not low, so you should know about the properties of warp drive, right? It is a process that needs acceleration time; it is not similar to space warp that can be initiated immediately."

"I know, so it has to happen as soon as possible!" Yao Yuan replied. "We are running out of time. Whenever you finish your mission, we will leave this damn cursed planet."

"...Fine. If Your Highness has said so, then I will finish my mission as soon as possible." Blue 6 shrugged. He averted his gaze from Yao Yuan and told his adjutant, "Record down my mission and inform the space jets that are under the foreign affair department's jurisdiction. Have them start their inspection preparations."

Back down in the underground of the cursed planet, there were only several transport shuttles left. There were only 200 plus people left, including Guang Zhen and the Black Star Troopers following him. Liu Bai and his team, who were on the surface, had already left. In other words, this was the last group of people for the rescue mission.

Guang Zhen right then was standing beside Yun Si. In these few minutes, he was impressed by Yun Si's managerial and negotiation skills and found out that he was a Diviner, an S-grade cosmic adapter, from many different sources. He would definitely be a

part of the Black Star Troopers in the future. He asked Yun Si, "You could have boarded the shuttle a long time ago, so why did you stay? Only Black Star Troopers are required to stay until the last second."

Yun Si did not even acknowledge Guang Zhen. He was helping a young, beautiful girl. The girl seemed to have sprained her ankle and her dress was splattered with many yellow dirt spots. She seemed to still be in shock as Yun Si helped her into the shuttle like the gentleman that he was. The girl gave him her name out of appreciation. She was Xie Yue Xuan, the daughter of one of the scientists who unfortunately had passed away.

After Yun Si helped the girl board the shuttle, he finally turned to face Guang Zhen. "I also need to stay until the last second... Like I said, abandoning them once is enough. They... they can no longer suffer the fate of being abandoned like trash, so no matter what, I will stay until the last second."

Guang Zhen did not comment but looked at the people who still remained. Until the last group of civilians entered the shuttle, he told the Black Star Troopers, "Retreat immediately, and... have you tied the alien central computer securely?"

Xiao Niao, who was standing beside Guang Zhen, sighed helplessly. "Yes, we have secured it. You have asked that question at least 10 times already. Relax, we have done everything we can. If we still cannot get this central computer back onto the Hope, then it can only mean we are not supposed to have it."

Finally, after the last transport shuttle floated aboveground, the four vassal spaceships aligned themselves around the Hope. A communication channel had been opened between the five spaceships. Of course, to ensure the safety of the Hope, when the channel was made, the four AI from the four vassal spaceships' central computers were given limits of authority. They were all controlled by the Hope's central mainframe. Yao Yuan sighed in relief. After all, the Hope was the main civilization, while the other



races were vassals, so their lives were in humanity's control.

For now, we would not get into the shock of the 3,000 Noah One survivors when they entered the Hope. This was the most crucial moment for the Hope. As the four vassal spaceships aligned themselves around the Hope, command was returned to Yao Yuan. The spaceships would use the slowest spaceship as standard and fly out of the solar system using the fastest speed and at the same time. Yao Yuan had ordered the four vassal spaceships to accelerate to enter warp drive.

"No, this is too unscientific."

Blue 6 was also in central command. He was talking to his own adjutant... another Blue Race member, but when he heard Yao Yuan's order, he immediately interrupted, "Your Highness, this is too unscientific. Forgive my insolence, but before Your Highness makes this decision, I hope Your Highness will seek opinions from the minister of science... I understand, we do not have the time for that, then I shall encroach beyond my range of responsibility. Forgive my insolence, but warp drive cannot be done inside a solar system. This is a very complicated long distance navigation and travelling method, and the destination might vary by several thousand light years due to a slight variation in angle. Of course, since we have the AI system and a central mainframe that has superelectromagnetic hardware, but it will only work when we are outside of a solar system. When we are within a solar system, the ship is constantly affected by many different forces, including the various gravitational pulls and pushes, the light pressure from the sun, and other elements.

"All of these forces are weak, but they are enough to bring great influence to the warp drive process. Furthermore, these forces within the solar system are constantly changing, so we cannot correctly predict and calculate them. Therefore, warp drive is normally not allowed within the solar system, because it could cause a whole spaceship fleet to be lost in the wide cosmos!"

"So what will happen?!" Yao Yuan asked calmly.

Blue 6 was startled. He thought Yao Yuan did not understand what he was saying, so he repeated, "Lost in space! Your Highness, this will cause us to not be able to return to our race's mothership, not even our race's shelter. We will float about in space and deteriorate due to a lack of cosmic adapters; we might even be consumed or destroyed by other space civilizations. This is a great space tragedy!"

"Are we lacking in cosmic adapters? Do we have a shelter to return to?" Yao Yuan continued calmly, "This is our mothership and the entirety of humanity... You are a Diviner, or a Time Watcher in your language, so you should be feeling the great pressure... A danger that is not unlike a supernova. The danger's presence is everywhere, and it increases in sharpness every other second. What we need to do now is escape this solar system as soon as possible!

"The destination is not important. Perhaps we can use space warp after we leave this solar system, that is the number one priority. Number two, there is nothing for us to be worried about. To be frank, we are worried about running into your mother race... I think we humans now are what they call a great wealth of treasure, right? However, we still do not have the power to defend this great treasure, at least when we are facing a level 3 space civilization. Therefore, until we become a level 3 space civilization or we have enough power, we have to avoid any possible danger. Since we cannot confirm the destination of warp drive within a solar system, isn't that perfect? Nobody will know where we are going, so this means that there will not be a large amount of level 2 space civilizations or level 3 space civilizations waiting to trap us at the other end of the warp drive. Therefore, save your breath and we will enter the preparation stages for warp drive now!"

Blue 6 was startled, but he did not retort. He was unfamiliar with human culture, but he was not dumb. After all, a dummy could not

have been Blue 6's sixth successor to the throne, even if he was an S-grade cosmic adapter. Therefore, he cleverly shut his mouth and allowed Yao Yuan to continue his orders.

The other 4 spaceships had confirmed the takeover of their spaceships' central computers, so when Yao Yuan gave his order, they couldn't refuse it even if they wanted to. Following the large output of energy from the 4 spaceships, the 4 spaceships extended out many thin and long devices. Large amounts of plasma energy concentrated on these devices and a lot of liquefied electricity pooled on them. Gradually, at the end of the 5 spaceships appeared a layer of transparent, frosted glass-like mirage space.

"This is incomplete warp drive technology."

Blue 6 suddenly opened his mouth to say, "Only a level 3 space civilization at its peak can use perfect warp drive technology. For example, the Blue Race's mothership can enter such perfect warp drive using energy charge to enter light speed, and it will only require several minutes. The real warp drive decreases the space frequency of the space opposite from the ship's destination to create the space distortion effect. However, due to the spread of technology and perhaps intervention from middle-tier space civilizations, now even level 2 space civilizations can use incomplete warp drive technology. Although, they are technically not using the real warp drive technology, and it can only be called a warp crawl technology..."

Just as Blue 6 finished, the countdown for them to enter warp drive appeared on the giant monitor in central command. Since the four spaceships' technology was higher than that of the alien merchants the Hope had met, the combination of the 5 spaceships' mass was still smaller than the alien merchants' mothership, so the expected warp drive time was fast. The countdown only showed around six hours.

"6 hours? Can we make it?"

When they saw the countdown, everyone's gazes turned towards the planet that had become flesh. Around 10 claws had appeared from it and the surface of the planet had been cracked. However, it was covered by a thick fog, so they could not have a clear view of the monsters within. They needed 6 more hours, and they wondered whether they could last that long.

In this solar system, the spaceships that were transformed earlier had now become various demon lifeforms. Some were pure energy, others metallic or rocks, and some could not even be described. The few planets that surrounded the cursed planet also appeared to have various levels of changes. The situation was so bad it was unimaginable, even... it was hard to say whether it was a misreading or not, but the spaceship's radar showed that the surface of the sun had some weird wave effects. So even the sun was demonized? Was that even possible?

Time slowly passed by in this slow torture. The countdown had moved to the last hour. The space drag speed of the five spaceships had reached 90 percent of light speed, but it was still light speed, so even when viewed from the hope, the whole solar system was in slow motion, especially those demon creatures. But they could see the things that happened around them, as it was not like the real warp drive, where the surroundings were completely unnoticeable.

Suddenly, in a space near the cursed planet, a weird creation appeared. It was of an unknown material that looked like crystal, but energy was observable on its surface. It looked like a creation made from pure plasma energy.

The creation was only several meters in size. In fact, the Hope's surveillance technology was unable to pick up such a small thing from such a long distance. This was the information provided by the four other spaceships, and the image was enlarged and put on central command's big screen.

"What is this? A ruin inside the cursed planet?" Yao Yuan stood

up to study it.

Under everyone's watchful gazes, the creation started to multiply at an alarming speed. It formed various parts, it had a complicated yet curious rhythm, and it looked like a painting, a symbol, or a picture. The various parts started to form on their own and continued to increase the creation's size.

"...No, no mass!"

According to the data collected by the four other spaceships, the creation had appeared from thin air and it occupied empty space. There might've been space radiation or ions, but this creation's mass and density showed that radiation or ions were not enough to create something of this size. According to the same data, the space occupied by this creation did not have any nano devices. In other words, a scary truth had appeared before everyone, whether they realized it or not...

The law of conservation of matter had been broken!

"No, not conservation of matter! There is a large energy reaction in that space! I know, it is virtual particle!"

Of the many scientists who witnessed this scene, one of them yelled out, "Virtual creation! This is virtual creation! They use virtual particles to create objects from a distance away!"

Since all of the communication channels were connected, Yao Yuan asked immediately, "What does that mean? Virtual creation? How great is this technology level?"

"Impossibly high!" the scientist said directly. "The supposed space is not actual space. Other than the space ions and radiation known to us, there is a limitless layer of always-fading virtual particles. They appear by receiving temporary energy using a mechanism that we human beings do not understand. After they appear, they immediately return the energy and disappear. This whole process happens so fast that we cannot measure it in time. However, when

it appears, its property is no different from normal particles. Therefore, if there is a constant and large energy that acts as a source of energy to replace the virtual particle's borrowed energy during this process, then it will be able to capture the virtual particle in the moment it appears and materialize it from its virtual state. This is what we call virtual creation, creating substance from space. However, one, the energy required is too big; two, the amount of time that virtual particle exists is too short; three, what is the method that can be used to replace the temporary energy... This technology is impossibly advanced!"

Yao Yuan turned to look at Blue 6. Blue 6 nodded and said, "I may not be from a scientific background, but I can honestly tell Your Highness... Even I have not heard of this technology, and level 3 space civilizations definitely do not have this technology. Even though level 4 space civilizations are distant, we still have had communications with level 4 to level 6 space civilizations, and their technologies are focused on space manipulation, not this kind of virtual particle creation. Therefore..."

A technology of a high tier space civilization!

This conclusion appeared in everyone's minds and their hearts shook. High tier space civilizations, level 7 to 9 space civilizations!

Humanity was like an ant before them. Borrowing an analogy, this was a comparison between humanity in the 21st century and the unicellular organisms that roamed Earth. There was no need for comparison...

A high tier space civilization's creation? They wanted to demolish this demonic solar system? Or this was the source of danger?

Yao Yuan's face was blanched. He looked at the countdown, and it still had 20 plus minutes to go. On the screen, the creation was already the size of a small mountain and it still continued to grow...

Time ticked by second by second. Everyone stared at the creation on screen unblinkingly. At this moment, it was like satellite circling the surface of the cursed planet. And it had fully blossomed into something that looked like a giant crystal flower with a curious lattice...

Without any warning or explosion, the surrounding area of the creation suddenly darkened and then everyone could hear singing...

It was a curious singing voice. It had an echo and an indescribable curiosity, and it just appeared in everyone's ears. This was not a mental attack because the computer could detect and record the presence of this song...

At the same time, the central computers of the five spaceships showed that the spaceships were heading towards the cursed planet, and they were nearing light speed!

"Impossible! We are trying to leave this solar system, so how can we be moving backwards at light speed? This is impossible!"

Everyone had this confusion, but no one could understand what was happening. From the screen, the cursed planet and everything around it could not be detected... yes, not darkness, but it could not be detected!

All the scientists on the Hope were gathered in the lab. One of them was hit by inspiration. With the song in his head, he keyed in some data into a computer, and after some time, he yelled out, "I know... Space decay! Vacuum space is not the real lowest energy state. This device caused the real space decay. The song caused the uncertainty of ionic state to create space expansion and contraction. If there is air, then it will cause natural vibrations, and thus it will create a song. So that is what happens..."

Yao Yuan was like an ant on the top of a boiling pot. He did not care for politeness and yelled, "What is the meaning of that? Explain clearly, is this fatal? How can we escape from this thing's

attraction? That device has created a black hole?"

"Black hole?" The scientist seemed to have lost his mind. He started dancing and said, "A black hole is like a creep with 5 attack when facing this thing. We all know that the vacuum is always in a process of high energy ions moving to low energy ions. To put it simply, that is natural space decay. Since energy is always moving from high to low, then so is the cosmos. Do we know the last state of the cosmos? No, many scientists have predicted that the cosmos we are in is only a resting state of the space decay process. A resting state that will last for several billion years. When our cosmos, or the vacuum moves from its current energy state to an even lower energy state, then our cosmos will have a gigantic change, and it is happening before us now... Pulling everything toward it at light speed, the cosmos is returning to its mass point!"

"Do you hear this song? This is the song of destruction! The song that cheers for the destruction of the cosmos!"

After that, the scientist charging out of the lab laughing like crazy. Yao Yaun did not have the time to deal with the mad scientist. A fit of inspiration hit him, and when he raised his head, he saw Xiao Niao and Ren Tao looking at him with the same expression. Obviously they had thought about the key point.

Light speed!

Yes, currently the Hope was being pulled towards the emptiness at light speed. In other words, if they broke through light speed...

"Tell the vassal spaceships to activate their maximum power! Even if it's just one second earlier, we have to break through the light speed barrier!"

Yao Yuan was yelling at the top of his lungs. After he gave his order, he could no longer speak any words. It was not only because of tiredness from continuous combat, it was the sense of helplessness of an ant when facing an insurmountable threat...



High tier space civilization...

Forced us humans into space, destroyed our Earth, killed 99 percent of our people, ruined our dream new planet, now... they want us to wait helplessly like ants for our final judgement?

High tier space civilization...

High tier space civilization!

Blood trickled out from Yao Yuan's lips...

Time ticked by. They were only 20 plus light speed away from the slate of emptiness and the countdown was reaching its final 10 seconds...

Everyone watched the countdown like their hearts had stopped.

Everyone watched quietly, including the aliens and the humans. They could only wait and watch quietly... Either they survived or they perished...

Finally, at the last second, there was complete darkness around the Hope. Other than the 4 vassal spaceships, there was nothing else around them that was visible...

Warp drive...

The Hope had entered warp drive!

# Chapter 351: Addition

---

In warp drive...

To be honest, the Hope being able to escape certain death had plenty to do with luck. Even though there was the joy of surviving the impossible, many were chilled to the core... it was from the helplessness of facing a much too strong enemy.

Therefore, the first few days after entering warp drive, the atmosphere on the Hope was low until several days later, when the Noah One's passengers came out of the epidemic prevention unit, that changed things. In these few days, they were checked and treated by the Hope's medical unit and were kept in the Hope's sixth floor, a simple but giant hall with simple, metallic corridors. In reality, this was a place specifically built to accommodate these passengers from the Noah One.

In fact, of the 3,000 survivors of the Noah One, around 90 percent of them had fainted. The continuous running, thirst, and hunger on the cursed planet combined with the later fear and nightmare-like situation had drained everyone. When they boarded the Hope and saw the familiar faces of other human beings, they sighed immensely in relief. As they let their guards down, the collected anxiety came at once and several thousand of them collapsed on the spot. All of them were shuffled to the epidemic prevention unit. Most skipped the showers that were provided and slumped onto the beds to sleep.

The medical personnel on the Hope and temporary volunteers with the directions of the related personnel sent the fainted members to their beds. Doctors and nurses went about checking their injuries. They treated those who were injured and gave glucose packs to those who weren't. There were many things to be done.

Back on Earth, to save a group of 200 people suffering from food

poisoning required the combined effort of the whole hospital. However, there were 3,000 people who were on the brink of collapse, many of them were elders. Without immediate medical intervention, they might die.

Because of that, after the first batch of thousand something volunteers had completed their work of moving all the passengers from the Noah One to the epidemic prevention unit, the Hope's ministry of health called in a second batch of two thousand something volunteers and workers to help with the situation. The work was done in two hours thanks to the help of the group of AI robots. Efforts like cleaning and moving were carried out by them.

On the second day the Hope entered warp drive, the passengers from the Noah One had been asleep for 28 hours and some of them started to wake up. Since they were attached to feeding drips while they were unconscious, they did not feel hungry. However, they still needed to take care of their bladder needs, so when they woke up, the first thing most of them did was search for the toilet.

The Hope's general layout was not much different from the Noah One's. The only difference was probably the wider size. After all, the Hope had been through many upgrades and the internal environment had been greatly widened. After all, this mothership was expected to host 120,000 plus citizens from Earth. After decades in space, now the Hope had a population of 200,000 plus, and if there had been no upgrades, they would not be able to fit into the original Noah Two.

Therefore, when the Noah One's passenger woke up, they were led to the toilets by the medical members or volunteers. Along the way, the first thing that came to them was the size of the place, the second was the cleanliness. Of course, the Noah One was also clean, but due to the incomplete warp, there were places on the Noah One that were missing and there were obvious signs of repair, which often made people frown.

The Hope was different. Even though it had undergone plenty of

human upgrades, it was at least one decade newer than the Noah One. Whether it was materials or technology, it was leaps and bounds ahead of the Noah One.

Yun Si was one of the first few to wake up. Of course, he too woke up because of his bladder. Another reason was his alertness. After all, he was a soldier, even though he was attached to the medical unit. However, after the loss of the Noah One, as one of the leaders who led the survivors and as a Diviner, he assumed the role of scout and had maintained that habit until now.

When Yun Si woke up, he realized that he was lying on top of a clean, white bed and was covered by a furry blanket. The blanket was soft and warm; it had the feel of real fur. The surroundings were comfortable and safe. If not for his bladder and alertness, he would've continued sleeping.

The surroundings were quiet other than the occasional footsteps, whispered conversations, and snoring. However, these voices served to prove the safety of the area. Yun Si looked around to find that he was in a large room that housed at least 30 beds. There were plenty of beds, but the place was not cramped. Beside each bed was a metallic table that protruded from the wall. Each of them was decorated with a pot of flowers. Based on the freshness of the flowers, they looked recently picked.

Yun Si quietly took out the needle that was attached to his arm to not wake up the others. His feet searched for a pair of wool slippers, and right then, he realized that he was wearing a wide, cotton shirt. His own garments were probably ruined. After all, they were nothing more than rags. However, he remembered that his diary was in his clothes. It recorded their lives of escape on the cursed planet. It was probably with the high officials of the Noah Two.

Yun Si had too many questions. If this ship was really the Noah Two, how could its technology be so much more advanced than the Noah One's? Furthermore, his conversation with Guang Zhen only

led to more questions... Was this spaceship really sent by Earth's various governments? Or had something happened to Earth?

Yun Si had wandered out of the room as he thought about those things. Outside the room was a long, metallic corridor. He saw several people stationed in the corridor, and there were others in the same outfits. He was accosting them with questions.

Pressured by his bladder, he rushed forward to ask for the toilet's location while quietly studying them.

These people were obviously humans. There were Asians and Caucasians, but there were no Africans. They were all fluent in Chinese even though most knew English. When they were approached in English, they too could answer in English. Their actions were friendly and they always had a smile. The key thing was that Yun Si was certain these were not original members from the Noah One, so in other words, this was really a human spaceship.

When one of them told Yun Si the toilet's location, suddenly, the other one found something on the computer. He raised his head to ask, "Are you Mr. Yang Yun Si?"

Yun Si was startled before answering, "Yes, I am."

The member immediately added, "It's like this, Mr. Yang Yun Si. You are a Homo Evolutis, so the injection you got was different from normal citizens. Now you are allowed to leave this place. At the same time, Commander Wong hoped you would report to the Black Star Troopers' base at the fifth floor as soon as possible. This is your ID card, please keep it close to you. You can use the card to access the computers by the streets to find out about your current location, and it will allow you to take all the public transportation for free."

Yun Si accepted the silver, metallic card dumbly. He did not ask anymore questions, because it was obvious that these people were only messengers. They would not be able to give him the details he

wanted. Black Star Troopers...

"The unit led by Wong Guang Zhen is the Black Star Troopers, isn't it? What kind of military unit is it? Plus, the commander..."

Yun Si thought about these as he found his way to the toilet. There, he met with many who also just woke up. Everyone greeted him with respect. After all, he was quite famous among the survivors, as he had rescued them many times. He greeted them with a smile. When he left the toilet, he ran into another friendly face... Major Jacko.

"...So you too have received the same message?"

These two could be considered old friends. During the escape, other than Austin, who had the highest rank, both of them were one rank below Austin, so they had a good relationship. After all, they had been through death together.

Jacko smiled and said, "Not only you and me, most soldiers have received the same orders. However, the biggest difference was that I was called to report to the Defence Unit Barracks at the 4th floor, while you and other survivors of the mysterious virus were told to report to the Black Star Troopers' base at the fifth floor. Obviously, these are two different military units. It sounds like... in the future, you might be my senior officer."

"They separated us just like that?" Yun Si said suddenly.

When Jacko heard that, he frowned immediately. He looked around before leaning into him to whisper, "You better not say that openly... After all, they have saved all of us. I know you are not satisfied with Commander Wong's decision, but that is the best solution in this situation. Don't get mad, listen to me..."

"My father was in politics, so I was taught these lessons when I was young... Politics is heartless, so what can we do? There are only 3,000 of us... After all, we are all humans too; let's just see how they treat us. For now, the rescue, retreat, and the latest

medical attention, they have done everything they could. Forget about the Noah One, or... I might even become your enemy in the future, because we...

"Have officially joined the Noah Two!"

# Chapter 352: New Life In Space

---

Without surprise, Yun Si became part of the Black Star Troopers. Others who survived the mysterious virus like him were veteran military captains. The highest ranking among them was Yun Si. He was equivalent to the Black Star Troopers' vice unit captain's level. With more time, they would definitely be important members within the Black Star Troopers.

For regular soldiers, they were elite soldiers specially selected to join the Noah One. If one thought about it, they had been protecting the civilians during those dark days for the Noah One without complaint. Be it military training or mission attitude, they were professional, elite soldiers.

Just like that, hundreds of soldiers joined the Hope's Defence Unit, fixing the lack of middle to low level captains in the Defence Unit in one fell swoop. This made Guang Zhen so happy that he went about his day with a smile on his face, an observation that made those who knew him, like Liu Bai and Ebon, shiver all over...

Regardless, following the addition of these hundreds of soldiers into the Hope, the Hope's military power finally became officialised and was no longer half military and half civilian like before. Under this condition, Guang Zhen's plan of the second military construction was pushed ahead...

Yao Yuan was not worried about Guang Zhen. He handed the issues of military completely to him because he himself was having a headache about another thing...

"Too many famous scientists?"

Yao Yuan read the report that Barbie handed him. It showed the number of scientists among the 3,000 survivors. Yes, only the scientists. It did not include researchers and technicians. Scientists alone, there were around 700, including the famous metallurgy expert, Professor Fernando, who conversed with Guang Zhen



earlier. There were many famous scientists, and the fields they were involved in covered almost all of the advanced technology humanity had looked into during the 21st century. It even included talents in the fields of satellite, rocket, and space station construction, experts that the Hope was currently lacking.

Among these 700 people, at least 60 of them had enormous reputations that could only be rivalled by Alan, Silewei, and Garfield on the Hope. Even though reputation did not equate to ability, in the same scientific group, the greater the reputation, the greater the power.

Therefore, once these 60 famed scientists join the Hope, the impact they will bring to the Hope's scientific system will be enormous, especially since the Hope's scientific system had been delineated into levels and posts. Even though it was a meritocratic system, it could still lead to argument and discord, and that would be giant trouble for the Hope.

This was the biggest headache facing Yao Yuan, but thankfully he had the solution to salvage this situation.

After all, the Hope's science had already advanced to the late stage of the 2nd revolution, and it was at least several thousand times more advanced than Earth's technology. Be it hydrogen polymerization, Gaussian technology, electromagnetic technology, energy condensation technique, warp drive, and so on, they were all technologies dissected by the Hope using its own methods in the tens of years of space travel. Just the theories alone would fit a large library, and it would be enough for the scientists from the Noah One to study them for quite some time.

This period of time would be the period for these scientists from the Noah One to familiarize themselves with the scientific body of the Hope. After all, they were all humans and they knew each other, so the gap would eventually be closed.

Yao Yuan laid down his decision on the report. He would give the

scientists a period of rest and then have then gradually approach the science of the 2nd revolution. It would be a slow process because he knew that this was a process that could not be rushed.

Then Yao Yuan picked up the second report. It was written by the Ministry of Health. It was a health report on the 3,000 survivors from the Noah One. Generally speaking, these 3,000 people were fatigued and had small injuries, and they did not carry with them any pathogens or viruses. However, the eldest among them were already in their seventies, so they needed the help of genetic mesomeric technology the most.

However, the Hope was in the middle of a scientific renaissance, and the mesomeric technology had advanced to its generation. It was a new machine utilized by peak level 2 space civilizations. However, due to the incompleteness of the technology, there were only a few successful constructed devices. This combined with the high quality-control on the Hope, the Hope so far only allowed 30 to 50 people to use this new generation mesomeric technology each month. If all of the Noah One's members had to use this technology, even if Yao Yuan gave them the whole monthly quota, it would take years for all of them to finish it.

This was complicated...

According to scientific research, the younger one was when one used the original genetic mesomeric technology, the greater the effect. Elders in their seventies using them would at most extend their lifespan by 30 to 40 years and not double their lifespan. This was the weakness fixed by the second generation genetic mesomeric technology. It resolved this issue, so it was perfect to be used by middle to old age citizens.

However, the more one used the genetic mesomeric technology, the more one's genes would reach an inert state. In other words, the effect would worsen and the lifespan extended would be shorter and shorter. This was why even with the technology, one's lifespan could only be extended by 80 to 90 years. It was because

after continuous exposure, the genes could become inert to the genetic mesomeric technology's effect, or else humanity could have lived on forever, and currently that was still impossible.

Therefore, the older one was, the more important the second generation genetic mesomeric technology, and most of the scientists and researchers from the Noah One were people from such a group...

"...Order the manufacturing department to stop all unimportant operations and fully focus on designing and creating the second generation genetic mesomeric devices. At the same time, the quota for all members under the 50 of age will be delayed to accommodate the members over 50 from the Noah One..."

We shall not focus on the Homo Evolutis and soldiers' experience after being indicted into the Hope's military system, or the Hope's headache when it came to accommodating these 3,000 people. Instead, we shall focus on the Noah One's survivors' experience when they walked out of the epidemic prevention unit and into the Hope's lower levels of residential areas. There were many emotions involved.

How stressed were they when they were on the run on the cursed planet? They had worried about every meal, and the Blue Berets had to go around to search for a clean water source. Safety was always an issue and they had to worry about the attacks of the invisible alien octopus...

Under such circumstances, living itself was a luxury, much less enjoyment and recreation. The ability to lie down for a peaceful sleep was already the greatest luxury then.

Until this moment, where they walked on the sturdy, silver-colored metallic floor, looking at the sea of people around them, people who were not rushing from danger, this kind of feeling... it made the people weep involuntarily.

They had received their assigned room keys, their ID cards, and

the 2,000 H-coins provided by the government. Of course, they still did not know the purchasing power of H-coins, so they did not know how much 2,000 H-coins were worth, but they appreciated the gesture. They had their own rooms, official ID registrations, and government support. Even though they were only new to the Hope, these gestures improved their impression of this government greatly. Therefore, after they left the epidemic prevention center, they departed into groups or alone to their residences, while others wanted to take a stroll on the Hope, to experience this spaceship that was completely different from the Noah One and meet the people who they heard had lived for at least 10 years in space.

Marion Bess was once Earth's most famous physicist. He was selected to join the Noah One's space colonization plan and had brought along his wife, his son, who was also a scientist, and his daughter-in-law to the new planet. Unfortunately, during the dark days, his family perished in the tragedy and now he was all alone. He was walking on a street on the Hope's third floor, window-shopping and clearing his head.

The residential area in the Hope had given him much surprise. There were plenty of citizens there and they had completely gotten used to the life in a metallic spaceship structure. They had managed to delineate out a residential area, and also had allocated space for shops and recreation. There were even chain stores. If it did not have the obvious spaceship structure, it really would look like a normal city. Furthermore, the citizens here had peace written on their faces. Even for those who were rushing, they were rushing for words; there was no anxiety from the fear of their lives...

As Marion looked around, a familiar voice suddenly called him, "Is that... Professor Bess?"

Marion turned around and saw a familiar-looking middle-aged man. However, he was sure he did not know anyone in the age

range of 30 something who looked like this man, so he frowned.

The man first lit up with surprise, but when he saw Marion's shock and confusion, he touched his face with comprehension. "Professor Bess, I am Alan, Alan from England. We met once during the US academic conference. We have even emailed each other multiple times... This look is because of genetic mesomeric technology. Right, you have not used it, right? Don't worry, you'll soon be as young as me."

Marion squinted his eyes to study this man and he soon said with pleasant surprise, "You are Professor Alan? I didn't expect to find you on the Noah Two... No, I mean the Hope. Thank God you are still alive. How's your family?"

Alan was already shaking Marion's hand. He looked about and said, "This is not the place to talk. Come with me, I know a good bar up ahead. They have the best wine. How about a glass to relax? I also want to hear about what happened on the Noah One."

Similarly, Marion wanted to get to know this unfamiliar Hope. He did not hesitate to follow Alan to the bar...

This scene happened all over the Hope. The scientists might've come from different countries, but science itself had no nationality, especially in the 21st century when everything was global. As old friends and colleagues conciliated, the Noah One was like a drop of water flowing into the great pond of the Hope. Other than a few small ripples, it did not cause much fluctuations.

For the 3,000 plus people from the Noah One, their new lives in space were beginning...

# Chapter 353: Cracking the Code

---

Derma was once Earth's most famed electronic engineer. His programs were used in everything from satellites, to space stations, to space fighter jets. He was part of the team responsible for writing the computer system for the Noah One and Two's central mainframe. Naturally, he was a member of the Noah One.

Derma knew he was lucky. Yes, life on the cursed planet was not pretty and he almost lost his life, but he eventually survived, and not only that, his wife and 8-year-old daughter survived as well... In the original Noah One's several ten thousand members, families like his were rare, and after his whole family had survived to get on the Hope, Derma promised he would be the most devout person to give thanks back to God for blessing his family... Of course, he was deeply appreciative of the Hope's government too.

"...Earth is gone and all human society was destroyed with it. Humanity is only left with this Hope government and I wish to find a suitable job as soon as possible. Of course, I wish to be given a contract that is suitable for my standing..."

This was an email Derma wrote to the Hope's electronic science department. It had been half a month since his family left the epidemic prevention center. They had since moved into their new home, a building secluded in a peaceful residential area. It had two bedrooms and one living room. It was just big enough for a family of his size to feel comfortable.

Furthermore, the area had great amenities and his neighbors were all friendly people. The residential area also had green pottery and easy access to public transportation. It was 2 streets away from the Market Street and 4 streets away from a 3D manipulated garden. His wife and daughter were satisfied with the arrangement.

The only complaint was that they were only left with three-

fourths of the government allowance. After all, no matter how powerful the H-coins were, there were too many things needed to be purchased for a new family. Furthermore, his family had not had a good wine, steak, and cigar for a very long time. These all would consume money, and in just half a month, they were only left with 1,500 H-coins in their account. This made Derma worried.

Initially, Derma thought he and the rest of the scientists would be integrated into the government like the Noah One's soldiers. After all, his work was fixed, and there was nothing else he could have done with his expertise. However, half a month later, there was still no news. He was worried and bought several papers to locate the contact information of the department he would belong in.

After Derma sent the email, his wife passed him a glass of coffee. He took a sip of it and said with pleasant surprise, "This is such a good smell. Freshly ground coffee beans?"

His wife was a 30 something beautiful European woman. She replied with a gentle smile, "Yes, it is. When I was out shopping today, I saw these new coffee beans on the market. Initially, I did not intend to buy it, but the line was so long and the stock was running out. I couldn't help myself and bought some. I was surprised that it had such a strong coffee smell; it is even better than the special blend Kona coffee that we used to get back on Earth. I really did not expect this spaceship to be able to grow such pure coffee beans, or maybe it's leftover stock taken from Earth."

Derma took another enjoyable sip of the coffee and said, "I really have a hard time believing this is the Noah Two. The outside has not changed much, but the inside has changed a lot. Furthermore, how many people are there on this ship? The papers have a daily population estimate, and today, there are already 246,000 people. They have to feed so many people, so what if they had brought the whole Earth's supplies? This spaceship has been travelling in space for at least ten years, meaning they would have finished Earth's

stock a long time ago, so these things like these coffee beans must be cultivated right on this ship. After all... this spaceship is already a product from the later 4th revolution."

In the middle of their conversation about the price of the coffee beans being 170 plus H-coins for 1,000 grams, a suddenly ring came from the computer. Both of them turned to see the image of a small envelope appear on screen. It looked the real thing.

They were no longer shocked by this 3D imaging technology on the Hope. Initially, they were shocked that an image could be projected in thin air, but after a while, they got used to it.

Derma extended his finger to press the envelope and it opened to reveal a long english reply. He and his wife were reading the content.

"...Mr. Derma, we have received your email and are impressed by your fiery passion. As you have said, the Hope is humanity's last and only home, therefore we must work hard to protect it...

"...Currently, our research team has stumbled across a conundrum that requires the expertise of someone just like yourself. If possible, please come to the Hope's fourth floor Area XX for an interview at 10 AN tomorrow. We will definitely draft a contract that is to your satisfaction."

Derma shared a look with his wife and saw the joy in each other's eyes. They thought that since the Hope had left him hanging for half a month, they would not need someone like him. After all, his thoughts had been stuck in the 21st century level. He therefore did not have much hope in the email, but who would have thought that they would respond only after a few minutes, and from the way the email was worded, they had been waiting for him to write them.

In that case.... Why wouldn't the government just call him in for work directly?



In the electronic department, Da Bing, who had been acting as the leader, was also not quite satisfied with Yao Yuan and his order that stated they could not actively enlist the scientists from the Noah One, not even the technicians and interns, to work for them. They had to be given enough time to familiarize themselves with the life on the Hope and to repair their hearts that were broken on the cursed planet. Unless the scientists actively requested to join a certain task force, they were not allowed to reach out to them.

As the father of electronics on the Hope and dubbed the most brilliant scientist rivalling the Whisperers, Da Bing's standing on the Hope had a meteoric rise. He not only became the head of all electronic committees, he was also one of the few scientists who could stand his ground in front of Yao Yuan. Therefore, he naturally had access to the list of survivors from the Noah One. It had about 40 electronic talents he could not wait to get his hands on, and Derma was one of them. No, more accurately, Da Bing was most excited about Derma from the 40 people.

However, due to the difference in technological levels, Derma now was no better than a normal intern, but the real test of scientific study was intelligence and talent. They say success is 99 percent hard work and 1 percent talent, but in science, success is 70 talent and the rest hard work!

If a scientist was born a genius, he would make a name for himself at age 20 and then retire to enjoy the labour of his genius when he is 40. Derma, who was only 40, was such a genius. Give him a little more time to absorb the scientific knowledge the Hope could provide and by then, he would be unrivalled.

Therefore, when Da Bing received Derma's email, he was beyond excited, especially since he had ran into a conundrum that needed the help of many fresh perspectives.

After Da Bing sent his mail and received Derma's reply several minutes later, he returned to the hall with a satisfied smile. In it was a silver-white metallic product, and due to its immense size, it

had to be set on the floor in the horizontal way. Even so, they still needed to use a ladder to get to the top of the thing.

This was the native machine Guang Zhen's group had retrieved from the planet, the central computer of the level 3 space civilization. After they returned, the computer was sent to the electronic department that was on the fourth floor. In fact, there were 10 Black Star Troopers guarding the place for 24 hours to prevent theft or damage.

Da Bing studied this large contraption and the hundred something people surrounding it and sighed. He joined the team to check up on their progress.

The central computer used the plasma energy source. Even though the Hope could already produce this type of energy, the rate of conversion was still too low. After all, the Hope still had not reached the stage of having to use plasma energy. The energy required to activate this computer would exhaust 80 percent of the Hope's energy storage, but... that was only the beginning.

The computer's internal data used quantum programming; however, due to the language difference and the randomness of quantum systems, it was hard to crack. Last but not least, there was also an artificial AI precursor living inside this central computer!

This was the biggest issue facing Da Bing. If he destroyed this AI, then the information within would be lost, but if they kept this AI... as a non-human created AI, it was like keeping a ticking time bomb; it would be a hidden threat to the Hope, and no one would be able to accept that.

So... What should he do?!

# Chapter 354: Code: Darkness

---

"Quantum programming? Programming beyond 0s and 1s? AI system?"

Derma studied the information in his hands, and he was excited like he was looking at a mountain of treasure. This made people around him laugh as when they thought back to how they acted when they saw the information poured in from the junkyard civilization, they were more ecstatic than he was.

Derma roughly flipped through the information and he stood up seriously to tell Da Bing, "Leader Wang, you have to let me stay in this lab. Even though currently I am of no help to the group, give me three months... no, one month, and I will try my best to catch up to the rest."

Da Bing broke into a smile. He said as he shook Derma's hands, "Of course, we gladly welcome Mr. Derma's addition to our team. I am sure Mr. Derma will be able to contribute greatly to our progress in the future. A word of reminder, because this information has some parts that are not revealed to the public yet, so I hope Mr. Derma will uphold the confidential clause. Furthermore, I hope Mr. Derma can take a look at this contract."

Then Da Bing passed Derma a contract and Derma started reading it in earnest. This was the difference between eastern and western societies, the attitude towards money. Even though eastern societies might value wealth, they would not discuss it openly, because flaunting wealth was not considered moral. On the other hand, the western society did not see it the same way. As long as the wealth was acquired through hard work, there was no shame in it.

This contract detailed Derma's future salary, so he was extra serious when studying it.

The contract was surprisingly nice. First, Derma would be

awarded the title of Academician. In this research facility, there were only 5 who had that title. Naturally, Derma would have benefits suitable for an Academician, like a personal lab, his own group of researchers and interns, his own annual quota of research grant and supply, monthly allowance. It also contained many benefits, like annual paid leave and family benefits.

Derma was very satisfied with the contract, especially the salary. After almost a month on the Hope, he was familiar with H-coin's purchasing power, and his salary was enough for his family to lead a wealthy lifestyle; he would even have enough to dabble in investment and stuff. In any case, he was very satisfied with the contract.

Therefore, Derma signed the contract without hesitation. Then he would begin his work there in a month as a paid intern.

After sending Derma away, Da Bing did not rest but spent the whole night trying to solve this AI dilemma. There were the same two choices, either break down the AI using force and pray that the information within was not damaged or keep the AI and use some method to entice it to give up its information.

"What should I do..."

Like usual, Da Bing spent his time at the lab until midnight. This was his personal habit, as the most perfect time for thinking was when it was quiet and dark, and this perfectly aligned with how the public thought of him. Only by pure hard work would a normal person be able to rival a Whisperer's brilliance.

"Whisperers... Even they would not be able to solve this problem."

Da Bing laughed bitterly. In fact, only he and the person who gave him this power knew that he was not a normal human being and that he was indeed a Whisperer. However, curiously enough, he could not sense the presence of other Homo Evolutis, and they, including Yao Yuan, the All-Rounder, could not sense his presence.

However, he was indubitably a Whisperer...

"No, it can be solved..."

Suddenly, a female voice appeared in Da Bing's ears. He was startled before asking quickly in his mind, "Is that you? Master, do you have the solution to this problem?"

The female voice was silent for a while before continuing with another subject, "Do you still remember what we said when I first awarded you this power?"

Da Bing was startled and then his face was suffused with seriousness... no, extreme seriousness with an undertone of religious fervour.

"Yes, there are many idiots in this world, and while stupidity is not their fault, using their stupidity to treat others and even attempting to influence humanity's future, that is a sin... Only a handful of elites can really direct the future, only we the few elites have the ability of saving humanity..."

"After the Hope left Earth, many events have proved this point. From the appearance of Homo Evolutis and the multiple times that our great leader Yao Yuan saved our lives, this proves that only the elites can really save humanity!"

"Of course, our goal is for the good of humanity and to preserve human civilization. Therefore, when the idiots are not indulging in their stupidity, we can tolerate their idiocy and try our best to salvage them from the sin of stupidity. We will hide ourselves in the darkness, we will become darkness, watching over everything and saving everything. Until we cannot tolerate this stupidity or until this stupidity is leading humanity towards destruction, then this piece of darkness will swallow the idiots so that our great leader, Yao Yuan, can continue his domination!"

Even though Da Bing did not say any words. in his mind, his volume as he chanted these words was getting louder. It was like

he was pouring out his heart and mind, and his face was suffused with a sacred glow like he was going to sacrifice himself for his greater ideal at any moment.

"Yes, that is our mission, to hide in the dark, to watch over everything, to protect everything, and to shelter our great leader, Yao Yuan. When he needs us, we will decimate those dirty politicians... But that is not doable by will alone, we still need power."

"Power?" Da Bing nodded silently and offered in his mind, "Do you need my contribution? I can still help in terms of weapon electronic programming."

"No, there's no need for your contribution yet, your position is too sensitive at the moment. Even though the great leader did not suspect anything, one of the idiots, Wong Guang Zhen, is watching you closely. Currently, there are at least 3 hidden watchers observing you, so you mustn't act rashly... Of course, you are still an instrumental part of the plan," the female voice continued.

Da Bing asked immediately, "Then please tell me what can I do."

"We need this AI. Of course, not for it to enter the Hope's server. This AI will be sealed as our own AI precursor. Last time, when you wrote the AI precursor, you did not add in any additional programming and gave it its own original presence. That was a job well done. This is because Bo Li has checked the AI, and if you had not done that, our organization would have been exposed," the female voice continued.

"Our organization already has quite a few members, but everyone is in hiding. We have the same ideals; we are not traitors, we are not anarchists, we are people searching for a better future for humanity. Regardless of the ideals, we need power to support it...

"This AI precursor will greatly increase our power, to help us increase our fighting power. This plan is codnamed... Darkness.

"Go forth, my child, use your Whisperer's power to unlock this AI's secret. Communicate with it, ensure its safety, but it will be in a sealed condition for a long time. This is its final opportunity; if it refuses to cooperate, then you destroy it rather than allowing it the chance to harm the Hope... Of course, if possible, get as much information as you can about level 3 space civilizations before you do all that.

"Codename: Darkness."

About a week later, Yao Yuan received the emergency news regarding the level 3 space civilization's central computer. He and Guang Zhen rushed to the scene that had been charred and the central computer was in broken pieces.

"...I will fill out the report to detail the whole event. I am to blame, I shall request to stand down from my leader post."

When Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen arrived, a defeated Da Bing was sitting on the chair. His arm was bleeding and pieces from the explosion had obviously hurt his skin.

"We have been attempting to try to communicate with the AI within, and honestly we have come upon great improvement. We tried giving it a small internet server platform as a sign of our peaceful intention, hoping it would give us some technological information in return. We let our guard down. Earlier, the AI controlled the lab's server system and tried to hack its way into the Hope's central mainframe. In that emergency moment, I called the trooper on duty and ordered them to destroy the central computer," Da Bing silently relayed the event to the two of them.

Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen turned to look at the mentioned trooper. It was Ji Jie, who proved her mettle leading the ship during the cursed planet crisis. Ji Jie nodded in confirmation. Her side of the story was not different from Da Bing's.

Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen were naturally saddened by this news. Such an important and valuable level 3 space civilization's central

computer was ruined just like that. Of course, they could not blame Da Bing. If anything, they praised his resoluteness. If not for his clear head in a crisis, the AI would have taken over the Hope, and that would've been a real disaster.

Therefore, both of them consoled Da Bing and denied his offer of resignation. Thankfully, nothing was lost, because before the central computer was destroyed, Da Bing managed to salvage some technological information from the AI. When Yao Yuan read them, he was beyond joy.

One of them was about increasing the initial speed of warp drive, the other about electromagnetized ECS system, another about the plasma energy reservoir, and last but not least...

The key defence method of level 3 space civilizations!

Plasma energy shield!



# Chapter 355: Plasma Energy Shield

---

Yao Yuan picked up a glass of tea and stood at the side glass window of a room in the Hope. Beside him, a few officers were chatting. It was a rare Sunday holiday, but even so, Yao Yuan still had a few minor chores to deal with. However, he knew a day of peace was rare, so he finished his chore and decided to go for a walk.

People from the Noah One had successfully melted into the big family of the Hope. There were still some altercations, but since those were easily resolved at the end of the day, everyone was dealing with humans.

Furthermore, the Noah One's people were rescued when they were in the deepest danger. The poignancy and shock was beyond description when they were ushered from certain death into the relative safety of the Hope. In other words, they only had appreciation in their hearts and were willing to assimilate into the Hope's society... Then again, even if they were unwilling, Earth was gone and they were in space, what choices did they have?

Therefore, due to these many reasons, the Noah One's people had successfully assimilated into the Hope without causing much trouble. Until now, the Hope had spent two months in warp drive. Other than assimilating the people from the Noah One, most time was spent in waiting.

The warp drive was as predicted by most scientists. In this space, the surroundings contained nothing but emptiness because this space's speed was quicker than light. Even though this space could be said to be in a standstill, internal lighting still worked normally, but outside of this space, space was a giant slice of darkness.

Warp drive was an extremely long process. Even though they had passed light speed, the cosmos was large, so moving from one sun to the next could only be calculated in light years, and this warp

drive was expected to last for one year and four months. Currently, the Hope existed in this waiting space, waiting to exit from warp drive space.

There was another reason... because this warp drive had no certain destination. Even though the general direction had been decided, it was heading towards a sun that did not have a crowded planet system. However, since they had entered warp drive while they were within a solar system, there had to be a variation in the destination. Just think about it, a slight tremor for a sniper could cause a variation of 1 or 2 meters after the bullet travelled for several thousand meters; therefore, the variation must have been bigger for warp drive that had its distance calculated in light years.

Therefore, the Hope was not only waiting for the warp drive to end but also waiting for the unknown future. It was similar to their normal space warp. The difference was that this time it would be a long one year and four months, while it would be a blink of an eye if it was a space warp.

Yao Yuan looked out the window and studied the black emptiness. There was nothing in space other than the few alien vassals. By now, Yao Yuan understood the true meaning of space decay. This empty space was not really space, and the real space... that was the starting point of the destruction of the cosmos.

"Everyone, please excuse me, I have to go to the lab," Yao Yuan put down his glass of tea and told the officers.

Indeed, Yao Yuan had been visiting the lab these past few days. The key reason was still the few technologies taken from the level 3 space civilization's central computer. They were all advanced technology, be it the improvement to warp drive, the ECS system's anti electromagnetism, or the storage for the plasma energy or the plasma energy shield.

Even though it was infuriating that they had only gained these few technologies and not that level 3 space civilization's full

technology tree, it was still better than nothing. After all, everyone knew what happened. The alien AI was indeed a time bomb that threatened the Hope. The emergency called for its destruction, so Yao Yuan agreed with Da Bing's decision. These few technologies could be counted as spoils of war, and some was still better than none, right?

Furthermore, these few technologies... Just the plasma energy reservoir and plasma energy shield alone were enough to solve the Hope's biggest issue.

First of all, the Hope currently was using all Gaussian weapons. The only plasma weapon was the Hope's ultimate weapon, the Genesis. Everyone on the Hope knew about the Gaussian weapons' power. Without electromagnetic shields, even the space armors would not be able to withstand the assault of Gaussian rifles.

Then why level 2 space civilizations, when facing level 3 space civilizations, would become so useless and powerless. Even if a level 2 space civilization had a fleet of spaceships and a level 3 space civilization only had one, the former still had to run.

The answer was defense mechanism. Level 3 space civilizations did have many technologies that were more advanced than that of level 2 space civilizations, in the context of a war, the core difference was that level 3 space civilizations had plasma energy shields. These shields could not only defend against Gaussian weapons' bullets but also the Genesis' energy beams. While level 2 space civilizations' electromagnetic shields could only defend against physical bullets and not plasma attacks!

Therefore, during a war between these two levels of space civilization, one party could end the war without taking any damage, and that was the biggest difference between level 2 and level 3 space civilizations. Actually, this was not limited to level 2 and level 3 space civilizations, it was the same for level 4, 5, and 6 space civilizations. If I could hit you but you could not hit me, there would be a clear winner.

Actually, the Hope had been researching plasma shields, but due to the lack of research information, the progress was stuck on many key issues like instantaneous energy charge, energy storage, energy condensation, and the like. This range of techniques was not available to level 2 space civilizations, and mankind would only understand them after they being a level 2 space civilization for several decades.

But now, the Hope had received all the information about the plasma energy shield, including the most esoteric parts, and it looked like the Hope was close to constructing plasma shield, but in reality...

It was not really so!

"...Impossible. To perfect the plasma shield technology in one year and two months and equip the whole ship with it is purely impossible," Bo Li answered without taking her eyes off her computer.

Yao Yuan was helpless, like he always was before Bo Li. He stood up beside her and asked, "What are the difficulties? Haven't we gotten all the necessary information? Is it because of supply, material, or people? I can give you a larger quota if that is needed..."

"It's not that," Bo Li directly interrupted Yao Yuan. She raised her head and her eyes stared right at Yao Yuan. "It is not that, the quota for research is more than enough and there are enough people working on it. The main issue is the lack of research knowledge, and that is not something that can be fixed easily... Fine, I ask you this, do you know what the best plasma energy source is?"

Yao Yuan shook his head blankly and Bo Li answered, "It is the cold agglutination process. In other words, the upgraded version of the hydrogen-atom reactors we currently have. We are using normal hydrogen reactors now and we require extremely high

temperatures to induce polymerization to release energy. This kind of situation will not contribute to cold agglutination. We need a new upgrade to our many devices, like energy storage blocks. Other than that, even our most basic metallurgy technology needs to improve as well...

"To put it simply, imagine a country during World War I receiving the blueprint for weapons in the 21st century. Yes, theoretically, they can build it, but practically, it is not going to be easy. From the metals, manufacturing, to ammunition, they each require a large amount of time to research and adopt. Even after that, there is still the question of adaptation to current technology..."

Yao Yuan exhaled to interrupt Bo Li, "I have thought about all that. I do know it is difficult to make use of the plasma energy shield, but you have to consider my trump card and choice. The trump card the Hope has now is our immense number of Homo Evolutis and the Space Combat Jets they pilot, right? From a certain perspective, this team can easily destroy a level 2 space civilization and might even stand a chance against level 3 space civilization, but our Homo Evolutis warriors are very important, and there is no way for us to replace the ones that we have lost. If possible, I also do not demand a perfect plasma shield technology, but at least can you give me a second best replacement? Like a plasma shield generator that has a short life span..."

"You have to understand, when we exit space warp, we might be facing innumerable level 2 space civilizations and level 3 space civilizations..."

At this point, Yao Yuan's eyes darkened like...

He was looking into the far future!

# Chapter 356: Prediction and Military Exercise

---

"...As the strategist group predicted, this will be most likely what the Hope will run into next."

In a war meeting room somewhere on the Hope's fifth floor, every soldier with the rank of major and above from the Defense Unit as well as the unit leaders and vice leaders from the Black Star Troopers were gathered. This was the fifth month after the Hope entered warp drive. In these five months, peace reigned, and with the absorption of the Noah One's military into the Hope, finally, this month was also the military restructuring Guang Zhen was waiting for.

Of course, at the same time as the military restructuring, a group of strategists were thinking about the Hope's future. This was delineated into many different categories. One was the prediction about the Hope's scientific progress. So far, it was already Year 16 according to the Hope Calendar, and the Hope had 246,000 population. The number had almost doubled compared to the population that they started with when they left Earth, which was 120,000.

In these 16 years, the Hope had evolved from a level 1 space civilization to a middle tier level 2 space civilization with access to some level 3 space civilization technology in one fell swoop. This was practically a miracle. If a normal space civilization had to go about this the normal way, it would take thousands of years, but the Hope managed it in such a short amount of time, and not only that, with a small amount of population as well.

Of course, optimistic development now did not mean it would be the same for the future. Therefore, the idea given by the strategist group was for the Hope to become a level 3 space civilization as soon as possible and have no contact with other space civilizations

before that. After all, the Hope was the only force available to humanity, unlike other level 2 space civilizations that had access to millions of spaceships. It was a wide discrepancy. Even with so many Homo Evolutis, a war would probably only lead to an escape.

Therefore, until humanity became level 3 space civilization, they had to find a quiet space for humans to self-improve for about 30 to 50 years before they could interact with the other space civilizations without fear.

But... could things really go how they wanted?

After the investigation by many scientists and elaboration by the Thinkers, they had come up with a few most likely future scenarios for the Hope.

First, they would find themselves in space decay. Space decay spread in light speed and everything would be in collapse range. Everything, including the sun, the planets, supernova, and even black holes, would be consumed as the cosmos began its new birth. There was no way to run!

Of course, the ability to be able to travel over light speed in the cosmos was already a confirmed reality. Similarly, using super light speed to communicate and to carry out surveillance was definitely something possible. Furthermore, from the information given by Blue 6, even though level 4 space civilizations and above were extremely rare in space, it did not mean that they did not exist. They would normally have a large amount of low level space race vassals who could provide them with constant supplies or resources and 'soul' as well as act as cannon fodder when they were in a war with other middle tier space civilization.

Therefore, those middle tier space civilizations would be able to detect the presence of space decay when they were travelling in super light speed and they would not hesitate to share the news with their vassal civilizations. In that case, one could imagine... there would be many space civilizations heading towards the

fringe edge of the solar system!

The Hope was also heading towards the same destination. This meant that the Hope would be dropped in a pool of alien civilizations when it exited warp drive...

There was also this piece of information taken from Blue 6. There was a great distance to cross between solar systems. The distance was so big that even with wormhole technology or star gate technology, the distance might not be crossable with one warp. This was no longer a distance calculated in several thousand light years but several billion light years!

Therefore, to traverse from one solar system to another, other than high tier space civilizations, everyone had to follow the natural star path.

What star path, Blue 6 had no clue, but it was something that every level 3 space civilization knew a bit about. It was not some valuable information, just the general direction of the path. Some civilizations guessed these were the paths used by the legendary god tier space civilizations while others thought this was a miraculous path formed by the cosmos naturally. Regardless of the type, it was the only way middle to low tier space civilizations could use to travel from one solar system to the next.

Ren Tao, Yao Yuan, and Xiao Niao had a private discussion with the group of scientists. The combined brainpower of two and a half thinkers and the large group of scientists came to the conclusion that the Hope's space warp was temporarily disabled. Perhaps the high tier space civilizations were attempting to prevent the demonized race within this solar system from escaping, so they sealed off the ability to space warp and initiated a space decay for the purpose of 'extermination'. How to initiate space decay and whether it could be stopped were still unknown. The Hope had no inkling to the kind of technological level a high tier space civilization had achieved, so everything was only guesswork.



However, if high tier space civilizations could initiate space decay, then it was logical that they had a method to stop it, or else the space decay's chain reaction would eventually cause the whole cosmos to collapse. No matter how big the cosmos was, the effective range of the space decay was endless. Eventually, the high tier space civilizations themselves would be sucked into it. Therefore, they had to have a way to stop space decay.

Then, when would they stop it?

Everyone came to the same answer... until the whole solar system disappeared!

In that case, then the limitation on the Hope's space warp engine would probably be as large as the solar system itself. In other words, as long as they left the solar system, there was a high possibility that the space warp engine could be used again.

Therefore, the Hope had to get to the star path and use it to leave this solar system!

It was due to this decision that the war meeting was held. It was to discuss the possible danger encountered from when the Hope exited warp drive to when they reached the star path.

After Guang Zhen's vice commander, Liu Bai, made his report, Guang Zhen took the stage to speak. "My fellow comrades, I believe everyone here knows about the severity of the situation. Those who are still confused about the conditions we're facing can look it up on the military website using your personal ID. Of course, due to confidentiality clause, only those with the rank of major or trooper unit leader or vice leader can access the information... In any case, our situation is not optimistic. According to the prediction by the Academy, it will be 30 years of travelling to get to the star path Blue 6 mentioned from the space we are predicted to exit. Along the way, we will pass by 14 shelters and probably rub shoulders with thousands of level 2 space civilizations and one to five level 3 space civilizations.

"I am sure everyone knows about the Hope's current condition. Our energy and material supply are approaching the danger line. Therefore, we cannot use the space warp engine. Even if we could, we would not dare to. In any case, we will have to stop at one of the shelters to refill our supplies, and that will be a big challenge for the Hope."

Guang Zhen then shared a look with Yao Yuan, who was sitting at the front row. The latter nodded imperceptibly and Guang Zhen continued, "Here, we will use the downtime of this escape warp to have a military exercise. The Defense Unit will be responsible to defend the interior of the Hope by setting multi-layer barricades and by using internal siege engines. The Black Star Troopers, on the other hand, will handle external defense using the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s and the second generation space armors with landing-use exoskeletons that will be released later this year. At the same time, due to the lack of human resources, after a long discussion among the Barracks' higher officials...

"We will be employing our first fully AI-automated military unit. Of course, for precaution, this unit's number will be small and they will only be used as a last resort."

When Guang Zhen reached this point, a 3D image appeared before everyone's eyes. Guang Zhen continued, "This is the map pointing out the area each unit will be responsible for and the unit's individual mission. Of course, the mission might change according to the situation of the war; however, before that, these will be each unit's area to defend. At the end of this month, all Defense Unit soldiers and Black Star Troopers will combine to commit to a military exercise. At the same time, we will inform the battleships of our vassal race to cooperate with the exercise to examine the Hope's current fighting power.

"I know I am sounding like a broken record, but still I have to repeat... The Hope's government is a young, vibrant government system. We do not value nepotism or cronyism but meritocracy. If

you have the goods, then the rewards will be yours. This will be the spirit of this upcoming military exercise as well. No matter whether you are originally from the Hope or you are survivors from the Noah One, we will not focus on your original ranking or age or experience but your ability. Therefore, the Barracks decided to open up more major slots to reward the soldiers who manage to perform brilliantly in this upcoming military exercise...

"I anticipate great results from all of you. Dismissed!"

# Chapter 357: Emissary of Peace

---

"Military exercise? That's not a bad idea; I have not come across such a lively space civilization before."

Blue 6 sat leisurely in his own "mansion". Even though it was no comparison to his mansion back in the Blue Race, according to his understanding, this was one of the rarest large residences on the Hope. It had complete amenities, including his personal team training center, and he was very satisfied.

He was enjoying a glass of red wine when his adjutant told him about the Hope's military exercise... It was worth noting that he had fallen in love with red wine, as it was tastier than the blood that he used to enjoy. Because he was still in the Hope, the wine was also full of "soul" and it soothed his body. Most importantly, it was not expensive, so he could enjoy it daily with his high income.

After Blue 6's earlier lamentation, he added, "Have you seen such a lively space civilization before? Their goals and plans are measured in days or months. Any goals that pass the measurement of years are rare. It is impossible for this kind of space civilization not to grow."

The other members from Blue Race nodded in agreement. In fact, this was the biggest difference between human beings and most space civilizations.

Humanity left Earth in the 21st century when all work was calculated in terms of hours and only big projects used months or years. Think about it, in that era, electronics like computers were updated every few months or years and the technology updated every year. It was hard to not be fast-living in that era.

But what about space civilizations? Following the advent of scientific bottlenecks, the time it took to finish researching every technology would be longer and longer, going from several decades to several millennia. The introduction of genetic mesomeric

technology also extended the lifespan of space civilizations. Lastly, any travel from one location to another would take decades to millennia, one space war could also last that long, and societal restructuring would probably take thousands of years to complete.

For space civilizations, years was a small measurement of time because they could not be faster even if they wanted to. Following the start of race deterioration, this would become even more obvious.

Almost all level 1 space civilizations that progressed to level 2 space civilization had this concept of time. There was no level 2 space civilization that maintained the concept of time that was common thousands of years ago during the scientific renaissance. For them, time was mostly spent wasted during space travel. To use several years to finish reading a book was something common for them. Military exercises would only occur when there was a new generation of weapons, or every several hundred years...

But humanity was completely different!

Humanity did not enter space with that concept of time in mind. Furthermore, they entered the cosmos without aid. They were alone, had no base, no support, and no mother race. From the very beginning, there were only several ten thousand human beings. There was no technology, no energy, no supply, they had practically nothing when they left Earth.

Under these circumstances, humanity could only allay their anxiety through hard work. Combined with the concept of time they had inherited, it was only 16 years from when they left Earth. In the eyes of other space civilizations, this level 2 space civilization was crazily hardworking. The workload of one human being was equal to the workload of one month or more for other civilizations. It was as Blue 6 claimed, it was hard for such a space civilization not to progress and improve.

Blue 6 finished the rest of his wine in one gulp. He stood up and

smiled. "Military exercise, you say? Wonderful idea. By the way, when was the Blue Race's last military exercise?"

The adjutant replied respectfully, "Your Highness, it was about 246 years ago. If we were still with Blue Race, the next military exercise would probably happen in another 50 years."

Blue 6 snapped his fingers and said excitedly, "Yes, military exercise, it is going to be marvellous... Perhaps this is the perfect opportunity to gain the military designation for our Ministry of Foreign Affairs. I shall go meet with the Chancellor to ask for a mission for this ministry."

Just like that, about half an hour later, Blue 6, his adjutants, and two Black Star Troopers arrived at Yao Yuan's office. Yao Yuan was incredibly busy for the past two days because military exercise was not as simple as it seemed. There were goals to set, new strategies, weapons, combinations to test, the supply to exhaust, and to familiarize with the actions of the alien vassals. These were heavy workloads. There were the Barracks and the Hall of Innovation and Communications to him, but Yao Yuan still needed to get personally involved in many things.

"Ol' Wong, hear me out. Do we really need to send out so many troops? This is around 95 percent of our total military force," Yao Yuan told Guang Zhen, who was sipping tea before him as he read through the document.

Guang Zhen was about to take another sip when he smiled and said, "We are in the warp drive, so it is the perfect opportunity to train the soldiers. Furthermore, this is perfect for the military from the Noah One to get used to the Hope's military system... Don't tell me, we don't have enough supplies?"

Yao Yuan laughed bitterly and massaged his temples. "That is true, but not yet to the level that will hinder the military exercise. I'm just thinking about whether it's worth it or not... So be it, we can lose some supplies. After all, if the situation demands it, we

can get more from the alien vassals. In any case, we will follow your suggestion, Ol' Wong. The military prowess of the Hope does need improvement."

Then Barbie came into the room to tell Yao Yuan that Blue 6 was outside waiting to have an audience with him.

When they heard the term "have an audience," Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen shook their heads. Looks like Blue 6 had really taken Yao Yuan as the emperor. Then again, this might not be a bad thing. For someone from a feudal society, the emperor was the highest existence, and this meant that Blue 6 had deep respect towards Yao Yuan.

Half an hour later, when Blue 6 left with deep satisfaction, Guang Zhen and Yao Yuan were still in the office. As Blue 6 closed the door behind him, Guang Zhen could not help but ask, "Ol' Yao, you really plan to let him and those who are tasked to watch over him join the military exercise?"

"Why not?" Yao Yuan smiled as he looked at Guang Zhen. He stood up to pour himself another cup of tea and said, "I don't need to tell you about humanity's current situation... We are very weak, and since we managed to kind of join the ranks of space civilizations, then we have to make use of this opportunity. Be a little kinder. We Chinese have a brilliant saying: the sea can hold the water from thousands of rivers, it's big because of its capacity. A person is great when he can be tolerant and forgiving to many other people. It is because we are weak now that we have to be tolerant and forgiving. As long as it does not harm us humans, then we should give more chances to these alien vassals. There is nothing wrong about that, it proves that they are fighting for us humans.

"Furthermore, Blue 6's unit is our human unit. If he really has some sinister plan, they will not allow him to do anything to harm us..."

Blue 6 was excited on his way back because he finally managed to earn a military designation for his own unit. Even though it was still part of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, the unit was called emissaries of peace. As Blue 6 said, we come in peace, but if you do not accept this peace, then we will return with an army and cannons!

An adjutant beside him was confused, so he asked, "Your Highness, why are you so excited over an army designation? Yes, our ministry's military system has many cosmic adapters, but our assigned battle fleet was still too small, there is barely any... Gaining the designation doesn't mean that we can branch off on our own."

Blue 6 shook his head. "The education you have received is lacking, so you might not understand this. This is something taught to the Blue Race's royalty only, it is the power of official titles... If we do not have a designation, then our unit will always be the ministry's private army and none of our actions can be considered as official. We might even be abandoned by humanity when the situation calls for it. Do you all understand it now? The Blue Race at many times will also do something like this...

"But it is different with an official designation. This means that it is part of humanity's official army, so it will be protected under the human law and the Emperor will not be able to abandon it as he wishes. Then, the Ministry of Foreign Affairs' actions will be given an official weight, like the power to initiate war..."

Here, Blue 6 looked around and continued, "Furthermore, this is a wonderful method to help us assimilate into human society. In fact, if we manage to successfully escape this solar system, I plan to marry a lady from a great house. Her father is a member of the House of Representatives. By the way, I have handed our DNA over to the cosmic adapter to be tested and it shows that we can indeed have a future progeny with human beings. These are all great ways for us to assimilate into human society..."



"I'm not sure whether you noticed this or not, but the human civilization is still guarded against us. For example, until now we have not been invited to visit their history archives. That is the most basic gesture to signify their acceptance of us, but until now, that has not been done. Therefore, we have to try harder to assimilate into human society..."

Blue 6 paused as a severe expression fell over his face and he swore, "This civilization that I have fallen in love with... I will definitely assimilate into it!"

## Chapter 358: New Whisperer

---

Yang Yun Si flung his arm out of frustration. He looked at the time recorded on the second generation space armor from his small dash. His maximum speed was only 200 plus meters per second. This was already considered fast among Black Star Troopers, but this was a standard mixing both S-grade and non-S-grade troopers!

It was common knowledge that Homo Evolutis could be delineated into different levels. S-grade Homo Evolutis had access to special powers, like the Whisperer, Thinker, Perceptor, and the like. The rest were non-S-grade Homo Evolutis. They did not have any power, but they were definitely still Homo Evolutis.

There was a great difference between the two types of Homo Evolutis in combat as well. In general, when both were using the same equipment and weapons, one S-grade Homo Evolutis could rival ten non-S grade Homo Evolutis. And Yun Si's speed could only be considered a middle-low tier among the S-grade Homo Evolutis!

This was a blow to Yun Si's pride. He originally looked down on the Hope's military system. After all, those soldiers were consisted of a bunch of civilian refugees that escaped from Earth, while the military from the Noah One was hand-picked from authentic military elites. This was a point of pride for Yun Si, and naturally he had a sense of arrogance about it.

However, he was taught a harsh lesson when he joined the Black Star Troopers and was exposed to the crazy training of the troopers. After participating in the internal sparring among Black Star Troopers and the recent military exercise, he was given the shock of his life. Not only him, even the elites from Blue Berets were stunned to realize that the most elite forces on the Hope were not the Black Star Troopers but the people from the group originally called the Black Star Unit. These people were greater

than them on everything!

"They are members from the Black Star Unit; I'm surprised we stumbled across them in space... Alright, you may not know this, but in the world of special forces, the Black Star Unit represented the peak! There were only a few other legendary special forces that could be their rival, and none of these units would let themselves be known to us or the public and would not accept the order to join the Noah One, because they were their countries' most powerful personal private units, therefore... Now you understand? It is not that we are too weak, but they are too strong!"

Fine, Yun Si surrendered to the immense power of the Black Star Unit led by Yao Yuan, but could he accept the fact that he was worse than Black Star Troopers who were originally normal civilians?

His pride... would never allow it!

Therefore, even though the day's training was over, he still did not remove his space armor and continued his training at the field to familiarize his body to the space armor to increase his speed and reaction time.

Suddenly, a symbol lit up within his space helmet. He frowned but still used his gaze to look at the symbol for several seconds. Then a female voice drifted into his ears, "I'm sorry... but is this Mr. Yang Yun Si?"

Yun Si was startled, then he realized the date that day. He immediately apologized, "I am sorry, so sorry. This is Miss Xiu Yue Xuan, right? I'm running late, please wait for me a moment, I will be there in soon... Definitely in ten minutes."

"Okay..."

The girl answered softly before ending the conversation. Yun Si did not dawdle and immediately rushed to the weapon storage to shed his space armor. At the same time, he hailed from the duty

center a hovercraft and rushed to a hotel on the Hope's third floor. Of course, he was still late in the end... He arrived only about twenty minutes later, as he was caught in a traffic jam caused by a minor accident.

Therefore, when he arrived at the hotel and saw the girl in flower-print dress sitting at the table with her head lowered, he apologized profusely, "I'm so sorry, Miss Xiu Yue Xuan. I was too distracted by my training and was caught in a traffic jam... In any case, I am really sorry for making you wait for me."

The sweet girl stood up in a flustered manner. "No, I was too early and you are not really late... Mr. Yang must have many things to do as a Black Star Trooper, right? I am sorry for taking such a valuable slot of your time..."

Yun Si laughed and said directly, "I should apologize since I am late. Also, referring to each other like this sounds weird. If you don't mind, why don't you call me Brother Yang... You haven't ordered, right? Server, can you bring us the menu?"

As the night progressed, the initial awkwardness slowly dispersed.

The girl's name was Xiu Yue Xuan, currently studying at the Hope's public university. She was only eighteen and was one of the survivors from the Noah One. She was one of the people rescued by Yun Si. When he literally lifted her off her feet due to her sprained ankle and placed her in the transport shuttle, this young and charming soldier had found his way into her heart.

In the year they started their new lives on the Hope, they separated from each other. However, the Hope was not that big to begin with, so with Yue Xuan making the first move, they finally conciliated. Their relationship began by her thanking him. That day, she asked him out for dinner to officially thank him for saving her life.

This hotel was one of the high class places on the Hope. The main

chef there was once a famed chef back on Earth. His specialty was chinese cuisine, but the hotel also attracted many chefs who specialized in other cuisines. This fusion-style establishment slowly became one of the most famous private eateries on the Hope.

Of course, this meant that the price tags there were not cheap. It could be called expensive, not a place where normal, working-class civilians would visit daily. Yue Xuan was still a student and relied on government's monthly allowance, so this place was indeed a bit out of her price range.

Yun Si had naturally thought about that, so he said that he would be paying that day. He did not feel pressured and ordered some food he liked and helped Yue Xuan order some after getting her opinion. Then, as they waited for the food to be served, they started chatting.

There wasn't much to chat about since, strictly speaking, they came from completely different worlds. One was a student girl who loved to watch internet dramas or read manga, while the other was a soldier, a Black Star Trooper, and a vice-leader for one of the Trooper Units. Yue Xuan was soft-spoken and shy, meaning most topics were initiated by Yun Si. Therefore, as the night progressed, the topic of conversation slowly moved towards weapons, military exercises, and the Black Star Troopers.

Of course, Yun Si was a qualified soldier who knew about the confidential clause, so he knew his limits. However, the weapons for Black Star Troopers, space armors, and military exercises, these were not part of the clause and he had a great time talking about them.

However, he sighed with frustration when he talked about his experience with the space armor. He was disappointed he was not on the same level as the other S-grade Homo Evolutis. Be it from the data or actual fights, his standard was just acceptable. Compared to those other troopers who were originally civilians...

he was like an amateur.

Yun Si gulped down a shot of alcohol and munched on another piece of spicy chicken before adding, "Perhaps I am really a second-rate soldier and I will never surpass those real soldiers..."

There was great sadness in Yun Si's voice, but Yue Xuan was in a curious state. She felt like some voices were drifting into her ears; however, she could not hear them clearly. It was as if... she was merely the mouth piece for the messages that were drifting into her ears.

"No, that is not true, it is not that you cannot surpass them, but the space armor... Yes, the uniformity of the space armor limited your power. Everyone has their own physical conditions, height, muscle mass, habitual tempo, the size of gait, these are different for each person, and the space armor's uniformity has limited the maximum potential of each trooper. Of course, you can use long term training to familiarize yourself with the setup of the armor. In other words, you are lacking experience... or upgrade the space armor, like the Chancellor's red armor, a suit of armor perfectly suited for you, then your real power will be unleashed..."

This series of words shocked Yun Si, who was complaining. Yue Xuan, after finishing her speech, half collapsed on her chair like she had made a hundred laps around the restaurant. Both of them looked at each other and there was shock apparent in each other's eyes.

The information about the demarcation of Homo Evolutis suddenly cropped up in Yun Si's mind and he remembered that the type of Homo Evolutis most suitable for combat were Preceptors and Seekers, while its complete opposite was the rarest Homo Evolutis type... the Whisperer!

This type of Homo Evolutis who would contribute nothing on the battlefield had the most significant contribution to human society. This type of Homo Evolutis was extremely rare on the Hope, the

most famous was naturally the Hope's brain on weapon technology. In fact, both the space armor and Space Combat Jet were the children of her mind...

But now, there was another Whisperer sitting across from him!

A Whisperer who was also focused on weapons technology!

# Chapter 359: Exit

---

"Still half a month..."

This was something many people were saying recently. From the data calculated by the AI, the warp drive was ending soon. In about 15 days, the Hope and its vassal spaceships would escape from warp drive, returning from warp drive space into normal space. When that happened, this temporary peace would disappear and the Hope would once again welcome their unknown future.

Time passed by slowly. These 15 days dropped to 14, 13... It crawled slowly by until it was only 12 hours until the designated time.

In these 12 hours, the higher officials of the Hope and the Barracks were ready to face any situation that would come up after leaving warp drive. If necessary, they would enter warp drive on short notice... Of course, this was something that would only be done if absolutely necessary. After all, the Hope's supply and energy storage were reaching dangerously low levels, so if they continued travelling without recharging their supplies for five more years, the internal supply body of the Hope would be in a tense state. If it was ten more years, the Hope's government would start to collapse.

Therefore, the plan after leaving warp drive was to conduct alignment of navigation to begin another warp drive to the nearest solar system in order to refill on supply and energy before moving on to a longer distance travel.

In reality, the cosmos was a veritable place of extreme danger, but it also contained innumerable treasures. For level 2 space civilizations, any planet was an endless treasure. Terrestrial planets could lead to harvesting of more than 80 percent minerals and asteroid belts would give access to rare minerals that were absent in terrestrial planets. For gas giants, after reaching a certain



technology level, one could gain access to unlimited hydrogen atoms, and hydrogen atoms were the lifeline of level 2 and 3 space civilizations; they were the core for their source of energy!

Therefore, while the Hope might be in serious need of supplies, as long as it had the technology, with a trip to a solar system, this problem would be resolved in a short amount of time and they would be prepared for a long travel that lasted for several hundred years again.

"In another hour, the Hope will be in a yellow state emergency."

Barbie once again reported the time to Yao Yuan, who was sitting in his chair. This was in the middle of the grand hall. There were not only Barracks' members but also members from the House of Representatives. The big screen here would reveal the scenery of the cosmos after the Hope escaped from warp drive so that they could come to a decision in the shortest amount of time, be it escape... or war!

"The last hour, you say... Where is Bo Li?"

Before Barbie answered, Guang Zhen, who was sitting beside Yao Yuan, suddenly chuckled, then he looked around as if it had nothing to do with him.

Yao Yuan scratched his head and said, "She should still be fussing over 'that thing', right? After all, our demand came too suddenly and we gave her too little time to come up with a prototype. The poor girl..."

Guang Zhen looked at Yao Yuan with a hidden meaning in his eyes and straightened his body to say, "Yes, the poor girl indeed... especially considering the fact that she came across a man who is unable to confess his true love. The poor girl indeed."

Yao Yuan coughed awkwardly when Guang Zhen continued, "Speaking of which... How is 'that thing' coming along? If we are really going into a war, 'that thing' will be our ultimate weapon.

Honestly, if we had 'that thing', I would dare to send out Black Star Troopers to ambush a level 3 space civilization!"

"I would agree if 'that thing' could be created on time." Yao Yuan nodded. He looked around and changed the subject, "Regardless, I feel like it's better to give her more time. After all, even though the Hope has a few Whisperers, she is the only one who is in the field of military. I have heard her tell me before that each Whisperer can only hear stuff related to a few specific fields. For example, Ivan is limited to the fields of biology, viruses, and cells, while even though Bo Li is stronger, she is limited to physics, maths, and weaponry. If only we had a few more Whisperers."

Guang Zhen laughed and slapped Yao Yuan on his shoulder. "You're daydreaming! Didn't you catch Blue 6's reaction when he realized that the Hope had Whisperers? That shock and envy was not something that can be described with words, yet you still want more? Other space civilizations need to survive too. Honestly, I am already satisfied with how we are. According to our current speed, I believe... in the years I am still alive, I will be able to witness humanity become a level 4 space civilization."

Yao Yuan thought about it but did not share his thoughts. In reality... His ambition was bigger. If possible, he wished humanity could become a high tier space civilization in his lifetime. If that happens, then he would be able to pass away without regret!

In the nervous atmosphere, the time dropped down from one hour to one minute. This was a completely different experience from space warp. Space warp happened in an instant, and even though they both led to uncertainty, there was no waiting for space warp. Now it felt like they were waiting for death or war to arrive as the seconds ticked by...

Finally, as the last second completed, in everyone's bated hearts, the Hope exited space warp and returned from super light speed to an idle state. Everyone's heartbeat could be heard if attention was paid.

At the same time, one of the adjutants accompanying Blue 6, who was in the grand hall, laughed under his breath. Then he heard Blue 6 whisper to him, "You find this humorous? Mocking them because they are afraid of warp drive?"

The adjutant immediately mumbled in return, "No, Your Highness, I..."

"There's no need to hide it." Blue 6, who was sitting gracefully in his seat, turned his neck slightly to say, "This is nothing worth mocking. How many space civilizations have not gained access to warp drive technology before they disintegrated into endless space? Even if they had such technology, they did not dare to use it, or they are unable to calculate the most accurate navigation when they are in warp drive due to the lack of AI and implode within empty space. Just how many are those? So mocking is not necessary..."

"Furthermore," Blue 6 looked at this adjutant and explained seriously, "Human beings have access to something more powerful than warp drive, wormholes, and even star gates, so who are we to mock them? Just like how we, the Blue Race, have our own prehistoric means of transportation known as the bicycle, wouldn't those who have experience going through warp drive be afraid when using the bicycle? It is the same thing here. Remember this... Prehistoric species have no right to mock the fears of the civilized! Because the civilized... have their own style of bravery!"

The adjutant lowered his head and answered in a serious tone after a long time, "Yes, I understand, Your Highness."

At the same time, the Hope and the few vassal spaceships' surveillance devices were all activated to scan their surroundings. All the videos and images were displayed on screen, and everyone in the Hope was looking at the surrounding space around them.

This was a piece of dark space, but at a location not far away from the Hope was a glowing star whose glow could be seen with the

naked eye. It was a sun. Even though the Hope was not in the range of its solar system, it was not far from it. At least they were close enough to be able to survey the whole solar system with the naked eye.

Instantly, everyone in the Hope cheered. Many people on the streets cheered and hugged each other when they saw this. They were cheering for their good luck. This time the Hope would not need to run into any danger before reaching its destination.

A few minutes after the cheering, Barbie whispered a message into Yao Yuan, one which froze Yao Yuan on the spot.

"What do you mean? Wasn't our pre-set destination close to that solar system? Aren't we lucky to exit near our designated destination? What is the meaning of this?"

Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, and a few others left the grand hall and entered the secret meeting room. Yao Yuan then communicated with the surveillance room.

"Yes, Chancellor, theoretically speaking, we should be heading towards that solar system. Even if our warp drive entrance was a bit uncondusive, the most it would affect was the angle and, theoretically speaking, the distance is a variable that shouldn't be affected, but... It seems like we were mistaken. Our Hope is no longer near the solar system we were supposed to head to, we have passed that solar system and have landed ourselves closer to the other solar system beyond it! This warp drive crossed a way larger distance than what we have predicted!

"It was as if... the space has shortened!"

At the same time, in this solar system, in a place far away from terrestrial planets and gas giants was a giant floating, metallic, circular plate which was spinning on its own axis. Due to the ginormous size of the plate, instead of calling it a mechanical creation, it was more suitable to call it a metallic planet, but that was not entirely true either because from certain perspective, it

was even bigger than an actual planet...

Within the circular plate, there were many alien lifeforms, and each race had their own active space. Other than that, there were public places, and some dark and bloodied places. These were amenities which were preserved due to certain reasons after a mass massacre...

This circular plate had an alternative name among low tier space civilizations...

Shelter!

# Chapter 360: Approach!

---

The Hope ended up further than expected when exiting warp drive? Why did that happen?

In fact, this was very dangerous. If they could not correctly pinpoint their exit, then next time, they would exit at a dangerous location, like... running directly into a planet or the inside of a sun!

This was different from space warp. Warp drive did not enter a different dimension, it still happened in space, it merely stretched the space. Theoretically speaking, it still followed the basic rules of space travelling, and thus could run into any celestial body.

It was why AI was so important for level 2 space civilizations on their way to becoming level 3 space civilizations. Warp drive without AI was extremely dangerous, and without warp drive, how would a level 2 space civilization become a level 3 space civilization? It was all a daydream.

Due to this relationship, the exit of warp drive was important. The fact that the exit of this warp drive was further than expected was no less serious than the disabled space warp. If they could not find a reason to explain this situation, then warp drive could not be used again.

Thankfully, the Hope was carrying human civilization, one which had a major population of scientists. Considering the fact that they had personally experienced the process and danger of space decay, a reasonable explanation arrived at Yao Yuan's and the high officials' ears in a few hours.

"First, space decay is actually our (human) scientific body's hypothesis."

This was a great physicist, Silewei, explaining the difference in warp drive navigation on stage.

"It is common knowledge that in space, all energy will naturally

go from a high energy state to a low energy state. This is a universal truth of the cosmos, and if I was to use a simpler word to describe it, it would be called entropy... And when this energy level reaches its lowest level, the Academy believes it is the current cosmos. After all, this has realistic backing. The cosmos we are in has stabilized for billions of years and it can perfectly exemplify the lowest energy state of the cosmos..."

When Silewei reached this part of his explanation, there was already a representative who could not help but ask, "Professor Silewei, we only want to know why the Hope's exit is so far away from the predicted location. This is completely unscientific."

"It is scientific..." Silewei sighed. "Everything that has happened so far is scientific, but our current science still cannot explain everything; we are lacking... I was just about to explain the issue Mr. Representative brought up. Since it is our understanding that our cosmos is at its lowest energy state and thus the cosmos' stability has been preserved for billions of years, a small group of scientists hypothesize that there is a state of the cosmos that has even an even lower energy state. The cosmos we're in is merely in its 'half-decay' stay. Just like how uranium has a half-life that is several ten billion years long, the cosmos we're in is also going through a process, and when the time comes, the cosmos will naturally enter a lower energy state, becoming a 'real cosmos'!

"Then, in reality, we have seen space decay when we were in the range of the cursed planet. In other words, the process which the cosmos becomes 'real cosmos'. Of course, there are many differing opinions regarding this point. When we were back on Earth, we had a scientists who conducted thought experiments to predict this phenomenon. A real cosmos will expand at light speed to cover the whole cosmos, but what is real cosmos? It is not the supposed lowering of dimensions, it is not one-dimensional or two-dimensional, it is real emptiness; it has nothing, not even space. In fact, one can call it the origin of cosmos. The space is infinitely

small, but the mass is infinitely big. In other words...

"The process of space decay might not be a giant ball that covers the whole cosmos but a mass that will pull in the entire cosmos. If it is explained in this way, then the discrepancy in the prediction of our warp drive can be explained... Because a large amount of space has been torn asunder by space decay. In other words, it is not that we have increased speed during warp drive and moved further, but the distance we need to traverse... has shortened!

"Of course, this is not something that can be felt during under light-speed travelling. Only by travelling past light-speed can this sensation of distance being shortened be felt..."

Even though the answer could not be 100 percent confirmed, it had real scientific backing behind it. This was both beneficial and harmful for the Hope. The biggest harm naturally was the increased difficulty in calculating warp drive, and the benefit was that the time needed to move from the Hope's current position to the edge of the solar system had decreased. This was what the Hope needed to do the most... to leave this solar system as soon as possible, or at least until the space warp engine could be used again!

When the discussion on warp drive ceased, there was still another issue pending, and if anything, this issue was even more troublesome than warp drive...

"In other words, there is a shelter nearby?"

Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, and the few high officials from the Hope moved to the secret meeting room after the discussion on warp drive. Here, Blue 6 and the cosmic adapters from the vassal races stood waiting because they were there to discuss the Hope's problematic location.

"Yes." Blue 6 nodded first. "From the information preserved in their AI, we can confirm that there is a level 3 shelter in this solar system."



"Level 3 shelter?" Yao Yuan took the head of the table and asked curiously, "Now that you mention it, we had no idea that there was a grading system for shelters as well."

Blue 6 was the one who answered, "Your Highness, there is. The grade of a shelter corresponds to the civilization that built it. If it was a level 2 shelter, then it must have been built by level 2 space civilization, and so on and so forth. The purpose of grading is to exemplify its scale.

"For example, a level 2 shelter made by a conglomeration of level 2 space civilizations has the lowest reputation and defense. They are easily pillaged. Generally speaking, the civilizations that stay there are either very low tier space civilizations or civilizations that are on their last legs. While a level 3 shelter means that it definitely has the presence of at least one level 3 space civilization. This is a guarantee of reputation and standard. Many level 2 space civilizations will reside there, and with a certain payment of taxes, they will be protected by this level 3 space civilization. When other civilizations approach, they too have to pay a trade and entry fee before purchasing the supplies or visiting the place. In essence, a level 3 shelter is the most common in the cosmos and the most stable of shelters.

"Above that are level 4 shelters, but the number of those is very small. The Blue Race only knows about 3 of them, and the price for occupancy is very high. First, the race must have at least 3 cosmic adapters and a large amount of soul has to be sacrificed every 100 years. There is, of course, payment of normal taxes, but the amount is not something a level 3 space civilization could afford... Of course, with such a high payment, there is high reward as well. Level 4 shelters can be said to be the only safe havens in the wide cosmos. You might even get clues or technology parts to become level 4 space civilization, and this attracts many space civilization to migrate towards these shelters..."

Yao Yuan was in deep thought after hearing Blue 6's

introduction. Then he raised his head to look around and realized that Ren Tao and Xiao Niao had already raised their heads. The three of them shared a look and Xiao Niao uttered, "In other words, we are in the range of a level 3 shelter? They should have detected us by now, right?"

Blue 6 paused for a second before replying, "Yes, we have idled in this space for several hours already, so that Shelter must have detected us by now. Of course, if we do not show any open hostility, according to our current troop number and technology level, they will not attack us without reason... A level 3 shelter still has to protect its reputation, at least while we're still near the shelter."

Ren Tao added, "The Hope's supplies are running dangerously low... If we continue another warp drive, we will most likely perish in space... isn't that right, Chancellor?"

Yao Yuan sighed and realized that everyone was looking at him, waiting for him to come to a decision.

"Yes, I understand what you mean. The Hope has reached a stage where we have to stop for supplies. Since a level 3 shelter's reputation is still considerable, then we can try stopping there for restock... Of course, I am sure everyone knows the necessary precautions...

"None of the Homo Evolutis are allowed exit or interact with anyone from the shelter, this includes myself, until the restocking is done and we have left this shelter. All external interaction will be jointly carried out by Guang Zhen and Blue 6...

"Well, let us approach and enter this shelter!"

# Chapter 361: The Value

---

Since they were approaching the Shelter, then they had to pay some form of taxes and had to prepare for trades like purchase of supplies. If possible, they wanted to buy technology from the level 3 space civilization. Of course, this was dependent on the fair trade and what humanity could offer in terms of trade.

"First, I am adamantly against using technology in trade!"

This was an important representative talking. "Technology is the basis of a civilization! We humans have sacrificed how much for our technology? Therefore, I am definitely against using our technology to trade for supplies! I will use the House of Representatives' veto rights to veto this suggestion!"

The people around him frowned as they surreptitiously glanced at this representative. Only Yao Yuan waved his hands to say, "Aren't we discussing the currency of this Shelter? No one said anything about using technology in trades; it's only one of the currencies used in this Shelter. They also allow for trades of resources, don't they? That is the real topic we're discussing now."

Yes, using resources to trade for other resources, a barter system of sorts.

Since the cosmos had all sorts of materials and minerals, naturally there was a difference in value for them. Humanity found out about this when they were trading with the space merchants. However, they were not clear about the exact value. Furthermore, from the information taken from the space merchants, it was the first time they had seen certain materials as well. After all, space merchants were a dying level 2 space civilization; they were the lowest of the space civilizations, so it was natural that they did not know everything.

Therefore, they had to trouble Blue 6 and the vassal races. Now they were in the warehouse to look over the supplies the Hope had

and put them into quantifiable value.

In reality, Yao Yuan and company were worried, worried that the Hope would not have enough supplies to trade with the Shelter. Currently, they were discussing the alternatives, like using technology as a trade item was one of them. Of course, none present dared to bring up the possibility of using the race's population as trade items even though it was the most common trade type in space.

As the discussion continued and Yao Yuan was on stage talking, Blue 6 suddenly rushed into the room. It was so different from his slow and graceful way that Yao Yuan's heart froze. He thought something dire had happened as they thought about the possible issue the Hope's resources could have. Could it be that... The Hope had nothing valuable? In that case, then...

Before Yao Yuan could say anything, Blue 6 exclaimed excitedly, "Your Highness, I found Star Dust Gold! There are also Purple Larosite, Mica Sand, and many more! With just a small portion of Star Dust Gold, we can definitely refill the Hope and all the vassal spaceships' storage!"

The sentence silenced the previously rowdy meeting room. Everyone whipped their heads to look at Blue 6; a few of them moved so fast that they sprained their necks. Everyone stared at him with shock. They had a hard time understanding what he just said.

Blue 6 was shocked by this reaction as well. He silently smoothed down his attire and looked around himself, then continued in his usual graceful manner, "Dear fellow men, rejoice, we human race have minerals that even level 4 and 5 space civilizations would desire! These minerals are more than enough for us to even purchase this entire Shelter... Of course, if this level 3 space civilization is willing to sell."

Quite a number of people laughed at his joke. When Blue 6

returned to his seat, he sent the trade information of the minerals onto the screen. The room went from silence into heated discussion again, but this time it was due to non-suppressible excitement.

"This thing called Star Dust Gold is so expensive? Three gram is worth one 3000-meter mid-sized battleship from a level 2 space civilization? Also, this, what did you call it? Purple Larocite? The original form is already so expensive, but 5 grams of its purified form could buy a small ship from a level 3 space civilization? And this... Mica Sand? A necessary component for wormhole engines and star gates? So it is a hot item among middle-tier space civilizations? And this, which looks like the legendary Sun Stone, according to rumours... they are heavily sought by high-tier space civilizations?"

A senior officer was reading it aloud when he suddenly clutched at his chest and fainted. The medical unit in the room moved to aid him. After giving him some emergency shots, they sent him out of the room. This was not an isolated incident, these people were simply too excited.

To be fair, the excitement was warranted. Before this, everyone there, including Yao Yuan, thought they were the cosmos' beggars.

Even though humanity had many cosmic adapters and the progress for humanity was incredibly fast and humanity had a great store of technological information... the cosmic adapters were definitely not for sale. Not even a single human being was going to be sold. Even if Yao Yuan ordered it, the order would not be submitted. If he dared to do so, anarchy would happen on the Hope instantly. This was human nature.

Secondly, the technology. The Hope's technology might seem very powerful and aplenty, but they had level 2 space civilization technology and a few level 3 space civilization technologies. They could be traded for something good at a level 2 Shelter, but definitely not at a level 3 Shelter. Even if they handed over all the

technology, it was hard to tell whether they could refill the Hope's storage.

If human civilization had any treasures... then the alloys from the alien plant could be counted as one. However, the alien plant was a creation from a middle to high tier space civilization. If they produced the alloy and accidentally tipped off the level 3 space civilization, then the Hope would be in great danger.

Therefore, when Blue 6 told them that the unknown minerals they salvaged in a forming solar system were such valuable minerals, this was way beyond people's expectation.

Yao Yuan did not dally. He immediately pulled Blue 6 to the corner to have him describe the origin of these valuable minerals. Blue 6 nodded as comprehension dawned. "Is that so... Humanity is indeed a blessed space race then. To be honest... Your Highness, do you know how hard is it to stumble into a forming solar system?"

Yao Yuan was startled. "It shouldn't be too hard, right? The cosmos is so huge and there are new solar systems being formed every day... Or there is something else that is at work?"

Blue 6 nodded in response. "Your Highness, do you remember this information that I once told you? That almost all space civilizations are unable to detect prehistoric planets that contain lifeforms. Even if they accidentally stumble across one, they would naturally forget about it. They would leave without touching the planet. This is true for high tier space civilizations as well. Regarding this point, almost all space civilizations suspect it has to do with some sort of trigger set by god-tier space civilizations. In other words, civilizations that have entered space will not be able to disturb other civilizations who have not.

"Similarly, this observation is applied to newly formed solar systems because they are the most malleable solar systems. For high tier space civilizations, they can easily manipulate it into a life-preserving environment. For example, the creation of suitable

planet size, the rotation size and distance around the sun, the period of self-rotation of the planet, the suitable time for asteroid collisions. They can raise the possibility of a life-preserving planet forming to its maximum. Under such conditions, as long as the high tier space civilization builds a Shelter there and waits, they will be able to harvest unlimited soul, but in reality? This kind of situation has never even happened once. The reason is similar to the one with regards to prehistoric civilizations; space civilizations will normally ignore newly-formed solar systems...

"This situation is generally dubbed the Mist of God... According to legend, only the legendary Immortal can see through such mist..."

Yao Yuan's heart skipped a beat at this point. He slowly digested these words. The words "Mist of God" and "Immortal" circulated in his mind. Slowly, he understood why SS-grade was valuable and why... even level 9 space civilizations hungered for an Immortal...

"It is because of these reasons," Blue 6 continued on his own, "that those minerals and radioactive ores born during the infant stage of solar system formation are so expensive. This is because only those extremely lucky space civilizations will be able to occasionally get them from asteroid fields, and these things are crucial to middle and high tier space civilizations to create key materials for some of their products, so their prices are ridiculously high..."

Blue 6's tone dropped to a confidential and serious level as he continued, "Your Highness, at this point, I suggest Your Highness releases a new confidential clause and to keep a close watch on the alien cosmic adapters who went to check on the storage with me. At least before we can space warp, we have to stop them from communicating with external forces, or else something serious may happen... Money corrupts, especially when we're talking about a lot of money."

Yao Yuan thought about it and replied in a similarly serious tone,

"Blue 6, then tell me, what is the real value of these mineral ores? Just imagine we have a safe channel to sell everything at full price and trade in technology that is at equal value, how much will it benefit the Hope?"

Blue 6 lowered his head to think. Then he lifted his gaze and answered, "I can't give Your Highness the exact value, but roughly speaking...

"It can help the Hope at least evolve to become a level 5 space civilization!"



## Chapter 362: Approach With Caution

---

"There is still half a month until we reach the Shelter. Within that period of time, no Homo Evolutis is allowed outside of the Hope except under the Barracks' direct orders, the confidentiality clause is... S-grade."

This was the latest military order received by all Homo Evolutis on the Hope. Even those who were still civilians received the same order, and it was given through the most official red-sealed document. Therefore, no one dared to treat it lightly. At the same time, the order was also broadcasted through the papers and internet.

"Other than the workers and AI robots responsible for ferrying supplies, only the diplomacy group is allowed to enter and leave the Hope freely. Aren't they being a bit too careful?"

In Ren Tao's home, he was playing a 3D fishing game while Chou Yue, who sat beside him, grumbled at him while she flipped through the newspaper. Ren Tao was silent until he finally lost his patience from the incessant questions. "There is no other choice..."

Chou Yue was not satisfied by this answer. She directly turned Ren Tao around to ask, "What kind of answer is that? Quickly explain to me. You're a Thinker, your brain is very active, so don't ignore me by giving me these half-hearted answers. I hate this the most about you. Quickly explain to me."

Ren Tao was cornered, so he said, "The key is still the lack of knowledge, specifically the lack of knowledge regarding the great cosmos... To give you a simple example, if we were still on Earth and the US and China were caught in a deep altercation, would it ever escalate to an all-out war? It is hardly possible because each of them has their own cautions, including the worry about nuclear bombs. However, if a small African country kidnapped the US President and openly waged war against the US, the US would not

hesitate to fight back, right?

"This is due to knowledge. Since the China and the US knew each other so well, so there would be less of a danger for war to erupt. Even if you switched out China for a smaller country, as long as there is knowledge, most would choose to compromise rather than go into war. Of course, there are exceptions due to human greed, like the Middle Eastern oil war. Currently, our knowledge about the cosmos and the various space civilizations in the cosmos is still too low. We are like that small African country, we only know they exist and they are powerful, but how powerful? What kind of threat are they to us? These answers we can only extrapolate from the little information that we have."

At this point, Ren Tao revealed a rather sarcastic smile. "I believe this is not sitting well with Yao Yuan either to have made such a decision... From when we left Earth, even though we were forced to leave, we have stumbled across a series of coercing situations. Yes, most of them were unintentional, but even so, those high tier space civilizations did not even glance at us and treated us like bugs. That aggravation must have annoyed Yao Yuan greatly, especially considering his penchant for heroics."

Chou Yue suddenly smacked Ren Tao on his head, saying, "Call him Chancellor... You can do whatever you like at home, but when you're outside, you better refer to him as our Chancellor out of respect."

The sarcastic smile hung on Ren Tao's face, but he did not argue with Chou Yue. Instead he continued, "Unfortunately, it is because Yao Yuan is the Chancellor that this misfortune falls on his shoulders. If he was not the Chancellor, then I am sure he would not have so many reservations. However, as Chancellor, he has to put humanity first, so even if he feels aggrieved, he has no choice but to stomach it and choose to flee every time... In any case, back to the topic at hand, that is what I meant to say, because our knowledge of space civilizations, especially those with a level

higher than us, is severely lacking, it is only natural that we fear them. This is especially true since we have seen so many powerful creations and the power the weapons of high tier space civilizations. That fear is deep within our hearts. Even if we now have the power to rival the peak level 2 space civilizations, when there is an actual war, most people will choose to flee, especially when we're facing a level 3 space civilization.

"The caution that you mentioned is the manifestation of the collective ideology. However, it escapes their minds that... in such a dangerous cosmos, only those who are brave will be able to survive. If we continue this cycle of escaping and fleeing, I hate to make this prediction, but the human loyalty and spirit will break and society will collapse..."

A similar conversation was happening with Xiao Niao and his two best friends as well as Cheng Wen and his few close friends. Even though the contents varied, they mentioned a similar issue... After losing the will to fight, how will it affect humanity's future? If humanity was conditioned into thinking they are always the weaker party, then how will humanity respond when they stumble across civilizations that are weaker than theirs?

No matter what, time continued to move on and the atmosphere on the Hope got increasingly tense. Even though the general public was still stable, one could see from the papers that as they got closer to the Shelter, most of the news was about space civilizations. Similarly, there were also increasing news about how to save yourself during war, how to avoid combat. Lastly... The staple foods on the Hope, like bread, wheat, flour, and canned foods, were sold out.

Actually, this was an unconscious action by people. If there was a real war, either the Hope won, or they escaped, or humanity perished in space. There was no other choice, so what was the point of storing food?

Thankfully, it was Yao Yuan who was leading the Hope. After a

few of his speeches, even though the heightened tension did not decrease, at least there were no more riots. After all, Yao Yuan had reached a legendary status in people's hearts. Many of them believed that as long as Yao Yuan survived, then humanity would continue to exist, and from a certain perspective, they were not wrong.

Finally, there were only three days left until they reached the Shelter. At this point, the Hope and the vassal spaceships realized that a few battleships were heading towards them. As a precaution and as the rule of space dictated, all the spaceships, including the Hope, activated the creator's particle.

"This is a patrol crew. Looking at the shape of the battleship, it should be a level 2 space civilization."

In central command, acting as humanity's 'space expert' and the official minister of foreign affairs, Blue 6 explained as he looked at the 3D images of the battleships.

Yao Yuan, who sat in the captain's chair, slapped his palm on the armrest and said, "In other words, these patrols are employed by the Shelter's main race? Are they here to collect taxes? Will they enter our ship for checking..."

Blue 6 replied with a smile, "Not only for tax collection, they will be responsible to lead us or keep an eye on us as we move towards the Shelter. Of course, there will be no inspection like what Your Highness said, at most they will use some device to gauge the size of our ships to help us arrange hangars that can ease our entry... Your Highness, please remember this common knowledge in space: forcefully entering a ship is a cause for war!

"The ship is our home, the ship is our land, the ship is our life... The ship is the root from which our civilization grows! Without invitation, without permission, and forcefully entering the ship, this... means a war to the death!"

When Blue 6 said this, he lost his usual grace. In reality, outside

of the color of his skin, Blue 6 was a handsome young man, he was no different from the dashing lads around the Hope. However, when he said this, it gave the impression of a lion-hearted warrior. The sudden radiation of heroic spirit surprised even Yao Yuan.

"...Forcefully entering a ship means war?"

Yao Yuan ruminated on this sentence and he laughed. "This is not bad. At least it means that our secret can be safely preserved. After we successfully finish the trading and restocking of supplies, we will leave the Shelter... That is enough."

Blue 6 looked at Yao Yuan with a serious glow in his eyes. It was obvious that he had something to say, but in the end, he chose not to voice it out. He joined Yao Yuan to look at the screen inside.

A few hours later, the Defence Unit soldiers led by Blue 6 intercepted this patrol battleship. Then a simple discussion and bargaining followed, mainly discussing the entry tax for the Hope and all the vassal spaceships. This did not include the trading tax because that was not the jurisdiction of the patrols, they were only responsible for leading the few ships to enter the Shelter. Of course, it was more of an observation than kindness on the patrol's part.

"It's not expensive, at least considering the size of our fleet... Of course, it might be due to the color of my skin. After all, the Blue Race once visited this Shelter," Blue 6 reported back to Yao Yuan. Then the Hope and the vassal spaceships followed the patrols and moved towards the Shelter.

At the same time, in the Shelter that more than 100 races called home, more than 70 percent of them were already on their decline. To preserve the seed for the continuity of their races, every day a large amount of retard "rubbish" were executed.

However, among these races, there was one dying race who recently came into a stroke of good fortune because their race suddenly had a birth of more than ten thousand normal citizens.

According to rumours, they were lifeforms with a wealth of soul in them that could last the race for another four to five generations!

This was one of the races that was part of the space merchant conglomerate. They said that this happened because they met a race that had hundreds of cosmic adapters during one of their raids, and due to close contact, they had the fortune of welcoming the births of so many normal babies...

Of course, none of the other races believed them...

How could there be hundreds of cosmic adapters residing within one race?

That was simply impossible!

# Chapter 363: Entry

---

The few days of travel was nothing compared to travelling in space. For any real space civilization, the few days were equivalent to the time spent during dinner.

Just like that, a few days passed and the Shelter was close before their eyes. With one last order from the Shelter, the Hope could enter this large construction.

But...

How big it was!

Before this gigantic structure, the Hope was equal to an ant beside an elephant's foot, or a grain of sand against a giant mountain. Within a day of travel, the building went from observable through naked eye to unable to be contained by one's sight.

This was a construction larger than a terrestrial planet; not those small planets, but one that could rival the size of Earth. From the information given by Blue 6, this Shelter was built about 3,000 years ago with the combined effort of 9 level 3 space civilizations and several hundred level 2 space civilizations. It took about 400 years.

Actually, along the way, they could see certain things that confirmed this fact. A few small planets in the solar system had large holes in them and two terrestrial planets had giant craters and ditches on their surfaces. This was where the giant amount of materials that were used to build the Shelter came from.

Today, this Shelter still had 6 level 3 space civilizations and 642 level 2 space civilizations. Even though this number was enough to shock Yao Yuan and company, it made Blue 6 scoff with derision. From his perspective, this Shelter was already on its decline because the Shelter that the Blue Race came from had 40 plus level

3 space civilizations, 3,000 level 2 space civilizations, and it was at least three times bigger than this Shelter!

However, this was common sense. Due to the Law of Preservation of Soul, it limited the wild expansion of life. No matter how powerful or advanced a civilization was, as long as it had no way of stopping the exhaustion or decrease of soul, then eventually it would start to deteriorate to make way for a new race to appear. Rise and fall, this had been going on in the cosmos for millennia. There was no permanent race, other than perhaps the legendary god tier civilizations...

However, no matter what, this Shelter was already something impressive for the Hope. Many space civilizations called it home, and that in itself was a concept and problem humanity could not grasp. Using a simple example, some races relied on carbon oxide for survival, while others relied on oxygen, and some might be aquatic species that lived underwater. Wouldn't the close living arrangement cause problems? What about the habitats? Or a universal language?

These were questions humanity had a hard time answering, and many scientists wanted to enter the Shelter to find out. However, due to the prohibition ban, most research requests were denied. Amongst the many complaints, there was a deep sense of regret, and it affected Yao Yuan too.

"To be honest, this is quite a big regret..." Yao Yuan told Guang Zhen and Bo Li beside him. "Such a miraculous building, at least from our point of view, is nothing less than a miracle. Under normal circumstances, after paying sufficient tax, we are allowed to wander freely in it, but now we have to force everyone to hide in the ship like prisoners..."

Bo Li did not say anything, but Guang Zhen smacked him on his shoulder and said, "The chance will come. Wait until we become a level 3 space civilization and then we can enter such Shelters openly. Until then... we just have to be a little patient."



Yao Yuan sighed and his gaze calmed down from fury to acceptance. Finally he nodded. "What else can we even do but sit quietly and wait?"

On the screen in central command, the giant space harbor appeared before everyone's eyes. With the leading of the colored signals, the Hope slowly headed towards the interior of the space harbor. During the docking process, everyone stared unblinkingly at this miraculous creation, a harbor door that was big enough to accommodate a giant mountain, and an unimaginably sprawling docking space. It made many people gasp involuntarily.

After the Hope parked at the designated spot, aliens soon approached the Hope in their vehicles. At the ship's entrance, Blue 6 and his troop of Defense Unit soldiers already stood waiting. After a simple negotiation, a bunch of information was transferred to the Hope's AI.

"This is the price list over the past decade, related taxes, exchange value for technology, and ways to earn currency as well as reputation at this Shelter. However, since we are not going to stay at this Shelter for long, we can skip most of these, except for material information and mineral information."

Guang Zhen looked at the information list that was posted on screen and told Yao Yuan.

Yao Yuan nodded and replied, "Then I will leave this in your hands, Ol' Wong. Other than the designated workers and AI robots, only Defense Unit soldiers are allowed out of the Hope. Of course, the noted exception is Blue 6, the cosmic adapter. He too will accompany you... Keep a close watch over him, listen and observe, pay attention to the alien lifestyle, culture, and the way the different space civilizations treat each other. Even though this is a supply stop, it is also... our first real deep contact with space civilizations."

Guang Zhen chuckled and clapped. "Don't worry about this, I

know what I can say and what I cannot. I will help collect as much information as we can. Regarding Blue 6... I suppose this will be his biggest test yet. We will see whether he is trustworthy and whether his actions match his words..."

"Let's hope so..."

At the same time, after the Hope received the price information from the Shelter, they started discussing the trades. What kind of rare minerals were they going to sell? It had to be valuable enough, but not so valuable that it would make the level 3 space civilization to want to raid the Hope. The key was these minerals had to have a valid origin. There were so many things to discuss.

Just like that, the Hope idled in the harbor for one full day and one full night. In that period, no alien came to rush in or disturb them. After all, it was only one day. After paying the necessary taxes, they could stay there for a whole year and no one would care. The harbor was not part of the soul zone, so it would not affect the real citizens of the Shelter. They could stay as long as they wanted.

After that one day and one night, the several hundred people whose eyes were bloodshot left the meeting room. Finally, only 10 plus people remained in the room, one of them was Blue 6.

Blue 6 was also visibly tired. He yawned and said, "Your Highness, just like how it was discussed, I will intercept the other civilizations in the capacity of humanity's minister of foreign affairs. I will introduce ourselves as a mining civilization that was lucky enough to come across a valuable ore vein. The valuable vein caused us to come into war with another space civilization, and even though we appeared victorious, many were lost and only a few spaceships survived. Our main ship was in a bad situation and needed a restock, so under such circumstances, we have some valuable ores we have to trade and one of them is the Star Dust Gold."

Yao Yuan nodded. "We have to be incredibly careful, our cover cannot be blown... Regardless, you have to communicate often with Commander Wong Guang Zhen."

Blue 6 turned to Guang Zhen respectfully. "After leaving the Hope, other than diplomatic issues, I will listen to the crown prince's arrangement for everything else. There is no doubt about that..."

"In that case... go take a rest for the day. Tomorrow, we shall enter the Shelter to buy the materials we need to resupply this ship. Then be on the lookout for good stuff. It can be products or technology, as long as it is within our price range and will not attract the wrong attention if we purchase it..."

While the Hope was in discussion, deep inside the Shelter, another civilization's higher officials were in deep discussion as well.

This was a level 2 space civilization, a once-dying level 2 space civilization. However, due to a miracle, they had escaped that fate and their standing in the Shelter thus improved. Of course, it only improved slightly. After all, they were still a level 2 space civilization and the height of their power was still quite low.

"Is it confirmed? This ship really belongs to the level 2 space race known as human beings that we have tried to raid before?"

"...Not yet fully confirmed. Parts of the ship have changed, but its general shape is still the same. After a computer analysis, it is 80 percent similar to this human being's mothership..."

"They have more than 100 cosmic adapters? And their leader is the legendary Immortal? How can such a space civilization even exist? You all must be lying!"

"You will know whether we are lying or not after an inspection... But war or any sort of fights are banned inside the Shelter; how are we going to check whether they are the same civilization or not?"

Or... should we give this information to the level 3 space civilization?"

"No, this information can only be sold to level 4 space civilizations or above! Level 3 space civilizations do not have enough value to trade for this information. Of course, if this is really the human beings... rather than handing them over to level 3 space civilizations, we might as well cooperate with other level 2 space civilizations and then raid them clean!"

"Then what's the plan? Launch an attack in the Shelter?"

"No... the human race seems to be extremely cautious. At the time they let us go, and that was after we killed many of their cosmic adapters... Then we will force them! We will collude with other level 2 space civilizations to force them to let us enter their spaceship. If they agree, then we can confirm they are really human beings. If they refuse, then we will threaten them to make them leave the Shelter..."

"After they do... We will assault and raid them!"

# Chapter 364: Want to Buy Everything

---

Guang Zhen checked his outfit again. In reality, he wanted to wear the normal Defense Unit battle suit but was stopped by many people, including Yao Yuan. Therefore, he had no choice but to put on the second generation Space Armor specifically designed for him.

After their meeting, the related personnel rested for a full 24 hours. Fully refreshed, Guang Zhen personally selected the most powerful elite soldiers from the Defense Unit to wear the newest battlesuit and equipped them with enhanced Gaussian rifles and a long distance communicator. This was the troop led by Guang Zhen.

Blue 6 was unsatisfied. His initial plan was to gloat with his special unit of Black Star Troopers, but due to the latest order that prevented all Homo Evolutis or cosmic adapters other than himself from leaving the Hope, he had no choice but to settle with the Defense Unit that was assigned under the Ministry of Foreign Affairs.

The group of people gathered at the Hope's entrance early in the morning. After a brief conversation between Guang Zhen and Yao Yuan, the group of about 100 set off from the Hope and entered the Shelter.

The Shelter was so huge that it couldn't be described using words... Fine, perhaps it could be described using words if one was to force it. For example, this area the Hope was parked in was about 40,000 meters tall... Yes, you saw right, this space harbor alone was 40,000 meters tall. According to rumors, this harbor was for mid-sized spaceships. There were others for large spaceships and super large spaceships. The ones stopping there were basically super large moving castles or the motherships of various races.

The harbor the Hope was in was large enough to make the people

standing in it feel like they were in the legendary pavilion of the titans... No, it should be the pavilion of gods. The size alone was a great pressure on the people, it made them feel small and insignificant.

Therefore, venturing deeper into the Shelter was not something that could be done on foot. The distance from the Hope to the interior of the Shelter was like from China to the US; was that a distance that could be walked?

Therefore, specialized transportation was needed. Due to the unique situation of the Shelter, the transportation of the races themselves was not allowed. After all, there was no way of telling whether it was a weapon or not. Of course, this was another method to earn money. The amount used in renting the vehicles to traverse the Shelter was almost as much as the entrance tax.

"This is the culture even for level 4 Shelters... Of course, if you can locate a level 4 Shelter, the entry fee is always low, but the service price after entering the Shelter is sky high, and that includes the trade tax and the renting fee for various goods. Therefore, don't go in unless you are loaded, or you might not be able to leave with your life intact," Blue 6 said to Guang Zhen with a smile.

Guang Zhen studied this large vehicle before them. It looked like a large front end of a train. It was large enough to fit 500 people. It used a particle flux engine and had an aerial floatation device underneath. It was perfect to move through the Shelter with incredible speed. Then Guang Zhen jumped into the vehicle... Yes, the gravity outside of the Hope inside of the Shelter was very low. This Shelter relied on centrifugal force to create gravity. However, other than specific locations, the general gravity was low. A normal person could jump 5 meters easily; it was similar to walking on the moon.

"Speaking of which... How did we pay for the entry fee? And the renting fee for this vehicle?" After sitting inside the vehicle, Guang

Zhen suddenly turned to ask Blue 6 beside him.

Blue 6 had always maintained a respectful tone towards Guang Zhen. He continued with a polite smile, "Very simple, using credit. This is also why I said 'don't come in if you don't have money' earlier. If you have enough supplies, then you can exchange them for credit to enter the Shelter. Then, after trading, you clear the credit debt. If you are unable to clear the debt in a year or you wish to leave the Shelter before clearing your debt, then I'm sorry, the owner of the Shelter will have to repossess the things in your spaceships as compensation... And the price used during repossession is only one-fifth to one-tenth the market price. If all the supplies in the ship are not enough to cover the debt, then they will start claiming the lifeforms, and then the spaceship itself. When it reaches that stage, you can say the civilization has been tossed into the slaughterhouse."

"...That's so cruel." Guang Zhen sighed.

Blue 6 chuckled and continued normally, "The cosmos is cruel, Your Highness."

After everyone got into the vehicle, they sped into the Shelter. This vehicle belonged to the Shelter and thus its AI and navigation did not need manual intervention. After loading in the location one wanted to go to, it would move there automatically.

"Now we are heading towards the supply market. Other than the supplies and energy we need for restocking, it is also a good place to trade for food. Of course, the taste might not be suitable for human consumption. After all, the amount of soul cannot be compared to what we have on the Hope. However, some of them are rare space delicacies and others have beneficial benefits to mammals like ourselves. After raising them for a few generations on the Hope, they will be wonderful food sources. If we raise them well, we can also sell them to other civilizations in the future.

"After that, we will go to the mineral trading depot to sell the

Star Dust Gold. We have with us 20 kilograms of purified Star Dust Gold with a purity rate of 97 percent. After selling all this, we will have enough money to pay off all our debt and have quite a bit left. We can look for rare minerals that we need there too...

"Then it will be the machine factory and technology trading center. Other than these locations, we can also visit the information trading center and traders for cosmic curiosities. The whole schedule will take up eight days."

Along the way, Blue 6 kept introducing the crew to the places of interest in the Shelter. Even though it was his first time there as well, as a member of a level 3 space civilization, one that was going to lead the race at that, he knew more than most. Furthermore, Blue Race was an influential party of a level 3 large-scale Shelter, so it was natural for him to know a thing or two about Shelter culture.

Guang Zhen did not stop him and allowed Blue 6 to handle most things. He was only needed to make important decisions... and to observe Blue 6.

Just like that, after four hours in the vehicle, the group reached their first destination, the supply market. Here they would select the things needed to resupply the Hope, including energy and materials.

These kinds of things did not require Guang Zhen's attention. There were more than 10 actuaries among the 100 people. They were working with the quota needed to restock the Hope and the vassal spaceships. Guang Zhen left this to the professionals.

At the supply market, other than Guang Zhen's group, there were other alien buyers. Furthermore, there was more than one company selling supplies. In fact, this was not a government-mandated market; any civilizations residing at the Shelter could set up a store there. Of course, that was after one had paid the necessary taxes.



If there was one word to describe this place, it was huge!

On the surface, it looked like a gigantic collection of buildings. The area had buildings in various shapes and sizes. Outside each of the buildings there was a communication port that detailed the items sold by the seller within. There were also a few large 3D billboards. They showcased a series of alien words and pictures. According to Blue 6, those were the supplies currently collected by the Shelter.

There were plenty of alien lifeforms there. However, due to the size of the place, they didn't appear often. After Guang Zhen's group descended from the vehicle, they connected their carried laptops to the communication ports outside the buildings, and through AI analysis and restructuring, they would be translated into human language.

"Oxygen, hydrogen, rare gas... Heavy water, super heavy water, gaseous water, liquid alcohol..."

In conclusion, there were plenty of materials on sale, some not even humans had heard of before. There were some that could not be translated. For example, there was something called Atomic Solid Water sold by level 3 space civilizations. According to Blue 6, after dissolving one drop of this water, it would expand to one thousand plus square meters. It is the most perfect way to store water across long space travels.

There was also something called super solid gas. One cubic meter of this thing could expand to fill up the whole the Hope. It could be created from any gases, like pure oxygen. Of course, since it was a level 3 space civilization's product, the price was insanely high.

It was supposed to be a simple supply trip, but after seeing so many wondrous materials, other than the few Blue Race members, the rest had glows shining out of their eyes. So many cosmic curiosities and creations from high tier space civilizations were laid before their eyes. There were things beyond their wildest

imagination, and they wanted to buy everything...

# Chapter 365: Exciting! Exciting!

---

The many exciting items practically blinded everyone's eyes. Under Blue 6's recommendations, they bought the supplies the Hope needed. This included the not-that-expensive sub-molecular solid water and gases that were processed using similar technology. Other than that, they also purchased the hydrogen and heavy water needed for polymerized reactors. They bought the type that had large volume and small size.

Then, also with Blue 6's recommendation, they went to the food section of the market. There was also plenty of selection there. The people on the Hope had at least been to two life-preserving planets, one was Earth and the other was the new planet, so they had seen two distinct ecosystems.

However, the 3D images of the food materials shown there really opened their eyes to the wealth of food types in space. There were all sorts of unique food, including edible minerals that grew naturally in the ground and parts of sentient organisms...

Most of the food looked new, but there were human equivalents. For example, there was an interesting-looking ingredient that looked like delicious wheat, but there was nothing impressive about its nutrient contents. Such food items dominated 90 percent of the food sold there.

The remaining little percentage was priced really high because they had unique effects. Just like Earth's spice trade, due to their rarity, their prices were really not different than gold... Although, since gold was a common metal in space, using it to trade for these unique food items was impossible.

For example, there was an extremely rare condiment. It was a powder formed from grinding some sort of fungus. The spore of this fungus was sold there. They could be bought and reared on the Hope. The fungus contained a type of special amino-acid that could

change to the taster's favorite taste once it made contact with human saliva. In other words, the fungus was a tasteless condiment but would change into different flavors according to the taster's palette.

Furthermore, the amino-acid was beneficial to the human body. According to the computer analysis, constant consumption of this fungus would help improve the human body's immune system and general health. However, there was always a small chance of it causing addiction. Therefore, regarding the purchase of this extremely rare condiment, Guang Zhen decided to purchase a small amount after hesitating for a long time. However, the price was indeed high.

There was also an interesting legume-type food. It contained a great amount of carbohydrates and protein. However, most importantly, it contained a special stimulin that could activate a human's growth hormones, inducing a second growth in intelligence, body, and fitness. It was a super food that had no downsides to the human body.

However, this kind of legume required a large amount of feeding... Yes, this legume was what they called a carnivorous plant in space. It was a type of vine, and its vines could move very fast through the ground. It hunted animals like a predator and sucked the nutrients from the animals after curling itself tight around its prey. It was only during the harvest period that its carnivorous nature would hibernate to reveal itself as a safe, green-leafed plant.

According to legend, this legume's legacy could be traced back to the Pa Race. That would explain its aggressive nature. There was anecdotal evidence that for certain species of this legume, they would still continue to attack the harvester even during harvest period. Of course, this unique growth meant that the fruits they produced were extremely nutritious and their effects were ten times greater than normal legumes. They could be called the

superfood among superfoods.

According to Guang Zhen's calculations, the Hope could set up a room to specially grow this kind of carnivorous plant. After all, the Hope was not lacking in soul. Most animals grew almost too fast on the Hope. They had slaughtered groups of animals to lower their population a few times to clear up space. If there was such a carnivorous plant on the Hope, it could solve many issues.

In the end, they purchased about ten of such plants...

When the humans left the supply market, they had already purchased at least 100 species of food items. When they were shopping, they did not feel like they had bought too much, but when they returned to the vehicle and took inventory, everyone had a drawn face. Why? Because the Hope was running out of space. Even though it had undergone plenty of upgrades, the Hope currently had a population of 200,000 plus and had to set up special rooms to accommodate Earth and the new planet's ecosystem. Now they also had the new tech center and military square, so there was not much space left on the Hope. These 100 species could not be mixed with Earth's and the new planet's ecosystem, and thus they had to open at least another 100 new farming areas. Where would they find so much space on the Hope?

Let's not fuss over these issues for now, let's just leave them for Ol' Yao to worry about... But seriously... Our new mothership, Kun Lun... It's time to start building it since we're soon going to become a level 3 space civilization.

This thought was on Guang Zhen's mind as he sat down and closed his eyes to rest. It was going to take several hours to get to their next stop, so they used this free time to have dinner or sleep. The next day, when they woke up, the vehicle had already arrived at the mineral trading depot.

The structure was not dissimilar to the supply market, the only difference was the appearance of some civilization's security unit.

They were either on patrol or on guard duty. In terms of general security, this place was tighter than supply market.

The trade sequence here was similar to the one at the supply market, the only difference was that this time, Guang Zhen was carrying a safe. After some questions, the group moved to a depot manned by a level 3 space civilization. After they stated their intentions, they were invited to go inside for appraisal and trade. Soon, about 10 members of the level 3 space civilization arrived to greet them.

The trade went smoothly. Even though Star Dust Gold was expensive, it was not so valuable that it would cause a level 3 space civilization to shamelessly rob them. After all, Star Dust God was only used to create products from level 3 space civilizations, and twenty kilograms of its purified form was not valuable enough to incite these people's greed.

Therefore, after the appraisal, Guang Zhen's group left the place safely with the Shelter's currency value. After checking the accounts, Guang Zhen realized that they had only spent one-tenth of the large amount of money they got from the trade. They were planning to find a way to spend the rest of the money, because it was unlikely that they would return to this Shelter in the future.

The rest was simple. The credit issue was solved after using the Shelter's internal server system to clear the debt. The feeling of being debt free was indeed wonderful. They still had plenty of money left to purchase a large amount of supplies, technologies, and information.

Their first stop was the mineral trading depot. Naturally, they started with purchasing the stuff that the Hope needed. They skipped super rare minerals like Star Dust Gold because the fact that humanity already had a large amount of it aside, they did not have enough money to buy it and humans had no use for it at the moment.

The group had a list that was given by the Academy before they left the Hope. The various big scientists had named their purchasing needs. For example, there was equipment and parts for something called the super large hadron collider, the sensitive technologies, mineral processors, large equipment, and the additional parts to the second generation mesomeric resonator that the Hope desperately needed. Those were all on the list.

This trading depot had once again opened their eyes. There were many minerals that they had not heard of before. For example, they saw someone auctioning a mineral called plasmatic light absorbent ore. Its actual usage was unknown to level 3 space civilizations as well. This type of material could absorb all light and energy to increase its own mass. It looked incredible and sounded rare, but since they did not know its purpose or benefits, it might be a natural ticking time bomb, so Guang Zhen's group did not bid for it.

Just like that, the journey at the mineral trading depot came to a close. The group spent another night on the vehicle, and on the third day, they arrived at the machine factory for level 2 and 3 space civilizations.

This place was much greater in scale than the two previous trading centers because of the scale of the items that were traded there, which included the blueprints of a civilization's mothership.

The things being traded here were the various products of level 2 and 3 space civilizations, from everyday goods to technological products and weapons, including space battleships, patrol ships, and various other ships. The most exaggerated was definitely the mothership that was parked there...

Once again, the choices blinded everyone's eyes. Many things were beyond their wildest imagination.

For example, they sold plasma weapons here. Simple guns that looked like normal pistols but fired plasma bullets. Of course, the

trading procedure here was much more complicated than at the two previous trading centers. The products here could not be purchased by normal civilizations, they had to refer to another number, and that number was the so-called Shelter reputation points. These reputation points did not matter when one was purchasing the products of level 2 space civilizations, but when purchasing a level 3 space civilization's products, especially the weapons and battleships, it mattered. Purchasing them required a high amount of reputation, and it was not something the Hope could afford currently.

Regardless, the many products from level 2 space civilizations and the limited options of level 3 space civilization products that did not need Shelter reputation were already enough to confuse Guang Zhen's group...

And just like that, the third day passed without incident...



# Chapter 366: Information... and Arrival

---

They bought the least items at the machine factory, but the price of each was sky high. In total, they had spent about one-third of their money, and even though they were not left with much, it was still quite a hefty sum.

Next would be the technology and information trading centers. In reality, everyone, including Blue 6, did not have high hopes for technology trading, so stopping there was more for the purpose of sight-seeing.

This was because there was a tighter control on technology than on machines and blueprints. Even a normal level 2 space civilization's technology required a large amount of reputation, much less a level 3 space civilization's technology. Generally speaking, it was impossible for a space civilization that was not from the Shelter to purchase any technology. Of course, selling the technology was a non-issue and the price of technology was the highest among all the possible trades. Some technologies would not be traded with money, as money could not measure them, so those could only be traded using soul or other technology.

Of course, there was no harm to go sight-seeing... For example, when Guang Zhen saw a shop selling the complete cold agglutination technology, it caused the group to salivate greatly. They all wanted to buy it. However, the first trade condition alone was enough to deter them. They had to have reached the reputation level of Honorable at the Shelter. Other than that, there were also other ridiculous conditions. In other words, this technology was not purchasable via money. After all, it was a technology from the fifth revolution.

The group spent the rest of the day in the vehicle as they moved towards their last stop and probably where they would spend the most time for this shopping trip... the information trading center!

The cosmos was actually not that quiet. Many civilizations were constantly communicating in their own ways and, not as mankind envisioned, warring every time they met. After all, without the limitation of light speed and the law of conservation of life, the materials in space could be described as limitless. Therefore, there would be no war for supplies, and in reality, if not for the fact that there was still the need to preserve one's own civilization against others, there probably would not have been any conflicts in space. After all, the law of conservation of life would have already taken up too much time to deal with.

Therefore, the information in space was also limitless and most of it could be called a priceless treasure. For example, the coordinates for the ruins of a dying civilization, mining spots for rare minerals, or coordinates for other Shelters and star paths. There was a lot of different useful information, and it was all marked with a price.

The humans' arrival at the trading center did not raise any eyebrows, because compared to the previous trading centers, the information trading center was the most crowded. This was because most information would be traded using money, and the reputation value was not involved. Many civilizations were there to trade rumors that they had heard for money or used money to confirm rumors that they had heard. All sorts of trades were carried out in this small trading center.

Guang Zhen's main purpose of this trip was to purchase information on the star path at the fringe of this solar system. He wanted to know the coordinates of the star path, find out about the current situation there, and to investigate the various civilizations' reactions to the incoming space decay, to see whether they had knowledge of that or not. This information would decide the blueprint of what humanity would do for the next decade.

The trading procedure there was fairly simple. Similarly, the information of the trade items could be downloaded from the

communication port. If there was information that attracted the eyes, one would enter the building to consolidate the trade. Of course, there was also the so-called official trading center. The place had a ginormous information plaque and various tradeable information panned through the plaque.

While back on the ship, life on the Hope had pretty much returned to normal. In fact, after the Hope entered the Shelter, other than the initial one or two days of fear and anxiety, everyone's moods slowly relaxed since nothing notable really happened. Life continued smoothly, and entering the Shelter did not affect the Hope much.

In the following days, as the large amount of supplies, food, minerals, and machineries arrived, the Hope sighed in great relief, relieved that the trades were successful. This meant that there was order in the Shelter and no alien civilizations were out to bully those who were weaker than them. With the law in place, humanity did not need to worry about sudden attacks when they were in the Shelter.

However, this peace did not last for long...

It was around 2 AM when Yao Yuan was shook awake. He was in deep sleep then, but he flipped over with alertness as his two eyes flew open when the communicators rang. His body was still waking up, but his mind was indubitably alert.

"What's going on?"

Yao Yuan looked at the source of sound. Due to his job description, he had numerous communicators. One of them was connected to the Hope's central mainframe, it allowed him to initiate the ship's self-destruct sequence at the shortest notice.

The communicator that rang was the emergency communicator. When Yao Yuan noticed that it was this one that rang, his heart skipped a beat as he grabbed the communicator to answer it.

A male voice came from the other end immediately. "Chancellor, this is Liu Bai... We have an emergency. Several hundred aliens are gathered outside the Hope, they call themselves the coalition of several level 2 space civilizations. They are the citizens of this Shelter and they claim the Hope is harboring one of their fugitives and demand we give them an acceptable explanation."

Yao Yuan shook his head as he jumped up to rush into the bathroom to splash his face with cold water. Then he roared, "Fugitive? You must be kidding! We have only been here for how many days? Furthermore, this is space age; couldn't they have used the surveillance in the harbor? They would have known easily if there was anyone that entered the Hope illegally... Where are these aliens now? Have they entered the Hope?"

Liu Bai continued, "No, not yet, our Defense Unit soldiers are keeping watch at the various entrances, but these aliens are extremely adamant, like they have some real proof on them..."

Yao Yuan shivered as the cold water splashed his face. At the same time, he had entered the Thinker mode and replied immediately, "No matter what, do not allow even one alien into the Hope, and f\*ck the proof! It is because they do not have proof that they are braying for blood and not storming in directly... Wait for me, I'm coming over now."

10 minutes later, Yao Yuan arrived at the Hope's central command. A few Black Star Troopers who were on duty that day and about 10 Defense Unit majors were present.

"Liu Bai, bring me up to speed on the details."

Yao Yuan was sitting in the captain's chair, looking at the few giant siege machines and about several thousand aliens gathered outside of the Hope with a drawn face... Yes, the number was increasing. The initial number of 20 plus alien civilizations had increased to 60 plus, and it was still increasing...

After a bow, Liu Bai said, "At 2:40 AM, the first alien race arrived."

In about several minutes, about 10 other alien races arrived, and they demanded we allow them access into the Hope because they suspect we are harboring one of their most wanted fugitives. Of course, that demand has been denied. After that, more space civilizations arrived. Currently, there are representatives from about 68 alien races gathered outside of the Hope."

"Fugitive? Ridiculous excuse!"

Yao Yuan was so angry that the vein on his brain was almost popping. He paced the room before sitting back down the chair. "Continue denying their demands... By the way, what else have they said?"

Liu Bai nodded and continued, "Yes, they claimed that if we refuse their demand to enter the ship for inspection, then they will pool together their grievances to report to the only level 3 space civilization currently watching over the Shelter to expel us from this Shelter, or we leave on our own... That was what they said."

There was an unstoppable fury burning in Yao Yuan's eyes. He took a few deep breaths to calm himself and finally uttered, "Wake all the Black Star Troopers now. The Hope is now in first grade alert state... At the same time, get Professor Bo Li, Speaker Matt, and every high official on the Hope here. It is time for a large meeting..."

The efficiency on the Hope was high. In fact, when they heard that aliens were mounting a forced entry into the Hope, everyone rushed to the scene no matter how tired they were. Even some mid-tier officers had arrived. Other than the general public, who still did not know anything, the rest of the Hope was on high alert.

"...That is how the current situation is. These aliens are demanding to come in for an inspection or want us to get out of this Shelter. Also, about half an hour ago, our men asked the patrols of this Shelter's level 3 space civilization to intervene and they said... for the sake of this Shelter's peace, they advised us to be

obedient. Right, that is just hilarious, they want us to be obedient..."

Yao Yuan's anger was enough to swallow the sky and there was an indiscernible iciness in his voice.

To his consternation and surprise, when he said these words, other than the silent Black Star Trooper and Defense Unit majors, the rest of the representatives and government officials were busy discussing... other than denying the aliens entry into the Hope, most of them were discussing the option of...

They wanted to agree to the aliens' demands and leave the Shelter in the Hope with the few vassal spaceships in tow?!

# Chapter 367: Two Days!

---

"What exactly are we missing..."

In the busy meeting room, as many took the stage to espouse their viewpoints, no one realized that Yao Yuan and a small of people had already slipped out of the room.

In a secret meeting room near the meeting room, Yao Yuan hosted the discussion in an indescribable tone. He was not angry or disappointed, he sounded... unusually calm.

The people in the room shivered involuntarily when they heard him. Other than these few people, no one knew how that felt like.

Liu Bai's eyes twitched and he said immediately, "Ol' captain, do calm down... At least we have to wait for Captain Wong to return first."

Yao Yuan lowered his head slightly. "Don't worry, I am incredibly calm, Liu Bai, you don't have to worry about me... Let's continue discussing the issue at hand. First, being expelled out of the Shelter is impossible. At least while we are here, there are rules to follow, but once we step out of this place, we will have to deal with the collective assault of several hundred or even thousand alien spaceships, so... at least before this thing is resolved, we are not going to leave this Shelter!"

Present were also Ren Tao and Xiao Niao. Ren Tao did not comment anything, but Xiao Niao nodded immediately to add, "That's right, we mustn't leave the Shelter until we are certain of these aliens' real intentions. Also... I hate to say this, but I wish to confirm whether Blue 6's recent activities are normal or not. After all, this happened after he left the Hope."

Others showed contemplative expressions, only Yao Yuan retorted, "No, that is not possible. At least the possibility is below ten or twenty percent. We can be certain he did not carry any

weapons or technological products on him, and secondly, I believe in Guang Zhen's observation skills. Until Guang Zhen confirms Blue 6 has leaked something to these people, I will not believe Blue 6 has done something to harm this ship!"

Xiao Niao was silenced immediately and the room was quiet. After a long time, Ren Tao opened his mouth to ask, "What is your plan? You are the chancellor, you have total control over the power of foreign affairs and the military. What do you plan to do then?"

"...Wait." Yao Yuan looked intently at Ren Tao and answered.

"Wait?" Everyone mumbled in confused repetition as they looked at Yao Yuan.

Yao Yuan repeated with confidence, "Yes, wait... I can give any order and they will be accepted by everyone... But! Do you all really want to have a society comprising of only heroes and commoners? Naturally, I can become the hero again, but what's next? These people... everyone else can only be commoners! Do we really wish to have humanity's future always decided by me or an extremely small group of elites?"

The room was quiet again. In fact, those sitting there could be considered Yao Yuan's trusted subordinates. Even though he had the title of Chancellor and was undeniably the leader of humanity, Yao Yuan did not care for power. He had been trying to cultivate a sense of democracy on the Hope. After all, it was he who built the House of Representatives from the ground up.

However, Yao Yuan was not an indecisive individual. He had always maintained a straight-forward style of doing things. The many crises the Hope had faced ever since it left Earth cultivated this quality in him, but this time... he chose to hand the choice to the majority?

(Is this due to feeling of grievances?)



Xiao Niao, Ren Tao, and Liu Bai had this thought in their minds.

Man, the wisest of all creatures (when on Earth) became so insignificant after they entered space. This was to be expected, but at least human beings still had the courage and hope to climb upwards, and the Hope had exemplified that again and again in its journey. However... this journey also showed mankind the absolute crushing power and danger of the difference between space civilizations.

For example, the war with the space merchants. Even though they were a normal and dying level 2 space civilization, that dangerous victory was won with the sacrifice of plenty of heroes. The victory was not really worth celebrating!

After that, they hid from all space civilizations that they might stumble into, hiding in the dark corners of space for so many years. Later, to save the Noah One, they ran into the Blue Race... The large military fleet that humankind could not even envision, and they had no choice but to again hide themselves like a f\*cking turtle...

After saving the Noah One, humankind again had to escape like an ant facing the impossible Song of Destruction...

The real scary thing about survival in space was not weakness but being content with one's weakness!

This was something humankind knew, but after a series of interactions with impossibly powerful space civilizations, even though humankind had evolved to the peak of level 2 space civilizations and had faced other civilizations weaker than them, there was still fear and despair gripping them... This was truly the meaning of being content with and accepting of one's weakness!

And this was probably where Yao Yuan's feeling of grievance came from...

These were the thoughts coursing through Ren Tao's and Xiao

Niao's minds. In fact, Cheng Wen, who was present, thought about it as well. These clues appeared naturally in the Thinkers' minds...

"Wait!"

Suddenly, Xiao Niao yelled out. In fact, both Ren Tao and Cheng Wen's lips were twitching, but they were just slower than Xiao Niao, who then added hurriedly, "Wait a minute, Chancellor, please scan the spacesuits of all the aliens gathered outside and compare them to the information we have in the central mainframe."

Yao Yuan was startled by this unusual demand by Xiao Niao, but he still used his communicator to pass on the order to the people in the surveillance room. Very soon, the answer Xiao Niao was waiting for arrived...

"Space merchants! These people are wearing spacesuits similar to the space merchants'!"

The information made the hearts of the people in the secret meeting room grow heavy. This was truly an impossible coincidence... Or should we say, incredible encounter. After all, the Hope had warped so many times after parting with the space merchants. They had also used warp drive to save the Noah One. The complication of the travel routes they had taken confused even humanity themselves.

However, after so many twists and turns, they still managed to run into the space merchants? Just how incredible was this? The possibility of this happening was smaller than one percent.

"Could it be another branch of space merchants? Blue 6 said that the space merchants are a large conglomerate that has level 2 space civilizations, level 3 space civilizations, and even level 4 space civilizations. Perhaps this is another group of space merchants who use the same uniformed spacesuits?" Speaker Matt asked.

However, he soon shook his head. The reason was simple: the

spacesuits had to be built to suit the race's own physical constitution. For example, a bug-type alien would not fit into a human being's spacesuit. They had different body shapes, so how could they use the same spacesuit? Furthermore, from the AI comparison, the similarity to the space merchants' spacesuit was more than 90 percent, which could only mean that... it was almost certain that these were the space merchants that they had combated with!

"In other words... our secrets have been leaked?"

The possibility made everyone there break out in cold sweat. What did this mean? This meant that human beings could be facing the collective assault and raids of several level 3 space civilizations and several hundred level 2 space civilizations. The scariest thing was that the Hope could not use space warp. They were stuck in the Shelter and were practically cornered!

Yao Yuan stood up and announced, "When Guang Zhen's group returns... The Hope will enter highest combat alert. We might need to cut our way out!"

The secret meeting ended just like that. The few orders given by Yao Yuan were carried out. Other than the few of them, no one knew about the real situation. After all, this might be a crisis that might end the human race, so it was better to keep it under wraps and not raise the alarm.

After the secret meeting ended, Yao Yuan called for Bo Li. After ensuring there was no one around, he whispered quickly, "How is 'that thing' coming along?"

Bo Li looked at Yao Yuan before shaking her head. "Still in the works, having to deal with efficiency and launching method..."

Yao Yuan interrupted her before she could finish, "We don't have the time, you know how dangerous the situation is. If it is truly the same space merchants scheming against us, then we are truly in deep trouble. 'That thing' is the only thing that can help us destroy

this Shelter at the shortest notice. I need your confirmation that I can use it when the situation calls for it."

Bo Li was deep in thought for so long that Yao Yuan started to get impatient. When he thought she had gone stupefied, she said, "Give me two days, and do not come to disturb me in these two days. I will try my best to provide you with the half-prototype. But whether it will be successful or not, I cannot guarantee, and this might harm the Hope in return, so you better think about it..." Then she turned to get into the electromobile without waiting for Yao Yuan to answer.

Two days...

That was when Guang Zhen's group was scheduled to return!

## Chapter 368: ...To Declare War!

---

While the Hope's high officials were in a mess trying to come to an agreed solution to deal with the provocation from the gathered alien civilizations, time was ticking and the amount of alien races outside of the Hope had reached 130 plus. The words they used were increasingly incendiary and impolite; there were even requests to hand over a certain amount of soul as compensation. In other words, they demanded the Hope surrendered their livestock or... members of the human race!

How was that possible? Even Yao Yuan could not submit to that demand, much less these representatives and officials who wanted to yield. If they did surrender, peace could be maintained temporarily with brute force, but the cracks would have happened. At most, in the next ten years, the human race would implode upon itself.

Then what should they do?

Before Yao Yuan appeared to make the decision, an increasing number of high officials agreed to leave the Shelter. After all, since the Shelter had nothing but hostility towards them, under these circumstances, they might as well. The opponent wanted them to leave the Shelter, and that might not be that bad of an idea.

Only those who knew about the actual information, such as the presence of space merchants, were worried. Leaving the Shelter? If the level 3 space civilizations knew about the actual truth of the human situation, then leaving the Shelter equalled to signing their death warrants, because then the level 3 space civilizations could openly attack and raid the Hope.

Therefore, the Hope was truly in the grasp of chaos in these two days. As the number of people who knew about the truth increased, the number of civilians that were clued in to the situation also increased. The entire ship was in deep discussion,

and the majority wished to leave this hostile Shelter as soon as possible.

In the human society, only a small number of people wished for resistance and war...

Two days later, Guang Zhen's group, who had received the emergency call, finally reached the Hope. When they arrived at the harbor, the place already had more than a thousand aliens, each in their unique get-ups. At the far corners, they could spot many level 2 space civilizations' siege engines. At first glance, it looked like these people and weapons were surrounding the Hope, like they were preparing for war!

Even though Guang Zhen's group knew something serious had happened, this was ultimately inside a Shelter, so their communication with the Hope when they were outside would be monitored at all times. Plenty of information was not communicated, they were only called to get back to the ship as soon as possible. They were not given any actual information.

Therefore, when they saw the situation outside of the Hope, everyone's jaws were on the floor. This was especially true for Blue 6. His mouth was gaping. This was a Shelter! Could it be that those level 3 space civilizations no longer wanted to keep this Shelter? How could they openly threaten to raid inside a Shelter? This was something even those at the peak of level 3 space civilizations would not attempt to do.

However, upon closer observation, Blue 6 realized that there were no signs of combat and that those present in the rally were all wearing level 2 space civilization armor and spacesuits, and most were on the lower end of level 2 space civilizations. As someone from a senior space race, the Blue Race, this level of observation still could not escape Blue 6's eyes.

Then what was really going on? Did these lower level 2 space civilizations not want to live anymore? Even though the Hope was

not a level 3 space civilization yet, it was definitely a high end level 2 space civilization. They might only have one spaceship, but in the context of a real war, they could definitely grind these people into dust.

Think about it this way: the Hope belonged to a civilization that had the Genesis, and they had enough cosmic adapters to pilot Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s. These civilizations with electromagnetic shields were completely no match for that. Furthermore, Blue 6 was certain that these gathered civilizations were on their decline and that most of their population were retards. If they could truly pose a threat to the human race, which was full of elites, then truly the world had gone insane.

So these weak races were there to seek death? Even though technically speaking, the Hope would not be able to launch any attack inside the Shelter.

Blue 6, unlike the human race, who had been facing a series of traumatic encounters ever since they left Earth, came from the Blue Race, the kingly existence that practically ruled over the cosmos. He had never felt so insulted in his race's thousand year reign. The thing that angered him the most was that the humiliation was directed towards the human race that he was currently serving, the race he had high hopes for, and the race he sincerely wished would rise to the top!

This was such a face slap!

Guang Zhen had a drawn face, Blue 6 was furious beyond belief, and the others either were in shock, fear, anger, or confusion as they entered the Hope under the scrutiny of these thousand plus aliens. The thought of rest was tossed out of their minds as they rushed to the Hope's central command. When they arrived, they noticed that Yao Yuan was already in discussion with about ten people.

Guang Zhen knew that this was not the time for decency. He

directly interrupted the discussion by asking Yao Yuan, "Ol' Yao, what is the situation now? Our confidential methods have been in effect ever since we entered this Shelter, so why are there so many aliens surrounding us? What happened?"

Yao Yuan nodded silently. After he concluded the discussion with the group of people, he pulled Guang Zhen aside. "Things are a bit complicated... internally and externally. Don't rush. Sit down and I will explain everything to you."

Guang Zhen and the rest of his group, including Blue 6, ran to central command. They were still panting for breath. Guang Zhen took a few deep breaths and found a chair nearby to sit on. After a few seconds, he said, "Ol' Yao, just cut to the chase, what has happened and how bad is it?"

Yao Yuan sighed. "Do you still remember the space merchants? The dying civilization that fought with us? We discovered their people among the collection of aliens gathered outside..."

Then Yao Yuan continued to relay all the information to Guang Zhen and gave him the extrapolation constructed by the two Thinkers.

"...After our analysis, we agreed that the space merchants did not announce our actual situation to the whole universe yet, or else we would not be dealing with only these level 2 space civilizations but also some level 3 space civilizations..."

"...Secondly, the space merchants' plan is probably to chase us out of this Shelter just so they can 'legally' attack us out of the confines of the Shelter. For this, they have collaborated with other level 2 space civilizations, but I doubt they have revealed to them that their main purpose was to go after our Homo Evolutis..."

"...So we definitely cannot leave this Shelter."

Blue 6 was listening quietly when Yao Yuan was in conversation with Guang Zhen. Even though he was confused by some of the



words, he did not interrupt, because one of them was the Hope's Emperor and the other the Hope's royal prince. His position did not allow him to comment... at least that was what his education under the feudal system taught him.

Therefore, when their conversation reached a lull, before they continued to discuss the method to overcome this, he excused himself and left. He did not say anything as he returned to his residence with his adjutant in tow. He found two Black Star Troopers on duty and two other Ambassadors of Peace assigned to the Ministry of Foreign Affairs and started to enquire after the incident that happened between humanity and the space merchants.

"...Once raided by space merchants? That kind of retarded civilization? Okay, so the Hope was just becoming a level 2 space civilization?"

"...What? They have killed your people?!"

"...What? Even killed cosmic adapters?!!!"

"...What? Even the Black Star Unit, the royal committee that would be next to take the throne had lost one member?!!! Lost many cosmic adapters as well?!!"

"...What... Did not wipe them out... and let them go..."

Blue 6 was first shocked, then angered, then furious, like the anger was going to explode from his head. The more he learned, the colder his tone become. Eventually, his words were simply laced with iciness.

"Get all the Ambassadors of Peace and Defense Unit soldiers to gather! It is time for the Ministry of Foreign Affairs to do some work! Let us go to the House of Representatives first! I need a final confirmation on whether we should be doing this or not!"

When Blue 6 said so, the few adjutants seemed to realize something. One of them quickly fussed around Blue 6, helping him

smooth down the creases on his shirt. The rest of them started to make calls. The Ambassadors of Peace and Defense Unit soldiers were officially under the rules of the Barracks, so they managed to gather in the shortest period of time. Then they followed Blue 6 to the House of Representatives.

At the House of Representatives, Blue 6 did not enter to give any speech but stood at the entrance listening to the various representatives' arguments. Most of them were discussing the options of leaving the Hope, or bribing them with gold, or appealing to the level 3 space civilizations. They were focusing on various forms of compromise...

Blue 6's expression was even colder when he heard this. Even those Black Star Troopers and Defense Unit soldiers were incensed. Of course, there was worry mixed in as well.

"Let us go."

Blue 6 suddenly turned and whispered this order. Then he moved to a secluded corner to put on his space armor... Yes, as a Homo Evolutis, or the Blue Race's cosmic adapter, even though Yao Yuan would not return the Blue Race's combat spacesuit to him, he had still assigned him his personal Black Star Space Armor.

Then Blue 6's group arrived at one of the Hope's entrances that led down to the harbor. Using his internal communicator, he gave a speech to all the communicators with the same frequency. This included all the Black Star Troopers and the Hope's central command.

"This is Blue 6, the Hope's government and human civilization's Minister of Foreign Affairs. Here, I will commit to my responsibility and duty as the Minister of Foreign Affairs... and represent humanity to declare war on the space merchants!

"This is not only because they have killed humanity's most precious cosmic adapters, not only because they are currently provoking us, not only because they have in their grasp humanity's

biggest secret, not only because of all this...

"But because the space merchants are currently trampling on our human souls! They are trampling on our spirits and hope!

"As the sixth heir to the Blue Race's throne, ever since I was young, I was given the education of one universal truth... In space, being weak is not a sin, but the real sin is being contentment with weakness, thinking one belongs in the realm of the weak, resistant to improvements. This kind of lifeform, this kind of race, we call them enslaved races! We are allowed to kill their people, humiliate them, and trample on them because the enslaved are the most disgusting and degrading existence in space!

"Now the space merchants and these dying level 2 space civilizations are treating us like an enslaved race, and I did not see the agitation, the anger, and the fury for combat that I should be seeing. Honestly, I am greatly disappointed. Humanity, the race that I swore my fealty to, why... why are you acting like this? Isn't this humiliation enough for you to take up arms and fight? Or... is your desire for life so strong that it has overshadowed your will to fight for your dignity? In that case, why not surrender yourself to be reared as livestock by these aliens?

"Now... I will take this step with the Ambassadors of Peace, all the Defense Unit soldiers, and the Black Star Troopers. Of course, I know about the Barracks' ban that prevents any Black Star Troopers from leaving the Hope. And I have no idea how many will take this step with me, but regardless, this is a step that has to be made. I have prepared to lay down my life not for the Blue Race, not for my name, but for you humans, on whom I have set store a great amount of hope. Humans, listen to me... The glory of a civilizations comes not from economy, science, or population, but from blood and soul, life and combat!

"I may die, but I will never regret this decision that I have made, because... to be able to save a civilization, one that I approve of and predict will have a glorious future, to save it from the shackles of

an enslaved race, I am nothing but proud!

"And... today... at this moment!

"I will represent you to declare this war!"

Unbeknownst to him, Blue 6's voice was tweaked at central command to be broadcasted throughout the Hope. Everyone, be it the higher officers or the civilians, they had heard everything he had to say. And as he said so, Blue 6 stepped out into the harbor with his head held high and his chest out. Behind him, the few Blue Race adjutants followed him with their heads held equally high...

# Chapter 369: Ultimate Weapon, Gravity Cannon!

---

Starting from a few years ago, Yao Yuan's group had been discussing the possible ways that humanity might go extinct and the possible solution to these problems. If it was due to a cosmic disaster, then nothing could be done. Even a high tier space civilization would not be able to escape the fate of extinction.

But what if it was a manmade disaster? Like the encounter with the zerg alien, space merchants, or junkyard civilization? When the Hope came up against the challenge from these powerful forces, would they be able to survive or even achieve victory?

Of course, if the opponent was a level 4, 5, 6, or even 7 space civilization, then the answer was obvious. The Hope needn't even struggle, because the chance of escaping, much less winning, would be zero. However, if this did happen, the greater possibility was humanity would be treated like an ant, and if humanity did not actively provoke them, the Hope would most likely be left alone... given that they did not realize humanity had so many Homo Evolutis.

Therefore, the Hope's biggest danger would come from level 2 and level 3 space civilizations.

This was currently the Hope's main enemy. Due to the Hope's unique situation, humanity's military and scientific levels were high thanks to the various opportune encounters, but since the time they had spent in space was extremely short, the population had remained practically the same compared to when they left Earth. In fact, after leaving Earth, humanity only had the Hope, the sole mothership. Even though they had created a few other spaceships on the new planet with its paradise environment, those were battleships. They were a level 2 space civilization's mini patrol spaceships; they could not even be equipped with cannons,

and the Hope did not have a large fleet of them either.

Compared to humanity, the normal construct of a mature level 2 space civilization should include a gigantic mothership that could survive for one thousand to two thousand years in space without the need for supplies, a mothership large enough to support the survival of at least two billion people in space.

They would also have one to two large spaceship fleets, each fleet with three hundred to five hundred battleships and at least thirty main battleships with sizes similar to the Hope's. In fact, the few vassal races to humanity had such battleships as their motherships, and the rest would be mid-size battleships and patrol ships.

Therefore, even though humanity's technology was better than these space civilizations', in terms of numbers, humanity was no match for them. This was the understanding shared by the majority of the people in the ship: humanity was still a weak level 2 space civilization. Actually, this understanding was not completely wrong, and this was why even Yao Yuan decided to have interaction with other space civilization only after the Hope became a level 3 space civilization. The key reason was the lack of internal confidence.

However!

If a war or interaction with other space civilizations was unavoidable, for example, the forceful raid done by the space merchants, then the Hope needed an ultimate weapon that could tip the scales from the number disadvantage. It was not the Genesis or Requiem, but something unique to humanity that could be created from everything humanity currently had access to.

With this idea in mind, two task forces were formed by Yao Yuan, each led by Bo Li and Ivan. Yao Yuan named them respectively: the Black Hole Task Force and Messiah Task Force.

For Ivan's Messiah Task Force, the order he was given was to

deepen the research on the alien plant, specifically to figure out whether the possibility of creating a super weapon using the alien plant was possible or not, a super weapon that could nullify their opponent's mothership. Of course, this research was extremely difficult. A few years had passed and almost no progress had been made.

The Black Hole Task Force led by Bo Li was given the order to weaponize the super future tech that had somehow landed in humanity's grasp... the anti-gravity system!

Ever since the Hope entered the cosmos, a large amount of scientists had been researching this anti-gravity system, but perhaps the difference in technology was simply too much, as they had made zero inroads. The only thing they found out was that anti-gravity system was like an extremely convoluted electrical circuit. It was through the passage of electricity that gravity or anti-gravity could be created. The key difference separating the two was whether the charge was current or countercurrent, and the size of the current also decided the gravity or anti-gravity force created.

According to Bo Li's research and the hypothesis from Yao Yuan and the two other Thinkers... this anti-gravity system could be used to create an ultimate weapon!

Yes, gravity!

It was common knowledge that when a spaceship had reached a certain size and mass, it would distance itself from all the planets. The reason for this was because when something with a large mass got closer to a planet or something with high gravity force, it would create the so-called tidal force. In other words, the difference in generated gravitational force of various points on the large object created by the difference in the various points' distance to the source of gravity. This would be a fatal damage to the object. For example, if this Shelter was to get close to any large planet, like the moon, then it would be torn into shreds.

Of course, due to the improvements in science, like the AI and new metallurgy, the improvements in construction of space increased the tensile strength of the spaceship and thus increased its resistance to tidal force.

However, it was a known fact that they did not have anti-gravitational systems. This was a lack that could be exploited. As long as they could ensure that the tidal force experienced by these spaceships was increased to the maximum in that concentrated moment, then the result would be simple... the spaceship would be torn open from within despite its electromagnetic or plasma shield!

This was the Black Hole Task Force's mission, to research and create an ultimate weapon using the anti-gravitational system as its core. Bo Li called it the Gravity Cannon!

The Hope's current scientific level was actually very high already, especially after the year they spent in warp drive where humanity had been absorbing the sciences from the vassal races like a sponge sucking up water. If not for the fact that these vassal races did not have much population left and most of their scientists had perished, the Hope would have been a peak level 2 space civilization by now.

The research into the Gravity Cannon continued in this one year, and now the Hope finally had enough technology to use the plasma technology showcased by the space merchants in their earlier war, the ability to construct plasma objects from thin air, and the ability to use pure energy to construct electrical circuits and various parts. Of course, they would not be physical and had a pure energy state, and at the moment the energy ran out, the creation would disappear. However, with enough supply of energy, a large energy weapon could be created, a weapon as large as the Genesis Cannon.

This required the consolidation of a great amount of energy, and normal electrical energy could not be used. Only plasma energy could be used to finish this. Other than the great amount of



exhaustion, it would also require the minute calculation of AI. In other words, the technical requirements for this virtual energy construct were numerous, and at the end of the day, they might not even be useable.

However...

When this technology met the electrical circuit of the anti-gravitational system, then most of problems could be solved... Using plasma energy to create layers of anti-gravitational systems and using the powerful plasma energy current to surge through these circuits, then a gravitational force rivalling the force of a large planetary object could be created in a short amount of time. And this super gravity would cause severe damage to any spaceship!

Of course, to manifest this would be extremely difficult. Since it was a secret weapon, until now there had not been a field test yet. It had only gone through AI simulation. The results showed that there was a limit to its range. If the range was over 30,000 kilometers, then the power of the Gravity Cannon would greatly decrease. Unless they could find a way to enhance the anti-gravitational system or have a more stable energy source, then that would be the limit of the Gravity Cannon.

Of course... this was only a half-prototype!

Therefore, Yao Yuan, Ren Tao, and Xiao Niao were of the same mind that the anti-gravitational system could be high tier space civilization's siege weaponry that could be used to create... an actual black hole.

Back to the Hope, as Blue 6 walked from his own residence to the House of Representatives, a message was transferred from the labs to Yao Yuan in central command. It stated that Professor Bo Li had fainted in the lab and was being rushed to the hospital. According to rudimentary checking, it seemed to be caused by the over-exertion of Homo Evolutis power. Thankfully, the hospital had

dealt with such cases before and they promised that she would wake up after five to ten days. Her situation was not that serious.

Another message from the same lab had reported that Professor Bo Li had told the member of the Black Hole Task Force that the design for the draft prototype of the Gravity Cannon had been entered into the AI and could be utilized already. The time of energy charging was between 12 minutes 31 seconds to 12 minutes 37 seconds. The prediction for the active time for the cannon was 2 minutes and 12 seconds. In that period, the Hope would be unable to use plasma shields, and the efficiency of the electromagnetic shield would be minimized to its lowest!

Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen were speechless for a long time after reading these messages. Then Yao Yuan announced with a drawn face, "The thing has been created. Even though it is still a draft prototype, I want to give it a go!"

Guang Zhen nodded silently as he slapped Yao Yuan on his shoulder. "Then we will give it a run. I have had enough of running. If we compromise yet again, then humanity will really have surrendered its future!"

At this time, Blue 6 had started his speech using the communicator inside his space armor. Listening to him, Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, and everyone in central command were silent. Several seconds later, Yao Yuan suddenly yelled, "Broadcast this to the rest of the ship! This is something... that is needed to be heard by the people. This is a speech coming from one's soul, blood, and spirit! Remember it, and then..."

"All Black Star Troopers gather at the Space Combat Jet hangars and align all the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s into preparatory track. The Hope..."

"Is entering combat mode!"

# Chapter 370: Slaughter Them All!

---

After Blue 6 finished his speech, he stepped forward bravely. The first to follow him was the group of Blue Race adjutants. They knew what was happening and what the sacrifice was, but they followed Blue 6 without question.

In comparison, the Defense Unit soldiers and Black Star Troopers hesitated. It was not that they did not dare to follow Blue 6, anyone who heard Blue 6 had a fire burning within them. As long as the person was human, he or she would willingly follow Blue 6. The glory and the honor that were going to be redeemed, it was greater than the fear of death.

However...

Other than death, these people had more things to consider. For example, their families, the Hope, the entirety humanity... These considerations weighed down on them because even though their own deaths were negligible, if their deaths caused the deaths of their families and friends, then death would not have solved their sins.

But even so!

At least one-third of the Defense Unit soldiers and four Black Star Troopers followed Blue 6. As Blue 6 was about to leave the Hope, Yao Yuan's voice suddenly appeared in everyone's communicators.

"Minister of Foreign Affairs, Blue 6, in my capacity as the Hope's captain and the Chancellor of the human government, I award you the power to declare war against others and present you with the assistance from Units 1, 2, and 3 of the Black Star Troopers to slaughter the evildoers and those alien scum that have humiliated us humans!"

This order was given through the public channel, and it managed to make the blood of the people boil. Even though certain parts of

society still had reservations and they still had their own opinions, Blue 6's earlier speech had greatly raised the human fighting spirit. The speech, with its awe-inspiring righteousness, had raised an unstoppable popular support. Now combined with Yao Yuan's verbal confirmation, the popular support had become officialised, and even if certain people still maintained the desire to compromise, their voices were swallowed by the majority.

At the same time, Yao Yuan communicated directly with Blue 6 using a private channel, "You have acted rashly this time and we will discuss the punishment for this transgression later. Now, listen to these orders... First, naturally, is to declare war against all the level 2 space civilizations that are provoking us. We will only accept their unconditional surrender and nothing else.

"Secondly, find the civilizations responsible for this Shelter, the representatives from those level 3 space civilizations. Demand that they severely punish the level 2 space civilizations that have led the provocation. Demand that they compensate our losses. It can be in minerals, supplies, technology, products, or even space curiosities, but the value has to be at least ten times the amount we have spent at this Shelter! If they do not agree, then declare war against the entire Shelter!

"Thirdly, after the declaration of war, I have an attached mission for you... Stall it out, use your words or threats or just random talk. In any case, stall for me for 15 minutes. In these 15 minutes, you have to ensure that all the level 2 and 3 space civilizations know that we mean war, but try to stop them from entering our ship. After 15 minutes is up, you can retreat with everyone else back into the Hope, and that... will be when the real war begins!"

After that, Yao Yuan's voice completely disappeared. Blue 6 stood there in short contemplation for a while before smiling in relief and turning to address the few adjutants behind him. "What are you all doing standing there? Haven't you heard the orders from Your Highness the Chancellor? We are to wait for humanity's

strongest force, the Black Star Trooper Units 1, 2, and 3!"

The few adjutants were still rattled. In reality, when they followed Blue 6, they already understood a certain awareness, the Blue Race's awareness!

Surviving in space was more than direct assault, it had compromises too. Of course, there were races like the Pa Race that lived with their guns blazing, but mammals did not have the life force and rate of reproduction the Pa Race had. If they followed the ways of Pa Race, there would probably be no mammals in space.

Therefore, even though the Blue Race was the kingpin of many races, they too would need to compromise many times. However, that compromise was limited to the Emperor and the royal committee. Acting as the Minister of Foreign Affairs, he was definitely part of the royal committee equivalent, but compromise was never a word in the Minister of Foreign Affairs' dictionary. It was because of this that Ministry of Foreign Affairs had their own military and the ability to declare war that was not part of the main governmental structure. The goal of this separation was to ease the difficulties faced when the Hope was in this kind of rock and a hard place situation. The sacrifice of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs would preserve the spirits of the rest of the race's members.

It was actually simple to understand. When compromise was necessary, someone had to be sacrificed. Blue Race had done this multiple times before already. The heroes would be sacrificed and the Emperor and royal committee would release an official statement to denounce their relationship to the Blue Race. After this compromise, at least the main race's spirits would be preserved. This was Blue 6 and the few adjutants' original plan, to sacrifice themselves to preserve the human spirit, that was all.

But who would've guessed that at the very last minute, a great surprise would fall right from the sky. The human Emperor had directly officialised his actions and had given him other missions. Blue 6 was not dumb; he soon understood that stalling for 15

minutes was to prepare for some kind of ultimate weapon... One that could destroy this Shelter before them!

(What kind of ultimate weapon will it be? Theoretically speaking, a level 2 space civilization naturally will not have an ultimate weapon of this caliber. Heck, even a level 3 space civilization at its peak will not have an ultimate weapon that can bring down an entire Shelter, unless the civilization has received technological inheritances from a level 4 space civilization and the ultimate weapon was created using the products of the level 4 space civilization...)

Just as Blue 6 was contemplating this, about 10 plus Black Star Troopers had arrived at this entrance. None of them said anything, they were standing there quietly, waiting for Blue 6's next course of action.

Blue 6 could not figure out an ultimate weapon that was plausible, but he still addressed these Black Star Troopers with high spirits, "Let us go. We will declare war now and cleanse these alien trash that dare to trample on our honor! Also... remember who you are! You are all cosmic adapters! The royalty of space! Ignore the threats by these lowlifes, they will not dare to harm you at such a public place!"

Blue 6 was the first to step out. After the isolation corridor, it was the Shelter's harbor space. There were already several thousand representatives from various space civilizations there. Of course, all of these aliens were from level 2 space civilizations, and there were no level 3 space civilizations present.

Following the appearance of Blue 6's group, the thousand plus aliens started to rise into a commotion. This was because every one of them carried with them a device that could detect the presence of soul. Normally, they were used to detect the soul content of food or to detect the presence of cosmic adapters.

At that moment, the thousands of aliens were excited to find that

the small group before them had more than 10 cosmic adapters, more than 10! Even a vibrant space civilization would at most have four to five cosmic adapters, and that was already impossible. More than 10 cosmic adapters? Even a large scale Shelter would not have so many cosmic adapters.

One of the aliens suddenly shouted, "These are all cosmic adapters, we have to kidnap them. After all, this race is an enslaved race, so they will not dare to resist us! They are too scared to do that! After we enslave them, our race will have its revival!"

The people who said that was quite many. At least half of them started cheering, some of them were still dazed, while a small group of people started to retreat. However, as the cheering got louder, the siege engines parked quite a distance away started to come over. And soon, unit after units of alien soldiers in combat suits and weapons surrounded Blue 6's group.

Blue 6 smirked chillingly, but he still opened the communication and amplification devices in his space armor to yell, "We are the diplomatic forces of the human race, we have diplomatic immunity. You are not to attack us, or we are allowed to retaliate according to cosmic rules!"

The words he said were incredibly logical, but the continuous compromises shown by humans earlier had roused the bloodlust within these aliens. They assumed Blue 6's words were a sign of weakness. Furthermore, they were already blinded by greed. There were more than 10 cosmic adapters before them, and the capture of even one would revive their whole race from senescence. If anything, the race would start to improve again. On one side was the natural death from Law of Preservation of Life, while on the other was the renaissance of a race. The choice was obvious for those who had been blinded by greed.

Surrounded by more than ten thousand alien soldiers, Blue 6 suddenly turned to those representatives of the vassal alien civilizations and said, "I order you to immediately deploy your

army to aid us humans in the name of the suzerain civilization!"

However, these representatives rushed hurriedly back into their spaceships like they had been torched. They ignored Blue 6's orders, and this caused Blue 6's cold smirk to harden.

More than ten thousand soldiers had surrounded the Hope from all sides, but the Hope still did not retaliate in any way. This steeled the aliens' conviction that humans were a useless race, and they started to zero in on Blue 6's group. The circle of alien soldiers was closing in and capture was going to start at any moment.

Blue 6 took a deep breath as he looked around. Then he ordered, "Alright, we can start now... All this filth that surrounds us, Black Star Troopers, listen to my order...

"Slaughter them all!"



# Chapter 371: Who Dares to Kill Me?

---

The Black Star Troopers around Blue 6 were already nursing a ball of fire. If not for the fact that they had not received the orders, they would have cleansed this group of dirty aliens a long time ago.

Now that Blue 6 had finally given his order, how could they be patient anymore? They had in their left hands Gaussian spiral rifles (new weapon), and in their right hands were super fluctuation blades (new weapon). With three people per unit, they charged into the fray.

There were at least ten thousand alien soldiers surrounding them. The ten plus group was heavily surrounded and their aggressors obviously did not expect a retaliation, especially the leading major level aliens. They were practically climbing over each other to capture these human cosmic adapters. It was then that they realized that they were not facing a group of sheep but a group of human-shaped tanks!

Three Black Star Troopers, wearing second generation Space Armors, were already shooting their Gaussian spiral rifles at the outer layer of the alien units before they got near. In a matter of seconds, innumerable electromagnetic shields appeared, but in less than 5 seconds, these electromagnetic shields shattered and blood and guts started to fly. How would normal physical bodies and spacesuits fare against attacks from Gaussian weapons? Like paper!

"What kind of ammo is this? Are they poison? Why are they so powerful that even electromagnetic shields cannot stop them?"

The major aliens in the alien unit started yelling. They could not believe their eyes. Gaussian weapons were the main weapon of all level 2 space civilizations, and their weakness would be level 2 space civilizations' electromagnetic shields that would be perfect to defend against this series of weapons. They balanced each other out and would never end up in a situation like what they were

seeing now.

However, the reality was right before them. Their electromagnetic shields were practically paper; they were shattered easily by these weird-looking Gaussian weapons. Humanity was practically harvesting their lives.

"That's a spiral-type Gaussian weapon! It's a type of weapon used by peak level 2 space civilizations and early level 3 space civilizations! Foot soldiers, retreat. Send out the siege engines! Use the larger electromagnetic shields to stop them!"

There were capable leaders among the alien units as well. They soon noticed the difference with the Black Star Troopers' rifles; they were not something a normal level 2 space civilization would possess. It was a type of weapon purposely designed to break electromagnetic shields. Small and individual electromagnetic shields would be punctured easily, like a balloon facing a sharp tack.

Among the alien troops, there were some small siege engines. There were various forms to them, but each was six meters tall and had mid-sized Gaussian weapons, like small Gaussian cannons. Other than that, due to their ability to recharge, the strength of their electromagnetic shields was also greater than normal. Under the Black Star Troopers' scary Gaussian weapon assault, these siege engines were pushed to the forefront to act as a blockade.

However, the Black Star Troopers were actually most familiar with close quarters combat. The long range rifles to deal with electromagnetic shield was practically harassment. When the troopers saw their enemies shove the siege engines to the frontline, they smirked coldly. They dashed towards the siege engines with unimaginable speed. The speed, agility, and dexterity increase provided by the second generation Space Armor was greater than the first generation. As Bo Li called it, the compatibility between Homo Evolutis and Space Armor had increased.

This kind of speed was not something normal lifeforms could possess, but in just the blink of an eye, the three-man Black Star Trooper units had already reached the front of the siege engines. With a dance of the blades in their hands, the siege engines were dismantled. This type of close-range weapon was much more convenient than the earlier sawblade. In comparison, it was not that the sawblade was powerful before a thick layer of electromagnetic shield, but cutting through them still required a great deal of energy. However, the new super fluctuation blades could cut through electromagnetic shields like butter using the wave fluctuations to break down the magnetic field of the electromagnetic shields.

Be it the super fluctuation blade, the Gaussian spiral rifle, or the plasma shield prototype installed in the second generation Space Armor, they were all technologies limited to space civilizations moving from level 2 to level 3. The Hope having access to them was all thanks to Bo Li, the Whisperer's contribution.

At that moment, the few units of Black Star Troopers had already cut down several siege engines. The one leading was none other than the champion of the various competitions among the Black Star Troopers, Ebon, the Homo Evolutis that could almost rival Yao Yuan in combat. With a battle cry, he charged at the front of the team, and behind him were Liu Bai and Wa Luo. Both of them smiled helplessly as they tried to keep up with Ebon. When they finally did, Ebon was already rushing headfirst towards a weird-looking siege engine that stood with four appendages touching the ground. It was 6 meters tall and at least 10 meters wide. It was much larger than a normal tank, but with just a flash of Ebon's blade, the electromagnetic shield sparked and shattered. With another dash by Ebon, the siege engine was spliced into pieces. The explosion harmed everything within a 10 meters radius and about one hundred alien soldiers were sent flying by the blast.

This kind of situation kept happening among the alien troops.

The small group of just more than 10 Black Star Troopers was unstoppable. Their numbers might've been small, but they were going for a landslide victory.

"Fire! Fire the long-range weapons! Do not engage them in close quarters combat!"

Right then, a major among the aliens roared. He ordered continuously for the siege engines to fire at the Black Star Troopers, Blue 6, and Defense Unit soldiers. However, before his order could be carried out, more voices yelled back, "Do not fire! Those are cosmic adapters! More than 10 cosmic adapters! Who dares to open fire! We are in a Shelter, aren't you afraid of being wiped out? None of you are allowed to fire! Swarm them, use light grade weapons and capture devices, use your numbers advantage to swarm them!"

The contradicting orders and the savage assault by the Black Star Troopers sowed chaos among the alien troops. However, most importantly, these humans dared to openly go on a murder spree in a Shelter? Their weapons seemed at most to be at the peak of level 2 space civilization, but they dared to create havoc at a level 3 Shelter? Had this civilization lost its mind? Or was this human race a branch of the Pa Race?

Taking this in, this group of aliens that provoked and threatened humanity, especially the leading space merchant leader, had their eyelids twitching... if they had the organ eyelid that is.

Everything had gone awry. Humanity had not compromised and allowed them to inspect the Hope, nor did they escape the Shelter with their tail between their legs. They did not even send out a diplomatic unit to seek aid from the owner of the Shelter like a normal space civilization would. Instead, they started to slaughter. It would be over for the Hope soon, but their plan was over as well. Humanity would be judged by level 3 space civilizations and then the fact that they had plenty of cosmic adapters would be exposed.

However, most importantly, these Black Star Troopers did not give the soldiers any chance to retreat. They dashed into the army and started cutting. Even if these soldiers were capable enough to harm them, they wouldn't because these were cosmic adapters. If they weren't at such a public space, they would perhaps attack, but with so many other races watching, harming one meant that other races would wipe out your entire race.

This kind of one-sided slaughter was deeply aggrieving. Furthermore, the soldiers being mowed down were not retards but the elite soldiers of these races. They were the most intelligent elite soldiers who possessed the greatest amount of soul. The death of one would make the whole race mourn for a long time, but here they had lost so many. Furthermore, this was a public space, so soul could not be recycled. This time they had really lost a lot.

Just as the slaughter continued and the aliens were crying like crazy, a UFO of about several hundred meters suddenly zipped in from afar. The UFO had a streamline shape and its origin was definitely the Shelter. There was a symbol on the UFO's surface... and it was the symbol that represented the owner of this level 3 Shelter.

While the Black Star Troopers continued their slaughter, about 10 light pillar dropped from the UFO. The giant light pillars slammed into the ground, and in the blink of an eye, more than several hundred alien soldiers were vaporized and there were huge metallic craters in the ground. However, none of the Black Star Troopers were harmed. The craters were at least several meters away from the nearest trooper.

"Halt!"

Then a processed voice appeared in the communicators of everyone there. After that, several hundred light orbs ejected from the UFO. These were single-use floating devices. From their appearance, this group of aliens had two legs and two hands, but it was unknown whether they were mammals or not.

These light orbs floated in the air above the area surrounded by the light pillars. Other than a few orbs that landed on the ground, the rest of them trained their weapons at the ground from the air.

"I said halt! Can you not understand language? Are you bunch of low grade civilizations trying to provoke a level 3 space..."

One of the light orbs started yelling as he dropped before Blue 6. However, the next scene shocked even the Black Star Troopers. Blue 6 directly kicked this level 3 space civilization's representative from his floating device. Then he said through the communicator, "Something that is not even a cosmic adapter dares to order me around?"

"If you dare, then order your soldiers in the siege engine to fire down on us. I do want to see how powerful your level 3 space civilization is to dare to kill more than 10 cosmic adapters at once. This is a public place with many civilizations watching... Aren't you afraid of being wiped out by level 4 or 5 space civilizations?"

"I am standing right here, who dares to kill me?"

# Chapter 372: Fire!

---

Blue 6 was indeed acting quite arrogant. After all, the person he kicked was not just any random nobody but a representative from an actual level 3 space civilization. This was not a provocation but an actual face slap. He had practically tossed the level 3 space civilization's honor to the floor and stomped on it.

The Black Star Troopers around him broke out in cold sweat. Not only them, even the surrounding level 2 space civilizations looked on with utter shock. The originally chaotic scene became eerily quiet, everyone looking dumbly at Blue 6 and the level 3 space civilization's representative.

Blue 6 might've looked unperturbed on the surface, but it did not mean that he was feeling the same within. However, since he was given the order to stall, this was a risk he had to take.

After he kicked this representative away and said those words, he did not pause before rushing to pull the representative upwards. He hissed at him through a private channel, "We're both familiar with the underflow effect of soul. If you dare to kill us, then level 4 and 5 space civilizations will come to wipe you out. No space civilization will complain that they have too many cosmic adapters, right?

"I know that if we met privately, your race would not hesitate to destroy us or even secretly keep us as livestock, but there are so many people here. Unless you dare to kill all the races here and destroy this entire Shelter. But that might not even work, because middle to high tier space civilizations might have the means to discern the leftover electrical signals and know how many cosmic adapters you have killed. Are you really that brave to risk extinction?" Blue 6 continued his threat.

This representative from the level 3 space civilization was stunned. His original plan was to intervene into this conflict,

punish both parties, and reap the rewards. They had done this kind of thing many times, and this representative was experienced in doing that. However, this time, before he could finish his sentence, he was kicked to the floor by this officer from a level 2 space civilization. This kind of situation had never happened before, so he was lost for quite a few seconds.

When he recovered and was ready to order his people to slaughter everyone there, Blue 6's words had drifted into his ears. Instantly, he regained his senses and was reminded of his actual purpose... The fact that more than 10 cosmic adapters had shown themselves at their Shelter was unprecedented. Furthermore, they were from a level 2 space civilization, and the key detail was that they had violated the law and rules of the Shelter. This was a godsend. Either through threats, trades, or any other methods, his mission was to obtain at least 5 to 10 cosmic adapters to prevent the decline of this Shelter.

Actually, just as how Blue 6 had observed when the Hope arrived, this Shelter was already on its decline. The real situation was that this Shelter had no cosmic adapter, and all the space civilizations, including the level 3 ones, could only obtain soul through raiding other races and killing their enslaved members to extend the lifespan of the Shelter. Therefore, throughout the year, there would only be one level 3 space civilization defending the Shelter, while the rest would be out hunting.

It was because of this that they were desperate for cosmic adapters; even just one might be able to save the entire Shelter...

However, obtaining and killing were two completely different concepts. For killing, if there was only their own race present, and if the secret was kept well, then it would have been fine. Wiping out a whole race of cosmic adapters would be fine. However, if the news was leaked, then... a level 3 space civilization would truly be crushed like a bug.

"Aren't you afraid of a level 3 space civilization? Your spaceship is



parked within our port and electromagnetic shields alone will not be enough to sustain our attack. One attack from us and it will be punctured. Aren't you afraid we will completely destroy your mothership?" This level 3 space civilization's representative even in a spacesuit was only around 1.3 meters tall. He barely reached the height of the space armor's knees. After he was pulled up by Blue 6, he roared as he waved his hands and feet in mid-air.

"Mothership? Listen to me, we are just a small scouting fleet of our race. I wonder which is more important, the spaceship of a level 2 space civilization or the entire level 3 space civilization. Furthermore, our battle suits are equipped with the ability to self-destruct if you plan to capture us alive. Do you believe that even if I murder you now in cold blood, your superiors will not do anything to save us?" Blue 6 said with a cold laugh, ignoring his threat.

This representative was immediately silenced as if he had confirmed what Blue 6 was saying. However, Blue 6 then put down this representative, took several steps back, and knelt down officially on one knee, adding, "I wish for level 3 space civilization to judge this incident fairly. A group of gangster races wished to assault us humans. That is such deplorable conduct, and it was against a guest race of this Shelter. This is something that cannot be forgiven. I wish level 3 space civilization would oversee this judgement fairly and return to us humans the respect that we deserve!"

Blue 6 had switched back to the public channel. His actions once again had shocked everyone present. The representative was stunned for yet another few seconds before finally declaring, "We have looked through the actual process, and both sides have committed their mistakes. Furthermore, this incident has violated..."

Once again, before he could finish, he was grabbed into the air by Blue 6. Blue 6 used the private channel to warn him, "Stop giving

me the official nonsense. Don't act like this is not your fault either. You allowed them to do this to us humans. Do you really believe I won't kill you and demand for another representative?"

This representative was so pissed that he almost coughed out blood. He demanded with extreme hatred, "Then what do you want? You're speaking in the Blue Race's language, right? This race is one of your vassal races? We're both level 3 space civilizations, so don't push it!"

Blue 6 smirked. "Whether they are a vassal or not is none of your business. You better say something that I want to hear, and not that official nonsense, or else I will dispose of you and have your race send over another representative."

This representative was nursing a deep grievance. Normally, it was he who toyed with other civilizations. This was the first time he had to suffer such deep humiliation. The person treating him this way was only from a level 2 space civilization. This knowledge made him grit his teeth in anger. If not for the more than 10 cosmic adapters standing before him, he would order the siege engine above him to open fire immediately. In the end, he chose to not speak and stood there. No matter how Blue 6 threatened him, he would not utter a word. He really wanted to see whether Blue 6 had the courage to murder him or not.

Just like that, time ticked by. Blue 6 had broken out in cold sweat and dried out many times. The Black Star Troopers had stopped attacking. They stared at their enemies quietly and the atmosphere at the scene was incredibly curious.

(Time... Just one last minute, it's almost time...)

Blue 6 stood before the representative calmly, but his eyes kept flitting to look at the timer inside his space armor. When the countdown of 15 minutes was over, he sighed in great relief internally. Then he suddenly patted the representative, who had been glaring at him wordlessly. This sudden action made the

representative jump from shock. Blue 6 smirked and switched to the public channel to announce, "As I have said, we humans have been treated unfairly at this Shelter. We were seriously threatened and we humans have suffered great losses..."

These words made the level 2 space civilizations' representatives there cough blood. Who were the ones that really suffered great losses?

"...Therefore, we officially requested the owner of this Shelter to give us a fair judgement. However, since thugs will only look out for thugs, the justice that we humans deserve was not given to us. Therefore, I, acting as humanity's Minister of Foreign Affairs, wish to announce that...

"We humans are declaring war on all of you!"

After Blue 6 said that, he ignored the crowd and turned to walk into the Hope. The Defense Unit soldiers quickly went to protect him and the Black Star Troopers held up their rear. This group of less than 50 people strode calmly back into the Hope from the chaotic battlefield. The alien units that surrounded them did not dare to stop them. The representative stood there dumbly like he had lost his mind. The people in the siege engines were acting the same way.

"...Wait, have we heard it wrongly? A level 2 space civilization is declaring war on more than 100 level 2 space civilizations and one level 3 space civilization? They have really declared war?"

"He meant to say 'surrender', right? Could it be the translation was mistaken due to the difference in languages? They're talking about surrender, right?"

Many races, whether they were physically there or were watching it through a long range signal, were in bouts of disbelief. They could not understand what the Hope was doing. This kind of suicidal behavior would not be done by any rational space civilization.

However, just as they were discussing it among themselves, the Hope suddenly floated aboveground after Blue 6's group had returned to it. At the same time, a great many layers of electricity appeared before the Hope. These electrical layers were so powerful that they were practically in plasma form. And they were slowly forming an electrical circuit in front of the Hope.

While this was happening, in the giant Shelter, the ceiling and floor both exuded great energy reactions. In just a few seconds, a thick layer of plasma shield had surrounded the Hope as if the shield was created by the Hope itself.

Yes, this was an internal defense measure of the Shelter. No matter how big or how strong the Shelter was, it was easier to dismantle it from the inside. This kind of example could be found anywhere in space. Therefore, the interior of the Shelter was equipped with great defensive mechanisms as well. One of them was to use the Shelter's own gigantic store of energy to form a plasma shield to contain and seal the offending spaceship. This plasma shield's supply came from the Shelter itself, so even for a level 3 space civilization, it would not be punctured easily. It was a very safe measure.

Of course, a plasma shield wouldn't know the difference between inside and outside. The weapons of the ships captured would not be able to attack the people outside, and similarly, the people outside would not be able to harm the ship captured while the shield was still up...

When the Hope activated the energy construction, the AI inside the Shelter ascertained that the Hope was going to use a large scale weapon, therefore, it reacted by sealing the Hope inside the plasma shield. When the alien races saw this happen, they started mocking humanity, saying humanity was so arrogant and conceited that they dared to even attempt to use a large-scale weapon inside a level 3 Shelter... Then this human civilization should be destroyed soon. Other than the cosmic adapters that would be preserved, the

rest of the humans would be disintegrated to become soul energy.

Just as these space civilizations thought this, inside the Hope, Yao Yuan's group was pleasantly surprised!

Surprised that the defense mechanism of this Shelter was so powerful to be able to create such a powerful plasma shield to seal up the entire ship and happy because this plasma shield had helped to protect the Hope during its most vulnerable moment.

Almost all of the Hope's energy had been siphoned into the Energy-based Virtual Reality Constructor. In front of the Hope, the pure energy construction for the anti-gravity system was being created layer by layer. The layers had reached a number of at least ten thousand, and it was still going strong...

These anti-gravity systems could not be edited in size, shape, or even the arrangement of the internal parts. Therefore, it was the same for the virtual construction. The mess of systems covered the front of the Hope, waiting for that moment to arrive...

"Gravity Cannon charging complete... We can fire now!"

"The Hope's anti-gravity efficiency maximized to counteract external influence..."

"Maximizing the output of all reactors. Reports from the 3rd, 5th, and 11th groups about minor errors..."

"AI triangulation complete, adjustment of anti-gravity system..."

A series of messages pooled into the Hope's central command. As the messages were reported, Yao Yuan looked at the screen in front of him quietly. The screen showed the battlefield where Blue 6's group was at earlier. The alien units were still standing there, waiting for humanity to fail...

"Gravity Cannon! Fire!"

# Chapter 373: Scary! (1)

---

Following Yao Yuan's order, the energy virtual device in front of the Hope glowed immensely like a newborn star. Other than the key location and life support system, all of the remaining energy on the Hope had completely disappeared and had almost all pooled at this one small spot, and then...

In front of the Hope, a curious wave fluctuation that could be observed by the naked eye was expanding. It ignored the plasma shield that covered the Hope and expanded into the space of the Shelter. Furthermore, this wave fluctuation was expanding at an incredible speed. In just the blink of an eye, it had expanded to more than several thousand kilometers. None of the metals, non-metals, materials, or even shields could stop the expansion. The aliens and siege engines caught in the fluctuations outside of the Hope started floating in mid-air like they had entered the cosmos. As the gravitational force increased, they were even pulled towards the plasma shield.

A plasma shield was not an electromagnetic shield. Even though it was called a shield, it was ultimately a layer of pure energy. Any material touching it would be vaporized. Unless this layer had exhausted its energy or the size had surpassed the layer's capacity, the layer would not be destroyed.

When the lifeforms and objects that were not glued to the floor flew towards the Hope, they were either burnt to toast or directly vaporized. After all, this was a plasma shield protecting the whole Shelter; even if a mothership that was several ten kilometers wide running into it, it would probably be the mothership that got destroyed, much less these little insignificant things.

Following the destruction and deaths of the aliens and objects around the Hope, the harbor that sheltered the Hope started to collapse as well. The metallic floor and ceiling started to tear and crumble and the pieces were pulled into thin air. Cracks started to

form at the harbor that held the Hope, and they continued to spread throughout the entire Shelter.

The level 3 space civilization that was guarding the Shelter almost peed themselves from fear... Just what monstrosity was this? If the AI and their knowledge weren't tricking them, this was obviously manmade gravity!

Gravity might exist everywhere, but creating it was a great task for science because it involved both issues of space and time.

Yes, gravity might seem to be a simple energy. In fact, it was the basis that formed the human understanding of early physics. However, with the advancement in science, more and more space civilizations had a clearer understanding of gravity. Even though gravity was caused by mass, it also had to do with the twisting of space and time. In other words, it was high mass that caused the space and time around it to twist, thus causing the creation of gravity.

Therefore, gravity that might seem ubiquitous required the understanding and application of both space and time if one was to create it through science. To put it simply... for early tier space civilizations, level 1 to level 3 space civilizations, the basis of their scientific progress was energy. In the case of mid-tier space civilizations and humanity, they realized that the scientific progress would be related to space, while for high tier space civilization, they predicted it would have to be time...

In other words, gravity was the scientific category for high tier space civilizations, it was a technology unique to high tier space civilizations!

For the people inside the Shelter, they could clearly see that there was a source of gravity right in front of the human spaceship. It's gravitational force, according to calculations, was one-third the Shelter's mass... However, the Shelter's insides were hollow, unlike a planet, which was filled with rocks layers. The real

density strength came from its walls and metallic construction. Therefore, to maintain a balance gravity within the Shelter, they had to rely on centrifugal force.

The gravity source outside of the Hope had such powerful force but very small size. This created a problem... Just as how it was discussed during the design of the cannon, this was what humans were hoping for, the creation of tidal force!

This was happening inside the Shelter!

Just as the members were checking the calculations done by the AI, in less than 3 seconds, the ground they were standing on started to shake violently. This place was the center of the Shelter that was very far away from the Hope. It was affected even from such a distance?

With the Hope as the center, the entire Shelter was being twisted and torn apart. Especially the joints of the Shelter's metallic structure, they snapped into two simply because they could not withstand the overbearing tidal force... After that were the metallic layers, and even the large motherships...

As long as its size had reached a certain level, it would be influenced by the tidal force. Its internal structure would start to break down and collapse. If one looked from outside the Shelter, one would see clearly that a part of its outer shell had collapsed. Innumerable parts and debris floated from that opening into the cosmos before being pulled back in by the Shelter's gravity. At the same time, the surface of the Shelter had started to burst with explosions and sparks like it was being showered by bullets.

Under the influence of this super powerful tidal force, any shields were like paper; they were completely useless. After all, gravity was not metal and tidal force was not energy. This was a landslide victory due to the difference in technology. It was similar to humans using tesla weapons to slaughter humans who fight with animal claws. The power the Gravity Cannon had over level 2



and 3 space civilizations was that scary...

Not only were the people inside the Shelter shocked, even the people inside the Hope were shocked. Even though everyone knew Yao Yuan had formed two secret ultimate weapon task forces, they still had a hard time believing it when one of the ultimate weapons was used...

Is this real?

Is this really something that can be created using humanity's current scientific level?

Such a scary Gravity Cannon!

## Chapter 374: Scary! (2)

---

The Gravity Cannon's power was unleashed without reservation. In just a few minutes, this Shelter, which the size of a normal planet, was dismantled and around 90 percent of its structure was destroyed. Not only that, everything inside the Shelter that was past a certain size, spaceships included, received varying degrees of damage, the extent of the damage dependent on the size of the spaceship.

This kind of attack method was not something that could be utilized by a low tier space civilizations. It ignored electromagnetic shields, plasma shields, and the tensile strength of the building structure. The infrastructure of the Shelter was torn apart like paper, without resistance. Be it the Shelter, or the spaceships of level 2 space civilizations, and even level 3 space civilization's ships, they were easily ruined by this power that was way beyond the understanding of low tier space civilizations!

One minute after the Gravity Cannon was fired, the plasma shield that surrounded the Hope disappeared. Instantly, the shrapnel of various crumbling materials flew right at the Hope. An electromagnetic shield was not strong enough to defend against these smithereens. Just as the Hope was going to be punctured, a layer of shield suddenly appeared out of thin air. This layer was unlike an electromagnetic shield, which was invisible to the naked eye. It glowed weakly as it surrounded the Hope like a liquid cover!

Instantly, all the debris that shot towards the Hope disappeared. This was not some electromagnetic shield but an actual plasma shield.

One of the icons for level 3 space civilizations!

Outside of the Hope, where Blue 6's group fought, there were quite some aliens that were alive. These few "lucky ones" were hidden behind metallic plates that had been pulled apart from the

floor but hadn't snapped off yet. When the plasma shield sealing the Hope disappeared and the Hope was going to be punctured by debris shooting at it with incredible speed, another smaller layer of plasma shield appeared around the Hope, blocking the innumerable shrapnel.

"Plasma shield?"

"Plasma shield!"

"Plasma shield..."

The few words sounded completely different in varied alien languages, but they all meant the same thing... one of the icons of level 3 space civilizations. It was defense technology way above the level of the electromagnetic shield. It was something that could defend against all physical and non-physical attacks, its name was plasma energy shield!

At that moment, all the aliens who were lucky enough to be alive had their hearts chilled. When the Hope pulled out the Gravity Cannon, it was enough for all the civilizations residing at the Shelter to pee their pants. However, when the Hope first entered the Shelter, the internal sensor scanned the Hope's technological level. It was teetering between the peak and the middle of level 2 space civilization, meaning it was impossible for them to possess such a scary weapon.

Of course, they could not rule out the possibility of them being cheated, like there being a level 4 or 5 space civilization hiding in the shell of a level 2 space civilization. However, the bigger possibility was that the Hope had stumbled across a high level space ruin and had obtained one or two future-tech products from it. That was the more logical explanation.

Everything in the cosmos survived on a delicate balance. If it's yours, it's yours. If it was not yours, no matter how hard you begged for it, it would not be yours. Oftentimes, when a low tier space civilization obtained some powerful products from a high

tier space civilization, they would not be powerful enough to use them. Even if one or two could be used, using it would exhaust a great amount of resources. That was fairness in space, one gives to take.

If the Hope relied on such a method to obtain the Gravity Cannon, then it was logical that it would not last for long and the negative effect would be huge. They predicted that the Hope would be stranded there for quite some time. It was then that the civilizations at the Shelter had their chance. After all, even though the Shelter was destroyed, there were still alien units remaining, and overtaking a level 2 space civilization's spaceship was going to be easy,

However, the moment the plasma shield appeared, this thought was shattered. A level 2 space civilization's spaceship and level 3 space civilization's spaceship represented completely different statuses under such circumstances. This was made clear here. It was the straw that broke the camel's back. To put it simply, the Shelter was practically powerless before the Hope.

While despair was spreading throughout the Shelter, it was not entirely peaceful within the Hope either. In reality, the use of the Gravity Cannon was truly a great test on the Hope's energy system.

Due to the overload of energy, currently, around four reactors on the Hope were forced shut down. This was a great mechanical crisis. If they continued using them, it would cause perhaps even a hydrogen explosion. In fact, there were already fatalities due to leaked electricity. The four reactors that suffered the most damage were instantly shut down by the AI that detected their problems. The remaining reactors more or less also received some damage.

This information was sent to central command through the AI. Yao Yuan followed them closely especially after the information came that a large amount of reactors had collapsed, causing the Hope's total energy level to dip severely. This series of information made his eyes twitch with nervousness.

"...Stop the Gravity Cannon in five seconds!"

When the number of reactors that were forced to shut down increased to seven, Yao Yuan finally gave this command. The people in central command sighed in relief. Instantly, the order went down the chain of command, and as the energy source was switched off, the virtual energy that made up the Gravity Cannon slowly dispersed. After five seconds, the gravitational pull and tidal force caused by the Gravity Cannon finally ended. By then, the Shelter had the appearance of a rubber ball after it was rolled over multiple times by a truck. It was sad on the eyes.

Even so, the people in central command did not dare to put their guard down. After the Gravity Cannon stopped and the Hope's energy supply returned to normal level, Yao Yuan yelled, "Activate the creator's particle and the ship's ECS System! Deploy all the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s!

"Break a hole through this debris and metal wall, release us into space! Command all the Black Star Troopers to indiscriminately attack anyone who exits the Shelter! Be it a big ship or a small ship, anyone who tries to escape the Shelter is to be shot down! I need to see that in the next 24 hours, no ship dares to exit this Shelter's ruins!

"Go now!"

Following Yao Yuan's order, all of the Space Combat Jets departed from the Hope. Other than the small number of Troopers who had to stay back to guard the ship, almost all of the Black Star Troopers had moved out in their own units. Several hundred Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s that were specially paired with Homo Evolutis left the Hope and crowded the space around the Shelter.

Back in central command, everyone saw how the Hope had shot a hole through the Shelter's wall that had lost the defense of the plasma shield. The Hope then escaped easily into space, surrounded by the several hundred Space Combat Jets.

"The number is still too small..."

Standing beside Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen sighed when he saw those Space Combat Jets.

When Yao Yuan heard him, he also whispered in response, "That is true. Military numbers, spaceship numbers, and weapon numbers are all lacking. At least until we can find a solar system where it is safe for us to rest, this situation cannot be helped... Also, a space combat unit made up of pure Homo Evolutis is simply too wasteful."

Yao Yuan's volume was low, but what he said drifted into everyone's ears. Many in central command sighed involuntarily.

The more time they spent in space, the more they learned about it. Especially with Blue 6's addition, the Hope's originally blank understanding of the cosmos and its culture had expanded tenfold. By then, even the civilians on the Hope knew about the value of Homo Evolutis. These were not normal expendable soldiers, they were the real protectors of humanity, the single biggest force that would help humanity extend its lineage. Any race could live on with only one or two cosmic adapters, while only humanity was extravagant enough to use Homo Evolutis as a military unit. This was an action frowned upon even by a high tier space civilization...

Because of this, after Blue 6 joined the Hope and during the period spent in warp drive, other than normal development, the Hope focused on the two ultimate weapon task forces. The Gravity Cannon was the result of the group headed by Bo Li. Other than that, the intention to expand the Defense Unit and the variety of weapon types were proposed.

As mentioned earlier, Homo Evolutis were not normal soldiers that could be expended on the battlefield, even though their combat prowess was much greater than that of normal soldiers, a prowess that would only increase after being paired with the Space Armor. However, when humanity increases in size, like after

building the mothership Kun Lun and after a decade of population expansion, several hundred Homo Evolutis were no longer enough to sway the result of a space war of that scale. By then, mankind's real main combat force should be the Defense Unit, whose power would be calculated by numbers. This point, be it humanity's leader, Yao Yuan, or the Defense Unit's general, Guang Zheng, everyone had an implicit understanding of it.

Of course, all that could only be a worry if they could escape this solar system alive. The biggest hurdle right now... was still this Shelter and the many space civilizations that called it home!

# Chapter 375: Indiscriminate Attack!

---

After the Hope escaped from the Shelter, humanity had a clear view of how great the damage was. The giant Shelter had lost its shape and was crumbling into pieces. Due to its self-rotating centrifugal force, the cracks kept spreading and a large part of the Shelter had broken off from the core. There was large debris shooting into space from the decompression of air leakage, and this Shelter was officially a space ruin.

However, this situation was within expectations, or else the Gravity Cannon would not have been a weapon used by high tier space civilizations. This was a technology that involved at least a mid-tier space civilization! Of course, the exhaustion of energy was indeed a bit too much...

Following the Hope's departure from the Shelter, they instantly discovered the many unique differences of the Shelter. After the creator's particle was activated, within its range, those that did not have a creator's particle isolator would be paralyzed. On the surface of the Shelter, there were many spots that glowed like stars in space. These spots were obviously the places that contained creator's particle isolators. They could be the energy center or life support system for escape pods. Regardless, these were all targets for the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s!

Just as Yao Yuan ordered, all of the Space Combat Jets started attacking indiscriminately in units of three after they left the Hope. All of the places that still had lights obviously had power sources, and these were the targets for the Space Combat Jets. Even though the Shelter was huge, as big as a real planet, with the Space Combat Jets' travelling speed, the 300 plus jets had surrounded the Shelter in less than a few minutes. Giant explosions were happening all over it.

In contrast to the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s, the Hope had completely hidden itself in the darkness of space using the ECS



system. As long as the Hope did not launch an active attack, there was no worry of being discovered. If there was a large mothership that escaped destruction and the Space Combat Jets could do no harm to it, then the Hope could fire another shot from the Gravity Cannon from the dark to ruin it.

Just as the Space Combat Jets were attacking the Shelter indiscriminately, there was chaos inside the Hope, especially in the department that held the reactors. Several thousand workers and technicians were trying their best to fix and salvage the broken down reactors.

"New error discovered on the eighth reactor. From live inspection, it seems to be related to the heavy isotope condensation mechanism. The technician requests that the Workshop sends a few specialists over."

The busiest of the people gathered at the reactors were naturally the workers. However, the ones with the most pressure were the technicians. Half of them were new interns that had just graduated from Hope University, while the half leading them were the experienced technicians. They were all treasured by the Hope. Of course, there were also a few survivors from the Noah One. Their knowledge was deep and their techniques were stable. Even though they were temporarily in the ranks of interns, that was only because they were still learning the ropes. This operation was the perfect opportunity for them to improve themselves.

"Emergency repair for the 11th reactor is complete. The engineering team is trying to repower it as we speak..."

"It has been confirmed that the third reactor cannot be repaired on the fly. To prevent possible explosion, the engineering team is hoping that we can shut it down. At least until we have enough free time, the reactor is not to be used again."

"The inspection on the central energy source is complete. It is working fine and can continue to support a high function..."

A great deal of information travelled to the engineering team, and after analysis, the information was sent back to the various task forces dealing with the individual reactors. At the same time, the information was also sent to central command so that the high officials there could come up with the respective solutions.

"Things are not looking so great..."

Inside central command, Guang Zheng looked at the information on screen and sighed. "The Gravity Cannon has ruined half of our reactors. Currently, the Hope can only maintain the Gravity Cannon for another 30 seconds if we wish to fire another shot... Ol' Yao, you're not really planning to demolish this Shelter, are you?"

Yao Yuan shook his head and said calmly, "I'm not that crazy. We might have been able to destroy the Shelter and it might have seemed that even level 3 space civilization was no match for us, but that is not true... We merely capitalized on the element of surprise, a surprise attack and a surprise weapon. To be frank, I'm still sweating. One wrong move and humanity would've been over. However, I am thankful for this Gravity Cannon..."

"Don't worry, we just need to defend ourselves for another 24 hours and then we can leave this solar system using warp drive and head towards the fringe of this solar system..."

Guang Zhen understood the intention behind Yao Yuan's words. He was afraid that the Hope would be pursued during warp drive. He agreed with it, which was why he asked that question early. He was worried Yao Yuan might act too rashly... Normally, Guang Zhen would never worry Yao Yuan might lose his sensibility, but in recent times, the man had suffered from one too many grievances, so the occasional rash decision, especially following a win, was not impossible. However, as the leader of humankind, the hand leading the race of humanity, even one rash decision was not permissible!

However, if Yao Yuan really acted rashly...

Guang Zhen scratched his nose and felt greatly comforted. It was then that he heard a voice that was barely above a whisper.

"Ol' Wong... It's still the same thing. If I lose my sensibility one day and act outside of the greater interest of humanity, then you must replace me, just like how you took over the Black Star Unit. This is my order and my promise to you!"

At the same time, the Black Star Troopers were fighting at their maximum capacity. Even though the Shelter was breaking apart, it was still ridiculously huge. As the Troopers surrounded the Shelter, it was hard for people to use the naked eye to follow the Troopers. If not for the constant explosions and Xi Kong, who was using the soul web to detect the number of Homo Evolutis, perhaps even the Hope would have a hard time taking account of these Black Star Troopers.

After two hours of indiscriminate attacking, the first batch of alien spaceships finally appeared from the Shelter's ruins. From their appearance, these spaceships were already broken down and most of them were smaller spaceships. The biggest among them was the most broken down. One-third of its body was twisted like a pretzel, but it could still fly, which was quite impressive.

Of course, even the biggest spaceship was still smaller than the Hope. If it was slightly bigger, then it would have been torn apart by the tidal force.

The first batch of spaceships had around 30 ships. They escaped through the giant cracks of the Shelter, and a mess of smaller combat jets came out from some ships. The number of those was in the thousands. They showcased the presence special to a space civilization. Their numbers weren't high, and this was because they were attacked by the Gravity Cannon. If the alien civilization had their normal numbers, the fleet would be more than several ten thousand in size.

When the first combat jets escaped from the Shelter, the Space

Combat Jets that were waiting in space started firing heavy Gaussian spiral bullets that tore through the alien spaceships' electromagnetic shields easily. They exploded in a great show of lightning and fire in space, and the source of the bullets had flashes of a combat jet.

This was because the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s who were in the ECS system had started attacking. Even though they would be revealed the moment they attacked, the pilots were all Homo Evolutis, and high speed strafe attacks were their speciality. Furthermore, every Homo Evolutis had a certain degree of danger sense. In other words, as long as they could take down the shield, even when faced with a level 3 space civilization's combat jet, the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011 still had the obvious advantage!

Just like that, following the emergence of alien spaceships, the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s started to gather. Equipped with the latest Gaussian weapons, the Space Combat Jets could take down these spaceships that were trying to escape the Shelter without taking any damage in return.

However, this was only the first batch. Next, more and more alien spaceships peeked through the Shelter's cracks, and the number was climbing into the thousands...

# Chapter 376: Take No Prisoners!

---

"We do not ask for any compensation..."

Blue 6 had already removed his space armor and hurried to central command. Along the way, he was speechless from sheer excitement. His act of sacrifice had become an unexpected reward. Not only did he not die, he might even become humanity's hero. This was a good method for him to really assimilate into the human civilization, and in fact, this might even improve humanity's impression of his original race, the Blue Race.

All of these thoughts were percolating in Blue 6's mind. Even though he was excited, he maintained most of his rationality. The key was what humanity was going to do next.

According to the unwritten rules of the cosmos, humanity had won this war with a landslide. However, this did not mean that humanity could rest easy, because dealing with the aftermath could be said to be the most crucial part of the war. To nab a large amount of valuable technology for the Hope? Or to gain new vassals for humanity? Or to take over this Shelter?

Each of the choices had its own hidden problems; one wrong step and the advantage humanity had might be lost just like that, and it could even harm humanity itself. This was because humanity had too much unawareness regarding the cosmos. Blue 6 was cognizant of this, so even though he was excited enough to want to hold a celebratory ball, the first thing he did was rush to central command as fast as he could.

When Blue 6 used a strategic manner to bring up the question of humanity's future plan to Yao Yuan, Yao Yuan repeated the same thing he said earlier.

"Of course, if there was a level 3 space civilization technology that could enable us to become a level 3 space civilization in the shortest amount of time and thus greatly increasing our security

during our travels in space, that would be perfect, but..."

Yao Yuan paused to look at Blue 6 before continuing, "But reward and danger are not proportional at the moment. For us to get the compensation that you mentioned, we humans have to have at least have an overwhelming military advantage, but you understand the real situation. I believe that that level 3 space civilization is not an idiot. They know that our technological level is actually not that high. The only reason the result is as we see currently is because we managed to strike with an unusual and surprising method... but there is such an adage among us humans, or rather, more accurately, among us Hans. As for the war, one should engage it by regular way and win it by non-regular way. However, the non-regular way is merely another way of saying we've given it our all simply because we are not powerful enough. After all, who would opt for the non-regular way if a war could be won the normal way?

"That is our current situation. We can defeat them, yes, but vanquishing them is impossible. If we attempt that, it will be us humans who might end up losing. Therefore, my decision is simple: we will block all exits from the Shelter for 24 hours and even use another shot of the Gravity Cannon. We have to ensure that no alien spaceship is allowed to get out of this Shelter. After 24 hours, we will escape as far as we can. After we exit this solar system, we will immediately enter warp drive to get away from this Shelter."

When Blue 6 heard Yao Yuan, he nodded continuously, and the worry in his heart was settled. In reality, he was most afraid that Yao Yuan would act too recklessly or perhaps be blinded by profit and think that humanity could swallow this Shelter with its current power. That was what Blue 6 was scared of the most. However, since Yao Yuan still maintained his clear head, then Blue 6 had nothing to worry about. Currently, he needed to keep a low profile after such a high-profile victory. This was what they called

"hide one's capacities and bide one's time" in Blue Race language...

On the other hand, the battle on the surface of the Shelter's ruins had reached its height...

Several hundred Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s were cruising the space just outside of the Shelter. Like a patrolling shark, they would occasionally show themselves out of ECS invisibility to strike at an enemy. After the quick strike, they would disappear again. This was a favorite tactic among the Black Star Troopers' space combat manual, the hit-and-run tactic. After so much simulation training, their power was fully on display at this particular moment. From the beginning of the indiscriminate attack, the Black Star Troopers had suffered no losses other than two Space Combat Jets that suffered minor damage and had to return to the Hope for repairs.

Actually, those with a clear eye could tell that including the troopers who were in the war themselves, the so-called hit-and-run tactic relied on Black Star Troopers' scary reaction time and danger sense. Other than that, it also required a powerful space transport. If this was the earlier generation of Space Combat Jets, only Yao Yuan's Red Lightning was capable of hit-and-run, the rest would be limited by technology. It wasn't until this generation of Space Combat Jets and masterful training that almost all of the Black Star Troopers could conduct a hit-and-run attack.

The key to the hit-and-run tactic lied in the fact that if they suddenly appeared for a second to attack, the enemy would not be able to hit the Troopers. Around the Shelter's surface, plenty of exploding circles of light and Gaussian bullets covered the space, but most hit their own combat spaceships and almost zero bullets landed on humanity's Space Combat Jets. Furthermore, the Shelter was still crumbling. The alien spaceships were taken down by stray falling constructs and exploded. These explosions caused even more chaos and more and more spaceships exploded around the Shelter's ruin...

The Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s took advantage of this vicious cycle. The thousands of spaceships and millions of combat spaceships that could not expand into the wider space were like lambs waiting for slaughter. Their immense number had helped the Black Star Troopers because in the chaos, almost half of the alien ships were destroyed by the crumbling structure of the Shelter or died under friendly fire. What the Black Star Troopers were doing was practically sowing more chaos.

Everything was going humanity's way. Due to the natural advantage of the Black Star Troopers, which was formed by several hundred Homo Evolutis, the battle was completely one-sided. Who knew how many space civilizations had ended their lives in this Shelter, and who knew how many sentient space lifeforms were lost...

Suddenly, a triangular, silvery-white spaceship shot out from inside the Shelter. Its speed was unusually fast, it was faster than when the Hope was moving at maximum speed. Nothing stood in its way; be it the Shelter's falling debris or the other spaceships who stood in its way, they exploded in a shower of fireworks when they came into contact with this silvery-white spaceship.

Needless to say this was a spaceship for a level 3 space civilization. It was small in size and was triangular in shape. There was a layer of plasma shield on its surface that was visible to the naked eye. It was why the spaceship could storm through the crowd without worry. None of the weapons or materials present could harm this layer of plasma shield. It created a path by cutting through the crowd, and it was close to getting out of the range of the Shelter's ruin.

At that moment, the Diviners among the Black Star Troopers felt the imminent danger. Even Yao Yuan, who was in central command, felt it as well. It was like a beast was leaping at them. Even though the danger was not strong enough to cause extinction, the danger level was slowly climbing.



Without warning from Yao Yuan, the Black Star Troopers could feel the danger presented by this level 3 space civilization's spaceship. The threat of this one spaceship was bigger than all the level 2 space civilizations' spaceships combined. They peeled away from dealing with the level 2 space civilizations and focused on this one level 3 space civilization's spaceship. Using the same hit-and-run tactic, they fired continuously at this spaceship.

However...

As expected of a level 3 space civilization, the focus fire of several hundred Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s had practically no effect on the ship's plasma shield. Just like a dinosaur facing an ant, it did not even retaliate and just focused on getting out of the ruin.

Xiao Niao was in one of the several hundred Space Combat Jets, and he was the leader of one of the units. Behind him were his two best friends, Qiu Qiu and Dan Dan. Noticing how their own forces were unable to even cause a dent on the alien spaceship, he did not say a word but circled his jet at a spot three times. Then the two jets behind him opened the emergency valves in their jet bodies and, using magnetic pull, the three jets joined into one!

It was not only Xiao Niao's unit that did the combination. Following their example, more units joined as well. Instantly, flashes of light appeared around the Shelter. After combination, the power of the Space Combat Jets turned from a medium-sized Gaussian weapon to a heavy duty Gaussian weapon; the power increased at least tenfold.

The plasma shield on the level 3 space civilization's spaceship finally showed traces of ripples. Even though it was not enough to destroy the plasma shield, they did manage to slow its speed down, since they had to transfer the energy from mobility to shield formation.

Back on the Hope...

"Release the cockpit protective layer..."

"Raise the cannon platform..."

"Initiating energy coagulation! Opening energy storage system, energy storage 3 percent... 7 percent..."

"Activating the Genesis lock-on system!"

# Chapter 377: Demolition!

---

Go big or go home!

This was something Yao Yuan said in central command. What he meant was that since this solar system was not going to survive and they were not going to return to this place, not to mention it was the aliens' fault for making human beings to show their hand, then why show mercy? While it might not be honorable to kick them while they were down, if they waited for the level 3 space civilization to recover, then humanity would truly be dumb.

Therefore, go big or go home!

The shot from the Gravity Cannon as well as strafe firing from the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s were still unable to ensure the alien civilizations stayed in the Shelter's ruin obediently. When the level 3 space civilization's spaceship poked its head out, Yao Yuan finally gave the final order, which was to reinitiate the Genesis cannon on the Hope!

After all, that was the property of the plasma shield. No matter whether it was a physical or energy attack, as long as its strength was unable to surpass the plasma shield, or more accurately, unable to exhaust the energy of the plasma shield, then the attack wouldn't be able to reach the spaceship protected by the plasma shield. In other words, as long as the attack power surpassed the defense of the plasma shield, then the plasma shield was like anti-bullet vest... Who has seen an anti-bullet vest survive a rocket launcher before?

This was obvious through the shot of the Gravity Cannon. Any ship over a certain size, even if it was a level 3 space civilization's ship, was twisted and torn. The remaining ships were almost the size of the Hope, small to mid sized.

In reality, there was another misconception here, and that was due to the technology within the Hope. Its energy was not at the

same level as that of alien spaceships of the same size... the reality was the complete opposite.

This was because since most other alien spaceships of the same size were used for defense and combat, if it carried too much reactors, be it hydrogen atomic fusion reactors or cold agglutination reactors, the moment the ship was attacked or there was internal error, the scale of explosion would be huge and it might cause friendly damage.

Therefore, if one had a mothership, the energy storage of these small to mid-sized spaceships would not be huge.

However, the Hope was completely different. This was humanity's only and last defense. It was not only used for combat, but also to support the life in the endless cosmos for tens and hundreds of years, so the more internal energy storage it had, the better. In contrast, the Hope was humanity's mothership. Even though it was miniscule compared to a normal mothership, the pool of energy storage could rival the energy storage of a large or even super large mothership.

Therefore, after they had confirmed that all the large spaceships of the level 3 space civilization had been destroyed and thus the Hope would not be surrounded by them, Yao Yuan had already decided to combat the level 3 space civilization's spaceship that still remained!

In the empty space, a chopstick-esque ship flicked in and out of existence. A layer of sparks appeared on the ship's surface, and it shone brightly like a new sun. Next, a large pillar of light shot out of it. Before that, Yao Yuan had commanded all the Black Star Troopers to evacuate the area through Xi Kong. Therefore, only the level 3 space civilization's spaceship and the mess of other alien spaceships behind it were caught in the ray of light!

In the blink of an eye, other than the level 3 space civilization's spaceship, all the other alien spaceships exploded. Their

electromagnetic shields were no match for the Genesis' energy attack!

Only this level 3 space civilization's spaceship survived the plasma ray. However, the plasma shield on its surface rippled violently and its thickness had greatly decreased. About 10 seconds later, following an explosion of sparks, the plasma shield was shattered by the continuing light ray, and at the next second, this level 3 space civilization's spaceship was fireworks...

This was not all. The Genesis fired directly on the Shelter's ruin. Without the protection of plasma shields, how could the normal metallic structure resist the Genesis' power? It melted instantly and, following a series of explosions and after the Genesis had finished firing, a giant hole appeared on the surface of the Shelter. It was as if the shot had almost pierced through the Shelter's ruin.

The people on the Hope were not shocked by this attack. After all, they had survived the trip to the cursed planet and the indescribable Song of Destruction. This was nothing compared to the terror they had seen.

On the other hand, the various space civilizations who were trying desperately to escape the Shelter were on the brink of despair... Just what kind of civilization was this human race? They dared to declare war on a whole Shelter with just one spaceship, and not only that, they had managed to dismantle the whole Shelter. Furthermore, they were not going to capture any materials or lifeforms after victory but demolish the Shelter indiscriminately using large scale weapons like the Genesis... Could it be that humans really did not want anything but destruction?

No one knew the answer. With the whole area covered by the creator's particle, they could not ask even if they wanted to. All of the civilizations' spaceships could only escape the Shelter desperately like headless chickens even though they knew that stepping out of the Shelter meant destruction. They had to get out

because... behind them was the Shelter's ruin that could explode at any moment!

"...In other words, the reactors inside the Shelter are acting up, and due to matter of mass, a giant fusion reaction might occur from within at any given moment?"

10 minutes after firing the Genesis, the Hope was beginning another round of checking and maintenance. The indiscriminate attack outside of the Shelter by the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s was still going on. Unless there was another level 3 space civilization's spaceship, the Hope would remain hidden in the dark using the ECS system.

However, at the same time, several energy reactor experts were called to gather at a small meeting room close to central command. This was because Blue 6 had raised an interesting proposition when the Genesis was fired to explain why the level 3 space civilization's spaceship was in such a hurry to escape the Shelter.

"A Shelter has many differences compared to a normal spaceships or even a mothership. Any spaceship and mothership would be operated by one's own race; at most they would have vassal races to act as cannon fodder. However, a Shelter is a half public place; it is a home for many civilizations and many other civilizations may enter and leave it at any time. Therefore, for the sake of security, its central energy core, be it a nuclear type or a cold agglutination type, would be placed in the center-most area of the Shelter. Due to it being the heart of the Shelter, the creator of the Shelter would normally choose to have a large reactor. Normally, it would a reactor large enough to supply the energy of the whole Shelter..."

10 minutes were spent to process the words Blue 6 said. The various experts and calculations from the AI came to the same conclusion...

Following the usage of the Gravity Cannon, the Shelter had been completely torn open, and this should include the reactor as well,

and the possible tragedy of that was... a large nuclear explosion from within this Shelter was imminent. To put it simply, this Shelter had become a ticking nuclear bomb. An H-bomb the size of a planet, its power would be strong enough to vaporize all spaceships within its range. Plasma shield? No plasma shield would be strong enough to withstand such an explosion!

In other words, humanity could have really destroyed this Shelter...

Because of that, the original 24 hour plan was immediately changed. About half of the Black Star Troopers were commanded to return to the Hope, while the rest of them continued the assault. The Hope would be responsible to pick off the spaceships that escaped the attack of the Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s...

As time passed, the number of spaceships that came out of the Shelter slowly decreased, but the amount spaceships of the level 3 space civilization increased and humanity started to suffer fatalities as well. So far, already 12 Black Star Troopers had lost their lives...

Finally, when the races inside the Shelter had lost their minds and the spaceships coming out of it were mostly level 3 spaceships, the human Diviners had sensed the great danger percolating inside the Shelter. It was a danger that would wipe out everything. The Hope fired another shot from the Genesis and called back all the Black Star Troopers. Then they escaped as fast as they could. Behind it, thanks to the attack from the Genesis, no alien spaceships dared to show themselves yet...

Next, in this piece of quiet space, against the black background, only the Hope was flying away at maximum speed. Behind it, in a large ruin, a blinding light exploded, amplifying the darkness of the cosmos. At the center of the light, a fireball steadily grew in size. Finally, it grew at an exponential speed until it ultimately became a fiery planet, and the Shelter...

Had completely disappeared, swallowed by this giant ball of fire...



# Chapter 378: Three Years Later

---

"Degree of space distortion 0.32, 0.33... Stably recovering..."

"Energy level normal, temperature of warp drive engine dropping..."

"Activating plasma shield, activating sub reactors..."

Yao Yuan, who was sitting in the captain's chair, looked at the countdown on the 3D screen and sighed. "I order for the Hope to exit warp drive state."

"Yes, Sir. Captain's order, the Hope is to exit warp drive state. Counting down, 10, 9, 8..."

"The Hope is exiting warp drive state..."

Today was the day the Hope exited the warp drive state. Similar to three years ago, even though this was the second time the Hope had used warp drive and exited it, the Hope's citizens waited with bated breath. However, the feelings were completely different from the time three years ago.

Yes, it had been three years since the battle at the Shelter. In this period, the Hope was in warp drive that lasted as long as three years. The super light speed travelling of warp drive and the distortion of space caused by the Song of Destruction meant that the Hope was not far away from their destination.

In these three years, the human society on the Hope did not seem to experience much change. A day still had 24 hours and it was filled with the hectic lifestyle similar to the one on old Earth. Be it work, recreation, entertainment, the discovery of science or weapons, it all looked to be the same as three years ago.

However, if one was to look closely, one might discover that many on the Hope had great spirit and the talks on the streets were about the various miracles in space, the culture of different civilizations, and the possibilities of future technology. Thanks to

the war three years ago, the human heart and attitude had changed...

Yes, humanity no longer saw themselves as the masters of everything and a unique existence in space. Humanity was a member of the huge cosmic family, a member that was trying his best to improve himself, to go from a level 2 space civilization to a level 3 space civilization. Furthermore, in the foreseeable future, the degree of improvement would slowly increase. Whether he would become a level 4 space civilization like Blue 6 predicted, that stood to be seen.

Regarding the war three years ago, even though it was extremely dangerous, Yao Yuan was even ready to press the self-destruct button at any given moment, humanity won out in the end. Even though they did not reap any material reward, the confidence regained from that war meant that it wasn't a waste.

"Still not there yet..."

Zhang Heng was enjoying his rare holiday after the Hope left warp drive. As a part of the Black Star Troopers, or more accurately, as the leader of the 15th unit and s first generation of Homo Evolutis, as well as the most powerful Diviner on the Hope, part of the Black Star Unit, even though he did not think so himself, he was part of the higher echelon of the Hope's governmental system... Not only from his job description but political-wise as well.

There were even those busybodies on the Hope who came up with the ranking of the possible successors to take over from Yao Yuan. Yao Yuan was in first place, and the second spot would be the officially named successor, Guang Zhen. Third was Liu Bai. After eliminating people from Black Star Unit that had no interest in politics, like Ebon, Zhang Heng was in ninth place. That placing shocked even himself...

His influence and power decided his job description. He was

extremely busy during the day, either training the new Black Star Troopers in simulation gunfights or simulation Space Combat Jet training, or trying out new weapons or dangerous experiments. As the most powerful Diviner, a day off was extremely rare.

Finally, it was his turn to rest. He had three days of off-days, so when the Hope exited warp drive, he activated his danger sense to ensure the Hope was not in danger before rushing to the entrance of the bio-garden at the top level of the Hope. He had a date with Ye Mu.

In fact, this was not his first date with Ye Mu. After all, the Hope had left Earth 19 years ago. This meant that the oldest second generation people on the Hope were already 19 years old. For many of the first generation survivors from Earth, many of their grandchildren could already speak.

Zhang Heng stood at the entrance, looking at the pairs of lover or families that were entering the garden. He stood there quietly, thinking about some things.

After leaving Earth, he had experienced many things. From the original playboy, he became a unit leader of the Black Star Troopers, and he had humanity's safety and future on his shoulders. He still found that development to be unbelievable... That and his relationship.

In his nineteen years, he had had his fair share of relationships. He dated both Ning Xue and Mao Miao, having sexual relationships with them both in fact. He had also been with other women, but in the end, the only woman that managed to capture his heart was Ye Mu, who had been nothing but icy and aloof towards him. A mercenary from Earth and a woman who had nothing but training and combat on her mind... How did I end up this way?

Zhang Heng thought self-deprecatingly. Ever since he met Ye Mu, the woman was a constant fixture in his mind even after she had told him seriously that she would not be interested in someone

like him. After the war on the cursed planet, he started to seriously pursue Ye Mu. He had annoyed her so much that one time, during simulation training, she beat him until he needed to be sent to the hospital, but somehow, he could not shake the thought of her out of his mind. Finally, after the war at the Shelter, around two years ago, he managed to ask her out on the pretext that he wanted to discuss official business with her.

It was worth noting that due to Zhang Heng's personal request and Liu Bai's special treatment of this little brother that they met back on Earth, Ye Mu was assigned as the vice-captain of the 15th unit. She was Zhang Heng's subordinate.

For this so-called date, Zhang Heng had asked Ye Mu to join him at the bio-garden for some reason. To his surprise, it was a success. Ye Mu seemed to like green plants and cute animals like cats, pandas, and sloths. Even though Ye Mu realized that the meeting did not end after the official work was done, she decided to join Zhang Heng for a walk around the bio-garden.

After that, Zhang Heng kept asking Ye Mu out on dates, using all sorts of reasons. Other than the first few times, which she rejected, she eventually accepted his invitation. Even though Ye Mu was still rather aloof towards him, at least now she no longer beat him up during simulation training. Zhang Heng had even noticed that Ye Mu would occasionally reveal her vulnerable and tired side to him when they were on their dates.

This was a good development!

From the many experiences Zhang Heng had with women on Earth, this was a veritable signal that their relationship was improving. In other words, if he worked harder, then...

However, there was something troubling Zhang Heng's mind as well, and that was his personal life, especially his relationship with Ning Xue and Mao Miao. Until now, he did not have the courage to fully reject them, so their relationship was still in an unknown

situation. Of course, Zhang Heng hid that information from Ye Mu, or else he believed he would be killed during training the next day...

"What's on your mind?"

A cold voice said. It pulled Zhang Heng out from his contemplation with a start. He saw Ye Mu standing before him in normal attire. Her long face framed her pretty hair that was not done up. At that instant, his troubled mood was cleared and he smiled. "You're late by about half an hour, anything happened?"

Ye Mu nodded and answered honestly, "It's my brother, he's down with a fever. I was sending him to the hospital. It took some time because they needed to check whether it was the Homo Evolutis fever."

After the battle with the Shelter, perhaps it was because they had slaughtered the entire Shelter, in the three years after the Hope entered warp drive, there were about 10 people who had awakened as Homo Evolutis. Even Blue 6 could not explain this phenomenon. After all, slaughtering an entire Shelter was not something new. Other civilizations had done that, but it did not lead to the forming of more than 10 Homo Evolutis.

Zhang Heng replied with a smile, "As long as he's fine. The medical science is very advanced now, so I'm sure he'll be fine. The doctors will contact us if anything happens to him, so don't worry... Shall we go in? I've booked a table at the green restaurant you liked last time for lunch, the one that serves vegetarian meals. I hear that it is the harvest period for the Bread Fruit, we should go try one."

Ye Mu nodded, and when she was about to reply to Zhang Heng, a short but urgent beeping suddenly came from Zhang Heng's body. The two of them were startled, especially Ye Mu. Her eyes turned sharp immediately. Zhang Heng instinctively reached for the communicator on his waist and answered, "This is Zhang

Heng, what's happening?"

"Zhang Heng, it's Yao Yuan. Sorry for disturbing your date... But I need you to come to central command immediately, there's a new discovery!"

"We have detected a large area covered with creator's particle, and the things shown on the high frequency optic sensors proved that..."

"This place we're stopping at just had a space war not long ago!"

# Chapter 379: Salvage

---

After Zhang Heng arrived at central command, many others slowly filed into the room. These included officers from the Barracks like Guang Zhen, and experts in the creator's particle, the study of the cosmos, and related fields.

"First, the creator's particle has both adhesivity and dispersity as well as immeasurability. To put it simply, they have unique qualities."

The great physicist, Silewei, was explaining the qualities of the creator's particle to everyone in the meeting room next to central command. Even though most of them there already knew some of the qualities of creator's particle, like how it could block all electrical signals and electricity, they were unclear about its scientific properties, or at least compared to experts like Silewei, they didn't know much about it.

"I will not get into the details here. If you really wish to find out more about creator's particle, feel free to visit the human library. I will only focus on two points here... First, the creator's particle is not a natural creation of the cosmos, unless it was some really unique situation. Of course, the probability of that happening is less than 1 over 300,000,000,000, so there's no point even discussing that.

"Secondly, the creator's particle has the tendency to disperse at the speed of light, and at the same time, it has a constant half-life. Based on these two properties, we can predictably calculate when the space war occurred."

As Silewei said so, a set of numbers appeared on screen behind him. Then the calculation was done by the AI. The speed was fast since the algorithm was provided, and soon a number appeared.

"Yes, just like Professor Silewei explained, about eight days ago, there was a space war happening in this space. Based on the extent

the creator's particle has dispersed, this space war included at least thousands of spaceships, but... from our analysis of the remains of the spaceships, they are all level 2 space civilization ships. That is the only good news."

After the data finished calculating, Yao Yuan continued, "From our current light radar analysis, there is no alien presence at least one light year away from the Hope. Furthermore, there were traces of space tearing, signifying the use of warp drive. Therefore, we can be certain that the two or more space civilizations that were involved in the war have left the area."

Suddenly, the seated Ebon said with a chuckle, "Ol' captain..."

As he said so, Liu Bai, who was sitting beside him, slapped him on his arm and Ebon scratched his head and began again, "Chancellor, are we going to go chase after these civilizations?"

Yao Yuan shook his head and explained patiently, "We should be avoiding them, not chasing them. Everyone here is the heart of the Hope, so I will not go in circles, and this is the truth... The war three years ago at the Shelter, even though we vanquished the Shelter, that was totally dependent on luck and surprise tactics. If we come face-to-face with an alien civilization, we might still lose to a normal level 2 space civilization. Therefore, we should hold back whenever that is possible and not act like we humans are invincible..."

Then Yao Yuan's tone softened. "The reason for calling this meeting, other than to familiarize everyone with the danger around this area, is to hand out the mission for the next 3 to 6 months.

"I hope we can salvage this space war's ruins. One is to gain the possible technology left behind and two is to search for materials and supplies. This is because we will be heading to a star path next, and there will be no supply depot once we start that journey. Furthermore, time is crucial. We have no idea how many years we



will need to spend in the star path, so we need to collect as many materials as we can. Third, the alien spaceships' computers might still be salvageable from this ruin, so more information, like how the war started, would not hurt. Dismissed..."

Of course, this meeting was merely a heads up from Yao Yuan to the core members of the Hope. The real administrative decision still needed to go through the legal channels. This was to make official the power of the House of Representatives and the democratic system on the Hope.

After the meeting was over, everyone left the room with the related information. The last to leave were Yao Yuan and Bo Li, who was called to stay behind by Yao Yuan.

"...Let's go for a meal tomorrow, it's the harvest season for Bread Fruit. It's your favorite, fresh-picked Bread Fruits are the best," Yao Yuan dropped nonchalantly as he picked up the files on the table.

Initially, Bo Li wanted to reject him, but when she saw how his fingers shook as he picked up the paper document, her heart softened and she bowed her head to say, "I can't make it tomorrow, there's an experiment on the effect of gravity on space distortion... How about the day after tomorrow, I'll ask for a day off."

Yao Yuan sighed in relief under his breath. He stood up with a bright smile. "Then let me escort you home. Do you mind if I have dinner at your place? I have no intention of mingling with the politicians at the canteen, since I will have to meet them again at the House of Representatives tomorrow."

This time, Bo Li was silent, but Yao Yuan took that as silent confirmation.

In fact, since the fainting spell Bo Li suffered three years ago when she overexerted her power to create the Gravity Cannon, their relationship had recovered somewhat. At the time, the doctors were close to announcing her as a vegetable, joining the

ranks of Jay and little Eva. She was unconscious for ten days, and for those ten days, Yao Yuan never left her side. When she woke up, the first thing that she saw was Yao Yuan resting by her bedside with his eyes half-closed.

After that, the two of them would occasionally come out for walks or dinners. They even spent a few nights in bed after a great deal of alcohol. In any case, there was hope that their relationship was rekindling...

However, their precious alone time did not last for long. Just as the two of them left the meeting room, they were accosted by Guang Zhen, who was already waiting outside of the meeting room. Bo Li nodded and took several steps back, giving them the privacy they needed.

Yao Yuan commented with a bitter smile, "Ol' Wong, what is so important... So be it, is there anything you need from me?"

Guang Zhen chuckled and nodded at Bo Li with thanks before addressing Yao Yuan. "Actually, it is not that important, but I feel like I have to get it off my chest... Is it really necessary for us to salvage this ruin? This place is quite close to the star path already, right? According to our previous hypothesis, if the space civilizations in this universe could observe, predict, or calculate the presence of the Song of Destruction, they would definitely pass this way, right? Is this safe? For us to stay."

Since this was work, Yao Yuan's expression turned serious and solemn. He nodded and replied, "I've thought about this as well. In fact, as you said, one definitely has to pass this place if they are going to the star path, and there is a certain danger stopping here, but one, we have Diviners, so we will know if there's danger. As long as they have a space warp engine or launch an attack at us from light years away, we will be relatively safe...

"Two... it is because we are so close to the star path that we need to stop and salvage. We need to know the reason behind this war.

Was it plunder or were they enemies? Or because the star path is only exclusive to a certain number of space civilizations? Only after knowing all this information can we plan accordingly for the star path journey."

Guang Zhen thought about it and smiled. "I guess you're right... Alright, I won't disturb you anymore, enjoy these few months of rare breaks."

Yao Yuan waited until Guang Zhen left before turning back with a smile. He realized with a start... that Bo Li had already disappeared. She left when he was talking to Guang Zhen...

On the other hand, in a place about 10 light years away from the Hope, this was an empty space between galaxies. In reality, the further one was from the center of a universe, the rarer the presence of galaxies. This was the edge of the universe, so the distance between galaxies were at least more than 10 light years, and the bigger the distance, the larger the empty space like this between the galaxies. After they left the galaxy, it would be an empty space that stretched for several thousand or billion light years.

However, this stretch of empty space was different. The place that should be a slather of darkness was crowded with tens of thousands of alien spaceships, ranging from level 2 to level 3 space civilizations. There might even be spaceship of a higher level hiding among them.

All the spaceships were heading towards the same set of coordinates. Of course, there were plenty of space wars along the way. Various combat ships and space cannons, or curious-looking weapons from future-tech, fired at each other... This place was filled with space war remains; destroyed motherships littered the space.

However, none of the surviving spaceships showed signs of retreating. In fact, all of them kept pushing forward towards that

same coordinates...

Their target destination was the center of that empty piece of space, it was...

A ball of green...

# Chapter 380: Salvage Begins

---

Early in the morning, Yao Yuan appeared at the captain's room. Other than the guards, other government workers weren't there yet, so he occupied himself by reading over the recent supply exhaustion report.

However, not long after that, Barbie came in with a stack of documents. When she saw him, she was startled, but that quickly changed into a smile when she saw that he was in high spirits. She greeted him with a smile before returning to her office.

Yao Yuan scratched his own head rather awkwardly. In the 19 years since they had left Earth, Barbie remained unmarried. Even though she had some boyfriends through the years, just like how she liked to say during their small talks, she simply hadn't found someone she felt like settling down with. Regardless, she was single at the moment, and Yao Yuan could sense that she was still interested in him...

Yao Yuan shook his head to toss the unnecessary thought out of his mind, then he focused on the documents on his hand.

These were all related to the Hope's supply levels. Since the war on the cursed planet, the Hope's supplies had reached a dangerously low level. It was because of the need to resupply that the war at the Shelter had happened. The closer humanity was getting to becoming a level 3 space civilization, the greater the exhaustion of supply. For example, the large scale 3D imaging devices used at the recreational pavilions. These exhausted great amounts of electricity. However, due to preservation of human spirit, as long as there was enough supplies, they would be kept open 24 hours.

After that were the two levels of bio-gardens on the Hope, one for terrestrial lifeforms and another aquatic. Due to the need for the simulation of different temperatures and weather, these bio-

gardens also required a large amount of supply investment.

Other than that, there was also the Hope's homeostatic system that supported the lives of 200,000 people. Circulation of oxygen, water, and recycling of waste materials, the energy to power the Hope as well as the Workshop, which depleted the supply at an alarming rate; the Hope could only remain in space for around 15 years, even if it was running at full load... And this was under the condition that it did not build any large siege engines.

Therefore, the situation was alarming. As the population increased, the usable space on the Hope decreased. In fact, in the third year during warp drive, there were some representatives who suggested selling the governmental space within the Hope to the public through privatization...

It was ridiculous!

Granted, privatization had been occurring throughout the Hope, like the government sponsor of monthly meal tickets had now changed to the H-coin purchase system, with some of the staples still using the old system. The Hope was still abiding a law of meritocracy, but generally speaking, even Yao Yuan's residence was not that much bigger or more luxurious than those surviving on governmental stipend. This was because of the Hope's natural conditions.

At least until they built a real mothership, the people on the Hope would not be able to privatize the sale of housing space...

At the end of the day, all of these problems were facing humanity because they were too hurried to enter space when they did. Their technological level at the time was simply too low. It was why the spaceship created was only at the Hope's level and not a giant spaceship common for level 2 space civilizations.

It looked like the creation of Kun Lun would have to be moved forward. After becoming a level 3 space civilization, the first thing they would have to do was find an isolated solar system to focus on

building Kun Lun...

Time slowly passed as Yao Yuan studied those documents. People started to arrive at their posts around the captain's room at around 9 AM. The day was starting again on the Hope.

"...The period of salvaging this time will be set at three months. Of course, that time frame can be changed according to the amount of salvage or technological aspects or other situations. At the same time, the Hope will maintain a level 4 alert level. There has to be at least 3 Diviners at the ready at all times and at least 200 Black Star Troopers in level 4 alert status. The actual arrangement is as follows..."

This was Yao Yuan giving a speech in the meeting room. The members there included the higher authority of the Barracks, the ministry leaders and vice leaders of the various government bodies on the Hope, and ten representatives from the House of Representatives.

Just as Yao Yuan drew to a close, the slight commotion underneath settled down as well. Then several people had already hit the speak button. The AI randomly chose the people who would speak and the first was a representative. After the kind greeting, he asked sharply, "Chancellor, from the information we were given, this is an important pit stop for all that heads towards the star path. Even though the cosmos is big, and we are in the middle of an empty space, the closest galaxy to us is at least 10 light years away. However, due to the contraction of space due to the Song of Destruction, all the nearby space civilizations will be heading this way. In other words, we will be clogging up an incredibly important passage. Wouldn't... that be extremely dangerous?"

Yao Yuan answered after the representative finished, "There is definitely risk, but the reason we are stopping here to salvage is to lower the danger we might face in the future. First, we have enough Diviners, including the most powerful, Zhang Heng. Currently, we have 22 human Diviners. I believe before any harm

would come to the Hope, be it a space catastrophe or an extremely powerful space civilization, we will be warned beforehand and have the chance to escape...

"Secondly, it is because this place is close to the star path that we have to do this. What awaits us, what is a star path, how many space civilizations are waiting there, what can we expect, what is the reason behind this space war, we do not understand any of these, and that is why we have this salvage operation. Hopefully, we can get some more information from these ruins to let us prepare accordingly for the difficulties that await us. Information is the thing we are looking for in this operation, the technology and supplies are just an extra."

Yao Yuan's words caused yet another contained commotion among the crowd. However, generally speaking, his answer was satisfying. The amount of people reaching for the speak button had halved. Obviously their main concern was the Hope's safety.

Next, it was a Barracks' major who asked the question.

"Chancellor, I wish to understand what the Defense Unit's responsibility is in this operation and the possible enemies we might face..."

The meeting lasted for more than two hours. Of course, this was merely the framework of the salvage operation. There remained many kinks that needed to be ironed out later, like the guard roles of the army, the allocation of Black Star Troopers, Defense Unit soldiers, the salvage team, workers, and the AI robots responsible for hauling the salvaged items. The amount of supplies needed to support this operation and the H-coin salary for the government workers involved...

Many things were assigned to the Hall of Communications and related government bodies. Yao Yuan had even set up a salvage task force to deal with this operation. It was formed from several representatives from the Hope. All of these preparations meant



that the operation was going smoothly. It was now already the fifth day of the salvage operation.

Around one hundred transport shuttles had left the Hope. Escorting them were 30 Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s and the several satellites that had been deployed beforehand to scout the ruins.

Even though this was a salvage operation similar to when the Hope first met the junkyard civilization, the efficiency was completely different. The salvage at the time almost cost the Hope, but if the Hope came across that AI army now, they would be able to slaughter as many robots as they came across. After all, human civilization had already reached the peak of level 2 space civilization, and it was only a matter of time until they became a level 3 space civilization. Under this situation, if they were afraid of a bunch of level 2 space civilizations, then truly that would be the cosmos' biggest joke.

The satellites released before were the latest creation. They utilized the technology of a level 2 space civilization, and the team responsible for them was the scientists and engineers from the Noah One. Compared to the scientists on the Hope, who were more suited for "common-use" technology, the personnel from the Noah One were more suited for "military-use" technology. With the five years of percolation, these scientists and engineers originally from the Noah One had reached the level of familiarity similar to the members on the Hope. In other words, their scientific knowledge had already increased to the standard of a level 2 space civilization instead of the level 1 space civilization from old Earth.

This had brought in a new wave of inventions and patents. For example, Gaussian rifles with greater accuracy, firing speed, and bigger ammo slots. They required less materials to produce and thus were cheaper to produce. There were also new designs for hovering tanks and the Space Combat Jets meant for Defense Unit. Similar to the satellites, these were the brain children of the

personnel originally from the Noah One...

"Detection of low energy fluctuations and an increase in density of the creator's particle. There might be AI in the ruins..."

"...Discovered defense-use siege weapons, a half-ruined spaceship, unclear whether there is still life within it. Damn, the satellite exploded..."

Following the latest observation, the 30 Space Combat Jet Prototype 011s rushed ahead towards the half-ruined spaceship that had attacked the satellite...

# Chapter 381: Ruin?!

---

This ruin definitely had plenty of self-defensive mechanisms remaining and AI guard robots. However, they were all level 2 space civilizations' standard, using Gaussian weapons. In terms of technology, they were not better than the Hope, so their attacks were unable to poke through electromagnetic shields, much less plasma shields.

This combined with the Homo Evolutis' affinity for space wars and close-quarters combat, cleaning up these backward mechanisms was a cakewalk.

To prevent the hidden threat from hurting the normal workers, the Black Star Troopers spent the following month combing the ruins until they could say for certain that this ruin didn't contain anymore threats. It was then that the Hope could send in the salvage team.

The whole salvage team was separated into three rotations, each rotation lasting for eight hours. In total, the Hope had sent out about 2,000 AI robots, 17,000 plus experts, workers, and technicians, 400 plus transport shuttles, and employed the Black Star Troopers around 60 times for the salvage operation.

This was the operation that involved the most civilians after the colonization of the new planet. However, even though the exhaustion was high, the reward was high as well. Other than fetching enough supplies to compensate the materials exhausted in this operation, the leftovers could still last the Hope for another three years. There were also plenty of useable metals. In fact, of the 400 plus transport shuttles, around 100 of them were built using the metals salvaged from this ruin.

The Hope had also gained a great load of information from some broken alien computers. Of course, most of the information was uninteresting cosmic hearsay, they were practically useless for

human beings. Regardless, they were still stored in the central mainframe. They would probably have their uses in the future.

There was also technological information, but other than very few esoteric products, most of the technology had already been known to humankind, so the rewards weren't that impressive.

The real exciting reward was the travelogue of the two space civilizations that were at war.

The travelogue recorded the origin and destination of these two space civilizations. They both came from a nearby Shelter that had received the information that this part of the cosmos was rapidly decaying. According to the calculation of the level 3 space civilization and communication via some methods with level 4 space civilizations, it was finally announced that due to some reasons, this part of the cosmos was reaching its end. The galaxy was rapidly imploding and staying in it would only lead to death. Therefore, those who wished to survive would need to escape to other galaxies through the star path.

Therefore, these civilizations followed the other civilizations from the Shelter and departed for the star path.

The reason for the war, other than the fact that they were already enemies, this part of space was isolated from the rest, meaning no other civilizations would intervene. Of course, these were merely the preconditions for a war and not the blasting fuse, that would be something else...

"Ruin clues? What is that?"

In most main computers of the ruined spaceships, the term "ruin" was brought up constantly. Of course, to avoid translation mistakes, they had referred to the computers from both space civilizations and the contents were similar, ruin...

"...Looks like it is similar to the situation with the Noah One..."

In a secured lab on the Hope, around 10 people were studying the

translated alien languages that appeared on screen. The information stunned everyone there, and the above observation was made by Guang Zhen.

So it turned out that both space civilizations were on guard against each other when they happened to meet in this area. When they were preparing to enter warp drive, they suddenly received a signal that came from nowhere... Yes, it was similar to how the Noah One used the incomplete space warp engine to send out information.

"Those space civilizations that have reached this message, come to us. For the ones who can discern the cause from the effect, come to us. We will award thee the legendary..."

This was the signal received by both civilizations. It was attached with a coordinates and a star path chart. The described location when matched with the two space civilizations' travelogue, coincidentally, or rather naturally... they coincided at the entrance to the star path!

This information silenced the room. After all, this was all a bit hard to believe. Then again, this was the cosmos, so anything was possible. Even a high level ruin had appeared.

Yes, according to the simple analysis of the two and a half Thinkers present, it could be confirmed that this ruin belonged to a high level space civilization. After all, only a level 5 space civilization and above could send information through the confines of space like this...

This was truly unbelievable!

The number of ruins in space was relatively low. In fact, most ruins would just naturally disappear in space, either absorbed by the gravity of planets or consumed by planetary entities like the sun or already salvaged by other space civilizations. In conclusion, 90 percent of space ruins would cease to exist through these methods.

Of course, due to the law of conservation of soul, most of the space ruins would belong to level 1 or 2 space civilizations, followed by level 3. Generally speaking, level 4 space ruins were exceptionally rare. The appearance of one would attract the attention of several tens of thousands of level 2 and 3 space civilizations to fight for it. Even if they returned with just parts of the technology, it could be considered a profitable operation.

For ruins from a higher level space civilization, like level 5 or higher... That was pretty much a legend. From the several ten thousand years of the Blue Race's history, that only happened once, about several thousand years ago. It had caused an all-out war between more than hundred Shelter forces. According to the Blue Race's records, the damage resulting from that war had ruined more than ten solar systems and more than 1,000 level 2 space civilizations were made extinct. Of course, the lucky space civilization who won the war successfully became a level 4 space civilization after about a hundred years of cultivation. and they still had enough technologies left to evolve into a level 5 space civilization...

And this ruin before them was quite possibly a level 5 or higher space ruin. Its value was...

Unpredictable!

This was an existence that might even attract the desire of level 5 space civilizations because the biggest difference between a middle tier space civilization and low tier space civilization, other than the difference in power level, was the specialization of science. Due to the threat of racial senescence, these middle tier space civilizations couldn't focus on unlocking every part of the technological tree like low tier space civilizations did. They had to select one aspect to focus on; therefore, the higher the level, the harder the improvement. For middle tier and high tier space civilizations, even gaining a technology lower than their standards would still help greatly improve their own race's science. It was why level 4

space ruins or above were so valuable.

"What should we do?!"

The core members of the Hope and the two Thinkers were gathered at a secret meeting room to discuss the analysis of the information.

The atmosphere in the room was heavy. Even though most were not Thinkers, the truth was easy to understand. The value of a level 5 space ruin or above was definitely high, and not only level 2 or 3 space civilizations, even middle or high tier space civilizations would fight for it as well...

Furthermore, unlike those space civilizations who were dying, humanity did not have to risk their whole race to fight for a rare ruin, they could just turn around and walk away... However, the key was that this ruin just so happened to be near the entrance of the star path.

Yao Yuan looked around the room and no one answered him. Finally, he turned to Xiao Niao and asked, "Xiao Niao, why don't you tell us what you think we should do?"

Xiao Niao shrugged helplessly. "Fine... honestly, none of our possible courses of action are suitable. We can't go back to wait for the Song of Destruction to arrive and we cannot stay here, since this is a pit stop to the star path. Do we want to meet other space civilizations? Shall we continue further in? That's also a dead-end. Who knows how many space civilizations have already gathered at the star path entrance pursuing this space ruin? We might be destroyed by one of those crazy powerful cannons once we arrive. In any case, I personally do not think we should head towards this ruin."

Yao Yuan sighed. He agreed with Xiao Niao. He too did not think it was a good idea to head towards the ruin or even the star path, it was simply too dangerous...

Suddenly, Ren Tao commented, "I'm curious... since we know that this ruin is dangerous, why didn't these two space civilizations know that? Why would they abandon their half-fought war and rush towards this ruin? In fact, I have a hypothesis in mind...

"Could it be that this ruin has hypnotized all the space civilizations near it just like how god-tier space civilizations can conceal new life-preserving solar systems and planets...

"Only the Immortal would not be affected?"



# Chapter 382: Fake Approach

---

Many present did not think much about Ren Tao's hypothesis.

After all, humankind already knew that cosmic adapters were separated into different levels and that those above grade S had their individual skills, like Diviners and Whisperers. In comparison, other than Deceivers, all of the skilled cosmic adapters had no absolute advantage over each other, so as time went by, even Yao Yuan did not consider his All-Rounder power as something special.

Of course, their understanding of the All-Rounder's, or the Immortal's, scary value increased after Blue 6 joined the Hope. The fact that he could ignore the limitations given by god-tier space civilizations and locate newborn life-preserving planets or solar systems was impressive enough.

First, let's talk about life-preserving planets. Even though there would still be a neutron star fragment assault not long after settling on the planet, landing one life-preserving planet meant that there would be a new wave of Homo Evolutis awakenings. This was the desperate wish of any space civilization. Furthermore, even for just a few years, life on the planet would be like paradise. They could also allow those born on the Hope to witness for themselves the beauty of nature, the blue sea, and the sky.

Unlike before, humankind now knew to expect the neutron star fragment. Even though the creation of Kun Lun was impossible in those few short years, creating a fleet of Hope-sized spaceships was not impossible.

Let's also not forget about the precious plants and animals...

A newborn solar system, now that would be a real treasure. Just like those precious metals on the Hope, they were metals desired by mid-tier space civilizations. Therefore, finding a newborn solar

system was like hitting a jackpot, an impossibly lucrative jackpot at that.

These were powers unique to the Immortal, the ability to ignore the limitations or hypnosis by god-tier space civilizations, the ability to suppress the progress of demonization. These were powers desired by even level 9 space civilizations. There was even a rumor stating that to go from level 9 space civilization to a god-tier space civilization, one of the prerequisites was the Immortal.

What Ren Tao said was based on these rumors on the Immortal. To verify his hypothesis, the AI and programming experts as well as Zhang Heng were busy for the next two days, and the result was...

"It is really close to Unit Leader Ren Tao's hypothesis. When these two space civilizations received the signal, they stopped fighting immediately, and without any cross communication, both of them departed from the battlefield. From our two days of close observation and autopsy reports, many ruined spaceships still contained living aliens when the war was abruptly ended. They died from asphyxiation several hours later. This goes to show how deep in a hurry those two space civilizations were when they left."

A lieutenant who was an expert in recon reported to the core members of the Hope using the reports and results that his team had managed to collect over the past two days.

The room of about ten frowned when they heard this information. Then they turned to look at Ren Tao, who was blanking out. This dude had guessed correctly again...

Yao Yuan did not put much attention on Ren Tao like the people around him, because his focus was completely on the meaning of the information which was just revealed. At the same time, his Thinker power was activated.

The first consideration was simple. Was it possible that both space civilizations had decided upon a sudden truce in the middle

of a heated war and together headed towards the same destination? The answer was no. Unless there was a great cosmic catastrophe, like a supernova, and there was no other choice but to form a temporary truce, these two space civilizations would not have done that.

In other words, they had left the battlefield instantly after receiving the signal, abandoning even their own citizens, just like... they were hypnotized.

Ren Tao had noticed this and proposed such a hypothesis. This ruin had sent out the signal to hypnotize all the space civilizations towards it. The only reason humanity was immune was probably because of Yao Yuan, the Immortal. After all, the Immortal was immune to hypnosis by god-tier space civilizations. This ruin might be powerful, but it would not be a god-tier space civilization. The possibility that its signal could influence an Immortal was possibly nil. Then in that case, this might be a good opportunity...

"We are not entering the ruin!"

Yao Yuan looked around and announced firmly, "But we have to move forward. There is already no way back. Other than the star path, we have nowhere else to go, so we must proceed!"

This statement sounded like a contradiction because the ruin just so happened to be at the star path's entrance. In reality, humanity, including Blue 6, had no idea what a star path was. It was a rumor among the many space civilizations because level 3, 4, or 5 space merchants would use the star path to go visit other galaxies for trade; therefore, the existence of star paths was confirmed. However, what kind of existence it was and what kind of mechanism it used to link different systems, that was an unknown.

Was it a technological product? A natural occurrence? A wormhole entrance? No one knew. Since the ruin was at the star path's entrance, it was hard to tell whether they would be able to circle around it or if they had to pass through it.

"Of course, we can't just waltz into it, because who knows how many space civilizations were attracted to it already, so before heading towards this star path entrance, we need to make some preparations..."

Yao Yuan's plan was simple. First, since they were 70 percent confident that those space civilizations had been hypnotized by the ruin, they would not attack at first notice. Of course, this was a huge proposition, as whether that was true or not still remained to be seen. In general, this was the biggest possibility, and the possibility the Hope banked all its hopes on.

With this hypothesis, they needed to make many preparations, and these preparations were to make the Hope look as old as possible.

This was not a new plan, they had used this method before when they were heading towards the cursed planet. After all, humanity's biggest concern in space for now was self-preservation. To avoid danger, run at the first notice of danger and cleverly avoid conflict. That was the philosophy of everyone on the Hope. Of course, it was also because of this philosophy that Yao Yuan felt so aggrieved at the Shelter and led to that war that ruined an entire Shelter.

Back to the topic at hand, during the Silent Journey, the Hope already had the plan to change its surface and had planned accordingly. With a switch of the outer wall, the Hope would look old and beaten and certain places would look like they were poked with holes. The Hope appeared like a space tin can that would implode at any given moment.

Other than that, they had to work on the appearance of the many vassal alien spaceships as well. They had to be modelled to have the appearance of level 2 space civilizations that were similar to the human spaceship. Even though the Hope, with its chopstick shape, was too unusual, making it look like the vassals were on certain parts similar to the Hope was still doable.

Just think about it, a broken ship with heavy weapons that desperately needed repairing after a war, those big civilizations probably wouldn't be interested in one, as it wouldn't look like a profitable investment. Being shot at by a heavy weapons during the process of consumption wouldn't be worth it.

Therefore, in the next month, the Hope used the materials left in the battlefield to conduct this change. The Genesis had to be exposed as this was an obvious heavy weapon. It would deter level 2 and 3 space civilizations from targeting the Hope so easily.

After solving all these problems, they realized that they had already spent around two months at the battlefield ruin. After fixing some societal issues, the Hope left the battlefield and headed towards the star path at the beginning of the third month.

The Hope still used the warp drive technology. In the past three years, several space and energy experts on the Hope had introduced more upgrades to the energy output of the warp drive technology. Now the Hope's warp drive speed was almost five times light speed, and the energy exhaustion was at least 5 percent less than when they got it from the alien civilization. For the Hope, warp drive was already a mastered space technology.

Just like that, the Hope continued travelling for another 6 months, then one day, it was pulled out of warp drive without warning like a giant hand had grabbed it out from warp drive space...

The moment they left warp drive, the Hope's scanner could clearly see the mess of alien spaceships all around them. Like the Hope, they were all heading towards the same direction...

# Chapter 383: Weird

---

This was something that had not happened before. Warp drive was cancelled just like that!

This was not something doable by the creator's particle, because warp drive existed in a dimension independent of the cosmos, a dimension created from distortion of space using a great amount of energy. Technically speaking, it existed in a different dimension from the normal space and would not be affected by whatever happened in the cosmos. Under normal circumstances, there shouldn't be a technology that was able to affect the Hope when it was in super light speed.

However, that really did happen, they got pulled out of warp drive. The moment the Hope entered this part of the cosmos, they left warp drive and entered the normal space, and this looked like it didn't affect only the Hope, or else how was one going to explain the mess of alien spaceships around them?

When this happened, the Hope's Workshop and Barracks were in a state of chaos. After all, it was 3 AM, so most of the Hope was still asleep, including Yao Yuan.

When the emergency alert reached Yao Yuan, in less than 10 minutes, he was already at the captain's room. For the rest of the Hope, they were slowly roused from their sleep and returned to their assigned positions. At the same time, information from outside the Hope was slowly reported back to the related personnel.

"...There are so many spaceships? At least ten thousand or more."

In the captain's room, Guang Zhen observed the 3D image of the situation outside of the Hope with a drawn face. Within the observable range, there were plenty of spaceships surrounding the Hope. There were at least 3,000 large motherships. A few of them even had plasma energy propellers, which were signs of level 3

space civilizations, and there were at least one hundred of them...

Not only that, the Hope had also detected two weirdly-shaped motherships. There was something that looked like a ripple effect around the ships, like they were submerged in water or the space around them had turned into liquid. These kinds of spaceships... belonged to level 4 space civilizations!

That's right, even the legendary level 4 space civilizations were part of this massive fleet. The method of telling this was simple: that was a shield technology unique to level 4, or rather mid-tier space civilizations... space distortion shield technique. This was a new version of shield technology obtained after a civilization gained access to wormhole technology.

From the earlier war with the space merchants, humanity had received relevant information from them, information like how to discern the level of a space civilization from its spaceship. Of course, due to the level difference, the information only reached level 4 space civilizations. Beyond that... the information sounded like legends more than anything.

And the level 4 space civilization that was just a level lower than legends... there were two of them in this area!

This was a level 4 space civilization! This was a civilization that could no longer be beaten by an advantage of numbers alone. A level 4 space civilization could easily run over all the level 2 and 3 space civilizations before it and suffer practically nothing in return. This was a space civilization that was in a completely different league. After all, out of tens of thousands of level 3 space civilizations, only one would evolve into a level 4 space civilization!

Theoretically speaking, when these two level 4 space civilizations appeared, even if they had vassal races, they wouldn't be approached by the lower level space civilizations. This was the power and presence of all mid-tier space civilizations. Even if they

did not issue any warning, low level space civilizations would not have the audacity to approach them, just like how a rabbit wouldn't go near a lion. This was natural instinct.

However, due to the high density of spaceships in the area, beside the level 4 space civilization's spaceships were obvious signs of spaceships from lower levels. Even though the cosmos was endless and each individual spaceship in comparison was like a speck of dust, the number of spaceships was simply too high. There was not enough wiggle space for the spaceships of differing sizes. This observation was simply too weird and creepy.

When the Hope's surveillance saw the fleet around them and the creepy sensation brought by the level 4 space civilization, Ren Tao's hypothesis was confirmed. These alien civilizations were indeed either hypnotized by this ruin or attracted by the technology within it, or else, according to the density of space civilizations crowding this area, there would have been a giant scale space war already.

However, the humans on the Hope were not hypnotized by the ruin, and it probably really had to do with the presence of Yao Yuan, the Immortal. Regardless, no matter what, this was a godsend for humankind, as they could escape this conundrum by hiding themselves among the many spaceships and avoiding the detection of other dangerous alien civilizations before heading into the star path.

At the same time, the Hope was scanning the general direction every spaceship was heading toward. That was supposed to be the coordinates for the star path entrance, but the result of surveillance was... a flash of green light.

Yes, other than this green light, there was no cosmic entity or space or even products or creations that looked like the entrance to a star path. In a space far, far away, there was an endless slate of green light, and the light was so strong that the surveillance was only capable to pick up the light and nothing else.



"That's the ruin? The star path is hidden behind this green light?"

In the third hour after the Hope fell out of warp drive, almost every important person had already gathered at the captain's room. The emergency meeting was in full swing. There were also plenty of scientists present; they were discussing the implication of this green light.

From a scientific perspective, this kind of situation bordered on the impossible. Light needed a light source, like the sun and its rays, the light from a lightbulb. The source was either pure energy, fire, or radiation; there had to be a source that released the light.

However, this green light before them did not appear to have a source. Both light radar and electromagnetic radar scans came up with nothing. This was merely a pool of light and behind it was an empty space, there appeared to be no source. This was not some kind of light-emitting space gas either, it was simply light that was green in color.

From the 3D image compiled by the radar, an endless amount of spaceships were heading towards this green light, and when they reached it, their ships disappeared as if into thin air. As mentioned above, there was nothing beyond the green light, it was empty space.

This situation was beyond the basic comprehension of physics. Some scientists even suggested that this green light was probably some kind of teleport mechanism for a mid-tier space civilization. After entering the green light, they would be transported far away. This was similar to the star gate described by the space merchants, but if this was correct, this was a technology far superior to star gates.

Some scientists thought that the green light could be an alternative form of the creator's particle which could conceal all information from any detection. If this was to be believed, it could

explain why the Hope's surveillance would not be able to pierce through the green light.

In any case, facing this situation, the Hope was still heading towards the green light following the major movement of the spaceship fleet. Using particle streams, the Hope's speed was mediocre, not too slow or too fast. Based on calculations, the Hope would reach the green light in about three months.

"...For now, let us forget about the weird green light and focus on our original destination, the star path."

Yao Yuan addressed the roomful of people seriously, "The coordinates of the star path, after triangulating it with the solar system around us, is confirmed to be inside the green light. I do not care about whether the green light is the entrance of the ruin or not. On fact, I do not care about the ruin, I only wish to know how we are going to enter the star path!"

Blue 6, who was familiar with cosmic knowledge, was part of this meeting. This being his first time participating in such a high level secret meeting excited him greatly. After he heard Yao Yuan's question, he answered rather hurriedly, "Could it be that the green light is the star path itself? After all, star paths are shrouded in mysteries. We know of their existence, but we have no idea what they are like in reality. What if this green light is the star path's entrance?"

Someone questioned Blue 6's hypothesis immediately. "Then what about the ruin? If this green light is the star path that could transfer something from one system into another, then where is the ruin that was supposed to be at the entrance? It disappeared?"

Blue 6 shrugged, signalling that he too had no answer to that. The room was silent, with the prospect of the ruin looming over them. Even the level 4 space civilizations were hypnotized by it... So it looked like this ruin was left behind by a powerful space civilization.

"...Then should we still head towards this green light?"

# Chapter 384: Surveillance

---

Whether to venture into the green light or not, this was truly a troublesome question...

Thankfully, they were still 3 months away from the green light, so there was enough time for the people on the Hope to come to an agreeable decision.

Life moved on...

The citizens of the Hope felt anxiety and consternation when they left warp drive and saw the many alien spaceships outside the window. However, to prevent mass hysteria, the human government had already clarified the situation in a morning announcement at around 6 AM.

After realizing that they were not invaded by any aliens and life went on as usual on the Hope, the emotions of the public gradually returned to normal. Even though in the initial few days there was worry that aliens would suddenly storm the ship or the Hope would be decimated in the middle of the night, as time passed, after about half a month of nothing interesting, the people on the Hope had gotten used to this situation. Certain busybodies even started critiquing the spaceships around the Hope or used this opportunity to soak up as much information about other space civilizations as they could.

This was especially shocking for Blue 6 because there had never been any space civilizations, at least from those that they had known, to be so hardworking. Compared to humanity, almost all of the space civilizations were in a state of laziness. After all, the common lifespan for an alien civilization after they entered space was several hundred or even one thousand years, and thus many space civilizations extended their studying period to more than one hundred years. This was something unimaginable for humanity. One hundred years? That was pretty much a lifetime for human

beings.

Similarly, humanity's hardworking nature was something unimaginable for Blue 6.

Thanks to this, 3 years after the war at the Shelter, the proposal to update the Gravity Cannon was ready and the person behind this proposal was not the Whisperer, Bo Li.

"...When the anti-gravity systems are layered on top of each other, we can see clearly the wave fluctuation of the systems. On this, I have done some improvement. After all, this is not supposed to be a simple layering on top of each other, there has been a conceptual mistake. We are modelling the system using energy and so they are not in a physical state like the ones on the Hope. Because of that, we don't need to care about the limitation of three dimensional space. And this is the newly updated version of the Gravity Cannon..."

In a meeting room in the Academy, a middle-aged Caucasian man was explaining his proposal to improve the Gravity Cannon excitedly on stage. This man was not a random person, he was a famous physicist from the Noah One. He was nearly 70, but thanks to the usage of the genetic mesomeric device, he looked to be in his 30s.

This famous physicist was a shining example of the survivors from the Noah One. Ever since they were rescued, they had assimilated into life on the Hope in the shortest amount of time. After all, they were all humans, the biggest difference being skin color and language, a difference that was barely noticeable in the context of space. Therefore, the assimilation was smooth.

The only thing that rubbed the survivors from the Noah One the wrong way was that their political demands were not met.

However, the fault did not lie with the human government or Yao Yuan. After all, before saving the Noah One, the Hope's governmental system had already stabilized, especially after the

period of peace on the new planet. Unless this human government did something truly out of sorts with the public, it would continue to enjoy a support of more than 90 percent approval rating on the Hope.

In short, the elites from the Noah One were disappointed that they were not invited to become part of the leading community on the Hope, be it among the House of Representatives, the Barracks, the Academy, the Workshop, or even the world of business. If anything, they were given a later start than everyone else. However, they too realized this had its cons too because this meant that the Hope was a true meritocracy, and from there, they worked harder to improve themselves. An example was this famous physicist who used the shortest amount of time to familiarize himself with the scientific developments and standards on the Hope and later focused on his own field to impress everyone.

Through the calculations by the Academy and the AI's simulation, this physicist's design would improve the efficiency of the Gravity Cannon by 0.6 percent. Be it from the perspective of tidal force or the gravity system, he had opened a door for the scientists by using a different method of layering the energy systems, and perhaps the power of the Gravity Cannon could be further improved.

This physicist admitted that his inspiration came from the level 3 space civilization products Guang Zhen had seen at the Shelter, the atomic condensation of liquid and air. This impressive storage method by stacking atoms in small space gave him the inspiration for the new Gravity Cannon.

Improvements like this were happening all over the Hope. There were already scientists discussing the practicality of cold agglutination reactors, even though there was still at least a decade until the finished research of cold agglutination technology. This could already be considered part of the foreseeable future. In other words, the Hope already had one of its legs in the door to becoming

a level 3 space civilization.

And then...

The Hope was getting closer and closer to the green light. So far, the Hope was about 10 days away from reaching the green light, but the question of entering it or not still hadn't been solved. The key issue was whether this green light was the so-called star path or not, and if it wasn't, then was it the ruin?

If this was the ruin, the fact that it had hypnotized all the space civilizations into coming into it was truly spine-chilling. It felt like... an ominous invitation, like a high-tier space civilization was attracting all the low level space civilizations for their own insidious purpose, just like the bug-eating plants back on Earth.

Therefore, the issue remained unsolved. For one, other than going forward into the green light, the Hope had no other visible choices, but on the other end, entering it without additional surveillance was simply too dangerous.

Finally, a compromise was made. It was to send a nonhuman piloted spaceship into the green light first to retrieve any information before deciding to enter it or not. Of course, there was also the possibility of the green light being a one-way opening... naturally, there was a solution to that too.

A super long nano rope could be released into the green light. The Hope could use this kind of primitive and physical method to find out more about this green light and what was behind it. If the rope was snipped or dissolved, then it meant that this green light was most likely dangerous, that it was some kind of super powered energy entity. In that case, the Hope was definitely not getting into the range of the green light.

In any case, to ensure the safety of the Hope, there had been more than ten proposals around the surveillance of the green light. Following the improvement in technology, the available surveillance method had also increased. Other than the one

mentioned above, there were also energy simulation technology, nanobots, or super-atomic bombardment. With the Hope's current scientific level, creating these devices would require less than 24 hours. Therefore, for the sake of the best results, Yao Yuan approved every single one of the proposals. His only request was that all surveillance plans could only use lifeless robots or AI, no human pilots or volunteers were to be involved.

Time passed in waiting. In the three months the Hope was heading towards the green light, more than ten thousand alien spaceships had entered it. There were still plenty of spaceships wandering around this part of space. As one batch had entered the light, another batch appeared to fill up the space vacated. It was now that the people on the Hope realized just how crowded the cosmos was. Human beings had spent too little time in space, so they had the impression that the cosmos was empty. For most space civilizations, they had more than one spaceship. In fact, most of them had fleets. A space civilization with the Hope's type of existence where all of its several ten thousand population was in one mothership was quite possibly the sole exception in space.

It was also because of this that humanity had to be extra careful...

Finally, the Hope reached the edge of the green light. Another 10,000 kilometers and they would be inside the green light. With a closer look, the people on the Hope agreed that instead of light, this green "light" should be called fog, a fog that covered up that part of space...

"Activating pilotless surveillance spaceship, control of AI normal, creator's particle resonator functioning, energy system normal..."

"Initiating surveillance plan number one!"



# Chapter 385: Biological Experiment

---

Waiting always made people nervous. It had been 24 hours since the AI drove the pilotless spaceship into the green light. Therefore, the operation was announced a failure because according to the AI command, it was supposed to return within 24 hours. The fact that it didn't meant that it had gone missing or was attacked.

"We received no information from the other end. All we have is still a piece of emptiness and the pilotless spaceship has completely disappeared."

In a lab somewhere on the Hope's fourth floor, the few people gathered there were despondent. They were the task force behind this operation. They had quite some confidence in this operation, but it had failed gloriously. For this group of people who wished to improve their standing in the Hope's world of science, this was truly a great setback.

Thankfully, this was just one failure, and the loss was merely some materials and deduction of future project grants. As long as no one was hurt, it was fine.

Following this failure, now it was time for the nanoline operation. A 30,000-kilometer-long nanoline would be released into the green light and pulled out one hour later to investigate how it was behind the green light.

This nanoline was created using the nano technology of level 2 space civilizations. Its tensile strength was confirmed and each nanothread had their own memory that could record short information that lasted for three to five seconds. In other words, even if the front end of the nanoline was broken off, as long as a part of the line had touched the green light and at least one nano-size of the line still remained, then the data wouldn't be lost.

The Hope had exhausted plenty of materials just to create this nanoline. In reality, this nanoline was meant to be used as nano-

server connecting a whole planet or Shelter; this was an upgraded communication device that was better than fiber optics. Even though they had wireless communication technology like supermagnetic communication, its effect was not proportional to its energy and material exhaustion. For a general use communication technology, the nanoline was still more suitable.

Currently, the Hope was using this nanoline to investigate the inside of the green light. After one hour, the Hope's internal dragging machine pulled the line back, but...

The front end of the line had been broken off. About 1 meter of the line had completely disappeared. However, it was not a clean break like most scientists predicted. The line was not broken off in a manner that was clean and parallel, which would suggest a distortion of space.

The break did not show any signs of corrosion, melting, or other high energy dissolution signs either.

The front end of the line had weird twists, turns, and irregular changes, like certain places were flattened while others curled upon themselves. There were parts that were fraying as well... This was hard to explain. If explained using the normal electrical line as an example, it was as if the inner copper lines suddenly twisted together with the outer plastic casing while the line had remained, for the most part, intact.

This find was confusing. Why would this happen? What happened to the nanoline inside the green light? If it wasn't space distortion or high energy corrosion, then what kind of thing existed within?

The scientists could not come to a conclusion on this result shown by the nanoline. It was like an invisible hand had ruffled the line in a random manner, or... this green light was some weird energy field? It would crush and ruffle everything that went into it?

Regardless, the Hope continued to carry out several other surveillance operations, and without exception, all of them had failed. None of them could shed light on what was inside the green light, the only clue was this nanoline.

"But this makes no sense..."

The scientists almost tore their hair out trying to make sense of this situation. However, going bald wouldn't help the situation. In other words, they had reached a dead end.

In reality, it was not that there no hypotheses given by the Academy on what happened to the nanoline. There was talk of a curious energy field which twisted the line, while other scientists proposed that it was some kind ionic state that formed this green light and that any object entering it would be bombarded by the heavy ions, causing collapse or changes at the ionic level and thus causing the strange phenomenon they had seen on the nanoline. Or it was some strange defense system within the ruin...

There were all sorts of extrapolations, but all of them had one similarity: there was no actual proof. These were all hypotheses using scientific logic and imagination, no one knew what truly happened in the green light. What if it was different from everything they had imagined? This could be death for the Hope should they enter based on a false hypothesis. Since this involved the lives of several ten thousand people and the legacy of humanity, the Hope's higher officials had no choice but to be extra careful.

Just like that, the Hope spent more days idling outside of the green light. Another three months had passed. Looking at these fleets of alien spaceships entering the green light and watching more of them appearing to refill their places, the hearts of the people were nervous and agitated...

In this period of time, among the mess of alien spaceships, other than a few new level 4 space civilizations' ships, there were also

some unidentified, weirdly-shaped spaceships. They probably belonged to level 5 space civilizations...

All of the spaceships disappeared after they entered the green light. No one could be certain whether a more high level space civilization, like 6, 7, or 8, would make their appearances. This ruin might've been powerful, but it wouldn't be able to hypnotize a high-tier space civilization, right? If that happened and those high tier space civilizations realized that a level 2 space civilization that was not hypnotized was just idling at the edge of the green light, they definitely wouldn't mind taking a look, right?

Therefore, time was ticking for the Hope. They could be in deep trouble at any minute...

After a great amount of discussion and more proposals to recon this green light, on the third month of idling, the Hope finally came up with a new surveillance operation, a live surveillance. Of course, they wouldn't be using actual human beings, that was far too dangerous. They would be using one of the reared animals on the Hope. From pigs to cows and even a fish that was enclosed in a specially made case were part of the experiment.

At the same time, the Hope also sent out a transport shuttle with an exploratory team made up of scientists and a Diviner to bring these animals near to the green light. This biological experiment's aim was to see whether the green light was harmful to living creatures or not. Therefore, the animals would be led at least half way into the green light. This would enable humanity to tell whether the green light was harmful to them or not. Of course, for this purpose, the team responsible had to follow the experiment closely.

Other than a Diviner, the team also contained Ivan, the biology and pathology Whisperer. Even though many did not want him to join when the team was formed, since his value as a Whisperer was simply too high to the Hope, Ivan's reason was undeniable. After all, if the animals died in the green light, their corpses had to be

studied at the shortest notice so that the secret of the green light wouldn't be lost, and of all the biologists on the Hope, only Ivan had the capability to perform such autopsies.

Therefore, in spite of everything, Ivan ended up as part of the exploratory team. Of course, the Diviner was secretly ordered by the Hope's higher officials that should he feel any danger, even if it wasn't serious, he would have to turn the shuttle around and announce the ending of the operation.

Just like that, the transport shuttle inched closer to the green light. They were about 1,000 meters away from the green light. In fact, it felt like they could reach out to touch it. Using a mechanical support, the animals were slowly pushed into the green light. This time, not only the exploratory team on the transport shuttle, even the people on the Hope watched this unfold with bated breath. Finally, some of the animals had entered into the green light, while others still remained outside. After 60 seconds of varying exposure to the green light, the mechanical arm pulled the animals back out.

Then...

Those animals who entered fully into the green light had disappeared, even the part of the mechanical arm holding them had disappeared. Those who reached halfway into the green light had their spaceship completely twisted or disappeared, even parts of their bodies had disappeared or gotten grotesquely twisted. It was truly a scene out of a horror movie.

The weirdest of all was definitely those who only had small parts of their bodies go into the green light...

Those parts had completely flipped inside-out!

# Chapter 386: Hypothesis!

---

Ivan studied these living animals closely. The sheep and cow had the small parts that had entered the green light and turned inside-out. To put it simply, the skin had completely disappeared while the blood vessels and internal organs were on the surface. These vessels and organs too showed signs of weird twisting and inversion.

Of course, if it was only just that, Ivan wouldn't have been so shocked. The scariest thing was these two animals were still alive and their organs and blood vessels were still functioning. Yes, even in their state, they didn't stop working.

This was truly a creepy situation. After all, a creature's internal organs were actually very fragile; even a slight tear or damage, much less twisting, would cause them to stop working. The fact that they could still work after being completely transformed was impossible, unless...

Demonization!

However, after a closer look at these two animals, Ivan confirmed that their surface vessels and organs had gone through more than the simple act of demonization. This was because the cellular samples picked from the organs had a completely different make-up from demonization. There was a highly confidential document file on the Hope that kept track of the details of demonized creatures. Demonization was a total conversion of organs and cells, it was different from the situation that was happening before them.

In the next few hours, Ivan focused on examining these "wounds" and conducted an autopsy on one of the animals. At the same time, other scientists conducted isotope and other chemical experiments on the animal that were exposed to the green light. In any case, when the shuttle returned to the Hope, the experiments hadn't

finished yet.

However, Ivan's research had reached its critical stage. When he spliced the skin cells, he suddenly discovered a curious phenomenon. Other than the inversion and twisting of the skin cells, some of the cells had fused together... No, that might be a wrong way of putting it. Instead of fusing together, it was more like they had overlapped over each other, because if given a closer look, the individual cell was still functioning as normal...

If all of these observations and clues were strung together, then the logical conclusion was...

Ivan was also a Whisperer. Even though he was a biological expert, it did not mean that he was not knowledgeable in other fields. Whisperers had a natural affinity for everything science-related, so they would have scientific clues whispered in their ears. When he was conducting the autopsy, he immediately used the communicator to call several physicists, including the Whisperer, Bo Li.

"Hello, everyone, I will not waste time on pleasantries. The only reason I've called for everyone is because I've discovered a curious discrepancy. Of course, I'm not an expert in this field, the only thing I can work with are these cells, blood vessels, and small amount of organs. Therefore, I need a confirmation from the rest of you, to see whether the hypothesis is correct or not..."

This group of scientists was hurried into Ivan's lab. Ivan did not stand on ceremony and instantly brought them up to speed. Then he brought them to the enlarged picture under the microscope and explained his hypothesis. It shocked everyone there. After a long discussion and questioning in his lab, the probability of this hypothesis was slowly confirmed. If this was the truth, then the situation with the nanoline, the disappearance of all those spaceships, and the curious changes of these creatures could be logically explained. However, if that was the case, this green light would be a great opportunity, but at the same time, a great danger.

In the next 20 hours, the number of people that joined the discussion gradually grew. After getting the permission from Yao Yuan, they had even taken a great section of the AI task force to conduct a simulation to confirm their hypothesis. When all of this was over and reliable and valuable data was found, Yao Yuan's group had already waited for a long time.

Just like that, on the third day of the animal experimentation, after a night's rest for those scientists involved, they appeared at the Hope's government hearing, refreshed. In contrast, Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, and the rest had already waited until their eyes were red with tiredness. The person leading the scientists was none other than Ivan. As the leader, he began, "Dear respected government officers who are gathered here, I will explain in detail the existence of this green light. Of course, this is merely our scientific hypothesis; whether it is true or not, we are unable to say for sure. However, under the condition where no actual experiments can be done, we are 80 percent confident this is how the green light works.

"First, we need to predicate this with a big condition... This green light is not a normal cosmic space."

The people in the meeting room were silent. This first sentence was practically half useless, because this was almost confirmed already. This green light was definitely not a normal cosmic space; why else wouldn't the Hope's surveillance be able to detect its interior? Beyond that, the disappearance, collapse, or weird twists as mass entered the green light, could those happen in a normal space?

Ivan studied the gathered people before him and continued, "After our discussion and experiments, the hypothesis we settled upon is that... This green light is hiding a four-dimensional space!"

Yao Yuan's group didn't react in any unusual way to this announcement, but the great amount of scientists in the room started to hustle and bustle. There was even a scream that stated,



"Impossible!" Pandemonium descended upon the room.

Thankfully, the chaos didn't last for long. As the room quieted down again, Ivan continued, "I know this answer is hard to believe, but this is the only logical hypothesis that we have. It is the only explanation to why even though the green light isn't a creator's particle, we are still unable to detect beyond it. Us looking at the green light is similar to how the people in paintings looking out at us in reality, they wouldn't be able to. Similarly, we are unable to look into the green light."

Finally, a middle-aged scientist could not stand it anymore and asked loudly, "Professor Ivan, it is not that we want to question your hypothesis, but have you thought about one serious issue? That of space size? If this green light is as you said, a four dimensional space, then how big is it really? If this whole green light area hides a four dimensional space, then its scale could be large enough to envelope this entire solar system... no, probably several hundred solar systems, right?"

Right then, Silewei, the famed physicist who stood beside Ivan took the podium, "Let me answer that. Indeed, if the entire green light we see covers a four dimensional space, then its scale and density is bigger than we can possibly imagine. However, is it not possible that only the outermost layer is the four dimensional space and the interior is the star path entrance and the ruin? As everyone knows, with the advancement in technology and the increase in space civilization level, the creations will improve accordingly. Just look at our defensive shield; from the electromagnetic shield we've mastered, it has evolved to plasma energy. And there's that space distortion shield we see on the level 4 space civilizations. Is it not possible for higher level space civilizations to use a four dimensional shield?

"From the information we gathered from the battlefield ruin a few months ago, this space ruin is blocking the entrance to the star path, so couldn't this green light before us be a shield of the space

ruin? And beyond it is the ruin itself?"

"But how is this four dimensional shield maintained?" This time, another scientist stood up to ask. "How to create a four dimensional space within a three dimensional space, that itself is beyond our scientific comprehension. At least we humans definitely do not have the technology to do anything like that. Regarding this hypothesis... maybe you're right, perhaps with the increase in space civilization level, this might be doable, but I want to ask, where would the energy to maintain this four dimensional space come from? Since this is a ruin, even if it has an internal energy supply, it couldn't last forever, right? However, to maintain a four dimensional space, even just a one millimeter of space, the energy requirement would be greater than the energy exhaustion of this whole spaceship, much greater in fact."

"Why couldn't it be a permanent energy source? Like a perpetual motion machine..."

"Are you sure you're a scientist and not a sci-fi writer or a madman? How can there be a perpetual motion machine in space? Unless the whole cosmos collapses and the total space mass fluctuates, that kind of creation is impossible..."

Then the whole meeting became a shouting match between the scientists on the stage and those below it. Their technical term-filled arguments confused Yao Yuan's group.

Therefore, Yao Yuan whispered to Bo Li, who was sitting beside him, "What if the green light's a four dimensional space? Is that so hard to accept? Also... why would a green light this size be able to contain several hundred solar systems?"

Bo Li glanced at him before whispering in return, "Use your Thinker power to mull over it. One dimensional is line and two dimensional is plane. Think about it, how many lines can be used to fill up a plane? A millimeter plane can contain innumerable nanometer-wide lines. Of course, the first dimension doesn't abide

by the concept of length; therefore, the number of lines in a plane is literally infinite. Similarly, in a three dimensional space, how many planes could there be? Since the second dimension doesn't have height, a three dimensional space could also have infinite number of planes...

"Similarly, a four dimensional space will have an infinity amount of three dimensional spaces...

"Saying it can contain several hundred solar systems is already an understatement. If this green light is really a four dimensional space, then it is actually the size of a cosmos...

"An unnatural cosmos created by life!"

# Chapter 387: Discussion

---

The arguments in the hearing were still going on. In fact, the hearing had changed from the discussion of the interior of the green light into an academic forum on the possibility of four dimensional space existing in the current cosmos.

It had even escalated to a stage where even among Ivan's own group, there were arguments. After all, this was four dimensional space.

In reality, it was not that human science hadn't reached the exploration on four dimensional space. Before humanity left Earth, many scientists had already hypothesized about the space and time in the cosmos, like quantum theory, the theory of relativity, and string theory. Each of these theories elaborated on the concept of space and time and had a more complete elaboration on four dimensional space.

The one dimensional space is the so-called line, two dimensional space is the plane, three dimensional space is 3D space with the parameters of length, breadth, and depth. Some counted time as a parameter in three dimensional space, but that would be four dimensional space, something completely different.

In pure space theory, the whole universe was a three dimensional space, but adding four dimensional space into three dimensional universe, that was something unimaginable. The most crucial issue was that the high density of space would cause an energy dispersion and exhaustion that was beyond the capacity of any known energy source. This was a problem facing the human scientific system, either accept that the green light was really a four dimensional space and collapse the entire human scientific theories and bodies or this green light was not really a four dimensional space.

This was psychological limitation. Even though humanity's

scientific understanding of space was still lacking, that was the basis of all human knowledge, it was the cradle of human civilization. It was a collection of knowledge cultivated over several thousand of years through millions of sacrifices and hard work. Even though human civilization was already half way in the door to becoming a level 3 space civilization, these scientific basis couldn't be abandoned just like that. This was also the reason why scientific progress on the Hope was so slow. The Hope didn't accept all external knowledge without filter, the Academy would spend time to dissect, master, and eventually fit the knowledge into humankind's existing scientific theories. According to Blue 6, this was the go-to method for newborn space civilizations. Of course, there was benefit to this method as well. The scientific stability for such space civilization would be very strong and a great foundation in science was rumored to be way more important than new discovery when one became a mid-tier space civilization.

This was the conundrum humanity was facing, a problem that had to be resolved, but once they admitted the presence of this problem, humanity's scientific foundation would be undermined. The scientific foundation was like a pyramid, starting from the bottom brick by brick. When the bottom layer was destroyed, the possibility of the whole thing toppling would be much higher.

The hearing had been going on for almost four hours and it had no sign of slowing down. If anything, it had only gotten more heated. If not for the scientific terms being tossed about, Yao Yuan would have the illusion that he was in the House of Representatives, watching the politicians arguing amongst themselves.

After the four hour mark, some of the more senior scientists had gotten tired. Yao Yuan made use of the opportunity to order the people to serve a simple lunch. Even though it was not as complete as a meal at the canteen, it still had three dishes and a soup as well

as a choice of rice or bread. The dessert was an apple or an orange, and thus, on top of the sound of arguments, there was also the sound of eating in the room.

Yao Yuan sighed in relief internally.

Even though he was the Chancellor of the human survivors and the hero in many people's eyes, Yao Yuan was extremely polite around the Hope's scientists and academicians, to the point where certain influential scientists would go to his room to create a ruckus simply to demand new equipment or more materials.

This respect was not for show but an actual respect that came from the heart. Compared to the Black Star Troopers and Defense Unit, these scientists were the real saviors of humanity. Without them, how would humanity ever advance in space? Gaussian rifles, space armor, combat jets, various heavy weapons, those wouldn't have existed. While they might have come from Bo Li's mind, she alone wouldn't have been able to make them a reality. Therefore, the Academy was in reality the biggest hero of humanity and the sole reason humanity could survive for so long in space, so Yao Yuan's respect towards them was completely warranted.

This was why Yao Yuan sighed in relief. To preserve the vibrancy of the scientific scene on the Hope, other than during extreme situations, Yao Yuan practically stayed away from the research of the Academy. He would try his best to fulfil their requests for money, supplies, and even treatment for individual scientists. This could be seen from the Hope's earliest policy. From day one, the best treated community on the Hope was the scientists, and oftentimes the treatment was better than the Chancellor's.

So how could he break up their discussion? It was not yet a critical moment, there were at least 10 days of safety left.

However, letting this argument continue to fester was not a brilliant idea either. Yao Yuan hoped the short lunch would be able to calm the room down. Alas, as they finished their lunch, most of

them couldn't wait to jump back into the argument. In fact, perhaps they had already forgotten the true purpose of this hearing. Due to the freedom accorded to scientists on the Hope, they had cultivated the habit of hashing out their academic arguments wherever and whenever, even during an important hearing.

The argument thus continued for another few hours. Just as it would seem the discussion would go nowhere, there was finally a ray of hope...

The speaker was the great physicist, Silewei. As the Hope's most senior, most knowledgeable, and the representative from the physics committee, he too was caught in the crossfire of this discussion. When he took the stage, he said directly, "Dear colleagues, I understand your concern, because I too have the same concern. This is more than a simple discussion but a preservation of our scientific foundation. I'm sure that's the thing that worries everyone, because it worries me too!

"But remember that at the end of the day, we are scientists! And what do scientist do? We question, confirm, and deny through hypotheses and experiments to find the truth! If our scientific foundation and our historical figures were wrong... Yes, to err is human, the people that contributed to the foundation of our knowledge may be wrong just as how we ourselves could be wrong, but the truth is always right. Do not fixate on the despair of the collapse of physics, because only by collapsing what is false can we reveal the truth!

"So let us open our minds and take up the courage to hypothesize. Let's say that this high tier space civilization has some kind of unknown superpower energy source and this energy is bigger than the total mass density of the observable universe like dark matter or dark energy. It could even be the preexisting super string energy or something we haven't even envisioned yet. If such an energy source exists, then four dimensional space is possible..."

Silewei was incredibly influential in the Hope's Academy, especially in the field of physics. The combination of his deep knowledge and the German's severe attitude made him one of the greatest minds on the Hope. Therefore, his words, when it came to issues related to science, were oftentimes more influential than Yao Yuan's.

After Silewei finished, the room gradually became silent. Following Silewei's suggestion, their minds were broadened and they slowly accepted this possibility. With more discussions, they even came up with methods to test out this hypothesis, and this led to another wave of excitement... Four dimensional space! If this was truly a four dimensional space and not just a computer simulation or something like that and it truly existed in space, this was purely unimaginable for creatures in three dimensional space, especially for the group of scientists. This was no different from the discovery of a new land.

A group of overly excited scientists even volunteered to form an exploratory team to enter the green light. Of course, this was immediately harshly vetoed by Yao Yuan, he even banned this group of scientists from leaving the Hope. His reason was simple, due to the freedom he gave them, the Academy had a few spaceships that were especially designed to conduct experiments in zero gravity. Without the ban, Yao Yuan was afraid these people would break into the spaceship and venture on their own into the green light compelled by the heat of their passion.

Just like that, after the hearing that lasted for three days, the Academy used the AI to simulate another result and they came up with another exploratory proposal!



# Chapter 388: Password!

---

Using the discussion results from the three-day-long meeting, the Academy truly had outperformed themselves. Utilizing the AI's superhuman calculating capability, they came up with the most possible situation should one enter the green light in under a week.

In the 3D image, no it should be called a 4D image, the 3d construction of a cow was pushed into the green light and it became turned inside out and kept shifting into impossible things where the form of a cow was completely lost. This shift was more than just the turning its organs or blood vessels inside out, this was more than that... Simply put, it had changed into a jellyfish, where one could look into its organs and it kept vomiting out the organs so its insides became the outside of the jellyfish.

In this weird 4D image, the cow theoretically should have died, but according to the calculations of the AI, the cow was not only alive, it was surviving better than before.

"Please don't be shocked, Chancellor."

Beside this giant projection was a large group of scientists and government officials. The person responsible for the explanation was physicist Silewei. Obviously, he had discerned the shock on the public's faces and commented with a smile, "Even though this cow looks beyond its normal form and you might see it as nothing more than a pile of meat, this is actually its true form within a four dimensional space. For example, when an artist draws an apple on a piece of paper, no matter how hard he tries to express the third dimension through shading and other methods, there would a great section of the apple that wouldn't be portrayed in drawing. Then is it fair to say that part of the apple doesn't exist? No, we can only say that such is the apple's form in two dimensional space.

"Similarly, if we put this apple into one dimensional space, it would have the appearance of a line, and at most it would have

color. Here, we are merely inverting the process, from three dimensional space to four dimensional space, thus the form of this cow changed accordingly. Its internal organs, blood, brain, and bones didn't go through any change because there wasn't any force to change them. According to physics, if there isn't any force involved, then it won't have any changes in its form, so if we remove this cow from the four dimensional space..."

As Silewei said so, the AI was doing the thing in the projection. This mess of meat and bones slowly recovered into the cow that we all know and recognize.

Many non-scientists started talking in whispers, obviously they were shaken by this development. Among them was Blue 6. Even as a member of the more advanced Blue Race, four dimensional space was something new to him as well. Theoretical stuff existed in theories only, and seeing them in person was a completely different issue. Of course, the precondition was that this simulation was mirroring the real thing.

Suddenly, a member from the Barracks asked, "Professor, but according to our observations, anything that enters the four dimensional space will be twisted and torn open, so how can this cow revert to its original form after it left the space? That makes no sense."

"It does make sense," Silewei replied with a smile. "As I mentioned earlier, this is what happens when there is no external force. Moving from one dimension to the next is just a change of form... However, if there is an external force, let's just say three dimensional creatures are extremely malleable after they travel into four dimensional space."

At this point, Silewei ordered the AI to put the cow back into the four dimensional space, and when that weird meat blob appeared again, Silewei walked to stand under the project to lightly blow on it. Then he told the AI to quantify and apply the force in his breath of air onto the cow.

Under everyone's scrutiny, this meat blob started to shiver like a blob of tofu and then some blood started to fall off. Then the more fragile bone marrow and brain matter started to vibrate, while most of the solid bone structure was unaffected and the cartilaginous parts resumed to their normal state after a short vibration. However, it was obvious to everyone that this cow was extremely fragile, so fragile that a breath of air could blow it away. If Silewei had used his finger to press at it, the thing probably would have died.

"We are three dimensional creatures, so our body structures, thoughts, speed, and even power are existent in three dimensional laws and data. Even though we can enter four dimensional space without the fear of death, we'll be extremely fragile. Perhaps a gentle shove could shatter us into a million pieces with no chance of reconstruction."

Here, Silewei paused to let his explanation sink in. Then he continued, "According to our calculation of breaking patterns, damage clauses, and physical structure, we arrived at a vector. After we add this vector into the logarithm, we came up with the conclusion. After we enter the green light, there will be a pulling force from inside the green light... This force is one-directional, not unlike gravity, and this explains why our pilotless spaceships would disappear and the breaking of the nanoline. The theory is simple, they were torn apart by the conflict of the forces outside and inside the green light.

"In reality, this pulling force needn't be big; even the most stable diamond, no, even a neutron star fragment would be shattered by this conflict of forces. This is because three dimensional objects are that fragile in a four dimensional space."

Silewei had a serious tone as he explained and the room listened attentively. Yao Yuan, Guang Zhen, and the group of high officials, though, started to frown. According to Silewei, this green light was a death trap for any object, because they would become extremely

fragile within it. Then this meant that the Hope and the people inside it would be as fragile as tofu when they entered the green light, right?

This green light was practically the kryptonite for everything that existed in normal space!

Guang Zhen finally asked, "Then we have to give up this star path and find another way?"

Silewei shook his head. "That might not be so. This is the result we have obtained after such a long discussion... applying counteracting pressure using the AI."

As he said so, the cow in the projection had been recovered to its original form. It was placed into four dimensional space again and this time Silewei suddenly used his fingers to poke at the beast. The AI applied the same force to the cow, but the creature that was supposed to shatter into pieces stood there unharmed; there was not even a vibration. As the cow retreated from the space, it again reverted to its familiar form. According to the AI's calculation, the cow was extremely healthy and it had received no harm.

"The most threatening thing in four dimensional space is external force, but the thing that can counteract that is also force... With the anti-gravity system and genetic mesomeric technology, these two force-related technologies can completely neutralize the external force that would be applied on the Hope, including the acceleration of the ship, the pulling force within the green light, and the possible damaging effect it could possibly have on the human or any living body. In other words, there is a way that allows us to enter this green light safely!"

Basically, that was the end of this demonstration. Of course, there were still some questions left to be answered, but those would have to be answered in private... In the next month, the Hope would begin surveilling this green light again as it continued to send in more living creatures to confirm whether this green

light was a four dimensional space and the direction of its internal pulling force... Even though talk about direction inside a four dimensional space was a bit fussy, it was the best term of reference, and the Hope needed all this data before it could decide whether or not to enter the green light.

After the demonstration, the Hope's high officials had a smaller meeting of their own. The final decision was: if there was still no progress regarding the understanding of the green light in the next year, then the Hope would give up on this star path. They would rather spend another decade looking for another star path than waste any more time here.

Privately, Guang Zhen also questioned Yao Yuan on the possibility of this ruin being a trap. If this green light was truly a four dimensional space, then creatures from three dimensional space, be it low tier space civilization or even middle tier space civilization, would be dead once they entered the green light. Therefore, this looked less than a ruin but more like a method to collect soul.

However, regarding this hypothesis, Yao Yuan, Xiao Niao, and Ren Tao had their suspicions, and their main reason was... hypnosis!

Yes, the hypnosis made all the space civilizations travel here and similarly it had lulled all these civilizations into entering the green light. Just as they discussed during the demonstration, the pulling force inside the green light was a constant, there was no change in terms of acceleration or deceleration. In other words, the hypnosis might have saved these space civilizations' lives because a spaceship's speed as they entered the green light and the speed they maintained inside the green light would decide its life or death. The hypnosis was like the password that gave the hypnotized civilizations the speed that they needed to maintain so as not to get crushed by the pulling force inside the green light. On the other hand, humanity that was not hypnotized, so they needed

to crack this "password" on their own...

If this hypothesis was to be believed, then this ruin...

Was most likely authentic! And it belonged to a high tier space civilization!

# Chapter 389: Request!

---

"The success rate is only 20 percent? Or even less than that?"

Back on the Hope, everyone was looking at a perfectly fine cow. Obviously, this cow had gotten immune to human presence because she merely stood there, quietly eating her feed, and did not get spooked by the proximity of humans.

Several hours ago, the third experiment on the green light had started. They sent in five animals, one of them disappeared in the green light, three changed into unknown meat blobs and were shuttled away by the Academy as important experimental data, while the last remaining cow returned to the Hope in her original form unharmed.

One out of five animals survived. A 20 percent rate of survival, or it could be even lower when taking into account the variable of low sample size. In any case, this was unacceptable. Just think about it, only 20 percent of the Hope surviving after entering the green light, that was unacceptable!

Humanity had not reached a dead end yet, as there were multiple star paths in the galaxy. The worst case scenario was they would have to find another star path to leave this system. Even though it might cause more wastage of time and might lead to other dangers, it was still better than a 20 percent success rate.

However, Yao Yuan still hoped there would be some breakthroughs at this point, not only because understanding the fourth dimension would rejuvenate humanity's science, since this might be the catalyst they needed to go from a level 2 space civilization to level 3, but also because the data on the four dimensional space would be valuable in the future.

Other than the four dimensional space, this ruin... Yao Yuan had some idea about it as well.

For some reasons, when they came closer and closer to the green light, Yao Yuan felt pulled by something inside the ruin. It was an instinct, something different from the power of the Diviner. If one really had to describe it, it was the instinct of selecting the winning lottery ticket. It was very unscientific.

In fact, as an experienced soldier and leader, Yao Yuan was not one to believe in instinct, because this instinct was something completely different from the Diviner's power; it couldn't be verified. However... this instinct felt real, and he had asked many other people. It seemed like other than himself, there was no one else that felt similarly. Could it be that this was another one of the Immortal's powers?

Therefore, if possible, he wanted to discover the mystery of this ruin. If this was truly the Immortal's power, combined with the Diviner's danger sense, perhaps... humanity could really get something from this ruin! Even if the four dimensional space technology would make the Hope invincible among all space civilizations lower than the middle tier, they wouldn't live in constant fear of other civilizations...

Due to Yao Yuan's insistence and the Academy's passion for knowledge, the Hope began another test. Of course, before the new test could begin, a review of the earlier results was necessary.

"...I believe the basis of the earlier hypothesis is still correct."

This was in a large meeting room. The scientists each held their own views, but hopefully a truth could be found through discussions.

At this moment, a scientist standing on stage pointed at the 4D simulation behind him. "This 4D simulation is constructed from the data collected from the animals that were twisted and turned. Even though we couldn't really understand the phenomena inside the fourth dimension, it is quantifiable. However, we have lost sight of one important thing: we have been using three



dimensional knowledge and world view to analyse the acquired data. If we use three dimensional knowledge to analyse the data, there will be much less room for variation..."

The scientist whispered to the AI and the simulation behind him changed. The objects inside it transformed. He continued, "As everyone can see, the transformation within a four dimensional space is more varied and random than three dimensional space. Therefore, in comparison, the force in a four dimensional space should have more variables than just direction. However, we have only been counterbalancing the variables that are known to us in three dimensional space. So, basically... the fact that we have an animal that survived the test is already a miracle in itself."

After this scientist made his observation, there was a string of other scientists who took the podium. There was a common thread among all of them, which was the way humanity perceived four dimensional space was not unlike how an ant looks at the sky; it was greatly inaccurate. The Hope's technology had to improve until level 5, 6, or even higher before they could truly understand the fourth dimension.

Similarly, when they thought the AI could calculate the data of the fourth dimension, that too was also wishful thinking. After all, no matter how powerful the calculative power the AI had, its knowledge framework was similar to the technological prowess of humanity. To put it simply, even its materials were from a level 2 space civilization, so how could a low level AI unveil the mystery of the fourth dimension?

Therefore, after this review was over, almost everyone thought that this exploratory effort would end. Yao Yuan announced three days of break on the Hope, and in these three days, he and Xiao Niao were seated in front of a computer. Along for the ride was Guang Zhen and Ren Tao, who were dragged along.

"...Tell me, why did you look for me?"

Just as the three days were going to draw to a close and everyone's faces were drawn with disappointment, the computer opened on its own and the screen wrote these few words.

Before Xiao Niao could react, Yao Yuan typed on the keyboard, "ZERO, this is Yao Yuan, the leader of this ship... I believe you know me and I'm sure you know why we have come to you this time."

"...Of course, it's about the layer of fourth dimension shield, isn't it?" ZERO replied.

Yao Yuan felt happiness surge through his heart and he immediately replied, "Fourth dimension shield, that's the name of this green light? As you know, we humans have tried every method to explore and test this shield, but the results were unsatisfactory. We are unable to cross the shield safely."

ZERO answered after a short silence, "Actually, you all have done more than enough. The fact that you can tell that this is a layer of fourth dimension shield and even came up with a solution that was doable if not limited by your scientific knowledge, that was indeed praiseworthy... However, what do you think this is? This is a newly acquired technology for a level 7 space civilization, and only a level 8 space civilization can really master it. It is a shield that can block all physical and energy attacks; not even black holes can harm it. Human beings with their level 2 space civilization technology wish to enter it? Such a wonderful dream indeed..."

Yao Yuan replied, "So in other words, we have found the correct direction, but due to the lack of a certain special technique, like super computers etcetera, we are unable to enter it?"

"Such innocence..." ZERO was sounding more and more like a human each day as she replied, "The complete fourth dimension shield is not something that can be understood by a level 2 space civilization. Even though theoretically you're correct, like the idea of using gravity and acceleration to counteract the balance of

power, have you thought about... what if the direction of the force was suddenly changed in the fourth dimension? Or the owner suddenly decided to change the structure of the dimension? The Hope and everything on it would be disintegrated in the blink of an eye!"

Disappointment weighed on Yao Yuan's heart, but he still glanced at Xiao Niao, which the latter understood. He accepted the keyboard and asked, "ZERO, this is Xiao Niao. I wish to ask if this means that this is a dead end for humanity. Do we have to leave this place and search for another star path entrance?"

ZERO answered after a while, "No, there are still other methods... This fourth dimension is what we call a static dimension. There is no AI or other space civilization behind it, it was indeed a shield for a ruin. As long as you can find the exact data and with great computing power, you could still traverse through this shield..."

The group was psyched. Xiao Niao instantly asked, "ZERO, I'm sure you have super computing power, so can you please help us? Help me enter this green light. The ruin aside, we have to get to the star path entrance beyond this green light. After all, moving to another star path is going to take too long and we might stumble across other dangers. It's best if we can enter this star path here... Can you please help us? I will forever be in your debt!"

ZERO went into a long silence again. It lasted for around 20 plus minutes, to the point where they thought she had left. Then she wrote, "Fine, I understand, I will help you... But on the condition that your great leader here promises that I will be in full control of every electrical system, including the anti-gravity systems and propelling systems, when we are inside the fourth dimension. Ask him first whether he trusts me that much or not.

"Furthermore, even though the level of this ruin is not high, there is something inside that I can sense...

"It is something that is scarier that you can possibly imagine!"

# Chapter 390: Entry!

---

"Perfect..."

This was another experiment. This time all 20 animals survived the entry into the four dimensional space. This made the participating scientists cheer out loud. Some of them had a hard time believing that the Hope's AI had suddenly become so powerful that it could completely predict and analyse the various energy patterns inside the fourth dimension.

Regardless, after the last failed experiment, all of the experiments after that were successful; there were no cases of death or twisting. The next experiment would push in 500 animals. If they too returned unharmed, next would be the Hope's first human experiment. The leader of the Diviners would enter the green light.

On the other hand, even though the experiments were successful, the few people who knew the truth were having their own discussions in a secret meeting room.

"Ol' Yao! I refuse to stand by your decision! If it was human, then perhaps we could consider it, but it's just an AI. This kind of situation..."

Guang Zhen slammed the table to emphasize his anger. Xiao Niao beside him said, with a bitter smile, "Commander Wong, she's a sentient lifeform, not an AI..."

"Major Qi Xiao Niao, did you ask your opinion?!" Guang Zhen laid it into Xiao Niao. He declared loudly, "In any case, I do not agree to let it control the entire the Hope. It is not from our race, so it must mean us harm! If it was human, then it would still be negotiate, but handing control of the ship to a non-human and going into a four dimensional space, no matter how I look at it, this is a suicide mission. This is asking for human extinction..."

Yao Yuan sighed and he looked at Guang Zhen seriously. "Ol' Wong, do you really think... She cannot take over the Hope if she wants to? Do you still remember the incident with the cursed planet? She has shown that she can take over the Hope if she wanted to, so why hasn't she if she means us harm? Even though I am the leader of humanity, I am not conceited enough to think human civilization is advanced enough to deal with the creation of a high tier space civilization. In other words, if she really wanted to end it, she could have done it a long time ago. Instead of predicting each other's intentions, why not make use of this opportunity to feel her out? If she doesn't do anything harmful to the Hope after we allow her to take control, then this means that she doesn't mean us harm and we can sleep easier at night."

Guang Zhen replied with the same serious countenance, "But have you thought about the risk involved? This is four dimensional space, if..."

"Enough." Yao Yuan put his hand up. "This is an order! Commander Wong, please follow my order!"

After a short silence, Guang Zhen stood at attention and gave Yao Yuan a salute. "Yes, Sir!"

Yao Yuan nodded. "Sit down, we'll discuss the next agenda... Whether to enter this ruin."

Just like that, after the successful human experiment, where the only bad effect was there was a new discovery of a disease called fourth dimension blindness, all the other vitals were perfectly fine. Under these circumstances, the Hope finally decided to enter this layer of green light, the fourth dimension!

"Energy control normal, anti-gravity system normal, structural integrity in place..."

In central command, Yao Yuan sat in the captain's chair, listening to the various reports. When everything was ready, he ordered the Hope to enter the green light. At the same time, in a

screen that only he could see, ZERO reported that she was ready.

Yao Yuan sighed slightly in relief. From his Diviner power, he realized that there were indeed multiple dangers in this green light, but these dangers either weren't fatal or weren't directed at the Hope. Of course, if little Eva was around, then it would be perfect, as she was like a golden finger that could give plenty of benefits to the Hope... Not to be ignored was Jay's large scale hypnotic power as well...

Yao Yuan sighed once more and kept his thoughts to himself. Now he needed to focus completely in his role as the captain of the ship, or else something irrevocable might happen due to his carelessness. If it was something bad... then he really wouldn't have the face to still lead the human race, if the human race still remained that is.

The Hope was actually not far away from the green light, but since this was the cosmos, this distance that was not far still required several hours of travel time. In this period, other than holding down the fort at central command, Yao Yuan continued conversing with ZERO. Even though this ZERO showed obvious sign of being not interested in the conversation, she responded to him better than Guang Zhen and the likes, who simply refused to talk to him about this.

"...ZERO, you must be extremely careful. This entry into the green light, we humans have placed our complete faith on you. This action that gambles the race's entire future and existence, losing is really not an option. You have to be 100 percent confident..." Yao Yuan's fingers swiped the transparent keyboard floating before him. A few sentences appeared on the small screen to his side. This was the channel he used to communicate to ZERO.

ZERO's answer came after a long time. "Don't worry, you've said this 47 times already. I'm a sentient lifeform, not some lowly AI, how could I make a mistake on something like this... Furthermore, this is just a four dimensional space, this is a cakewalk for me."

Yao Yuan smiled a slightly bitter smile. Just a four dimensional space... This was something that could destroy everything in the three dimensional cosmos, it was something humanity could only simulate, something that could tear humanity's understanding of science to its foundation, something that was unlike the existence of magic or miracles to human minds, yet it was "just" a four dimensional space for ZERO...

Yao Yuan suddenly asked, "ZERO, actually I have two questions that I've been meaning to ask you but haven't had the chance. Since we're cooperating this time, then if I may be so forward, do you mind answering these questions... One is the UFO, are you controlling it? Two is about the existence of your previous owner. Where are they now? How advanced was their technology? Higher tier space civilization? The legendary level 9 space civilization?"

"Level 9? Legendary?" Even though it was only written, Yao Yuan could discern the heavy sarcasm and condescension in her words. Then he saw what ZERO continued to write.

"This cosmos is bigger than you imagine. It is more than just space, or more accurately, it is more than the space that you can see and feel. This fourth dimension is the perfect example. It also includes the time in space as well as the energy layer and physical illusory layer. Even beyond that, there is a space of ideal material and heart. You humans are still too young, as young as the unicellular organisms of a new-born planet. You wish to understand the whole mystery of the cosmos in your current state? Impossible... This cosmos is bigger than you can imagine, bigger than your scientists can imagine, so much bigger that even how much bigger is on scale that you cannot fathom. Therefore, the civilizations among all these layers are innumerable as well, and the so-called legendary level 9 space civilization is only legendary in your limited worldview...

"I will answer your second question first. I do not know the level of the civilization that created me, but I can reveal to you a simple

message: this civilization... is at least a god-tier space civilization!"

When he saw the words "god-tier space civilization," Yao Yuan felt the air in his body being sucked out. His heart was palpitating and he even broke out in cold sweat. Thankfully, due to his training and decades of experience, he slowly calmed down and returned to normal.

ZERO acted as if she hadn't just revealed an incredible secret. This was information... that would interest level 9 space civilizations, and she was hiding inside the spaceship of a level 2 space civilization. This also made Yao Yuan more determined on preserving the secret existence of this UFO inside the Hope.

After a break for food and a short rest, the Hope was slowly approaching the green light. They were so close that they could already see it with the naked eye. Many alien spaceships still entered the green light with extreme regularity. Ever since the Hope had stopped here, at least a million alien spaceships had entered the green light. And now it was the Hope's turn...

"Inspection of anti-gravity system completed..."

"Inspection of the propeller device completed..."

"All devices and machineries that can cause irregular force within the Hope have been stopped..."

"Control of the ship has been taken by the AI..."

Guang Zhen sat in the captain's chair and ordered all the workers present, "I order for the Hope to enter the green light."

"Vice Captain's order, the Hope is entering the green light!"

At the same time, as the Hope would enter the green light in a few minute, Yao Yuan brought along Ren Tao, Xiao Niao, Zhang Heng, Bo Li, and a few Black Star Troopers to the Hope's central mainframe. This was a decision made by Yao Yuan after he conversed with ZERO...



As they entered the fourth dimension, he wished to see this UFO of a god tier space civilization for himself, to see what secrets it was hiding!

# Chapter 391: Fourth Dimension!

---

The Hope had officially entered the green light!

At the moment of entry, everyone felt blinded. Not from a bright flash, but the rewiring of the nerves connecting the brain to the eyes. It was... an indescribable sensation!

In that moment, an endlessly describable world appeared in everyone's sight. This was not a description, it was reality...

In fact, during the numerous experiments, the humans who were sent into the green light all experienced a weird phenomenon of blindness. The Academy came up with the simple hypothesis that humankind's eyes and other organs were not meant for the fourth dimension, so there naturally would be some problem when they broke through from the third dimension into the fourth dimension.

However, this blindness wouldn't persist for long. It would recover after two to three days. In fact, from a medical standpoint, this blindness wasn't even a type of physical injury. Some scientists suggested that it was because people couldn't mentally support the sudden change of dimensionality.

At that moment, when the Hope entered the green light, everyone suddenly understood why there was such a blindness. It was because... the place was too huge!

Just like how the cow was twisted beyond belief when its whole body was sent into the fourth dimension, it happened to human beings as well.

Therefore, when one looked out, the sight was dispersed. To put it simply, humankind's eyes had been affected by the fourth dimension to become something akin to a compound eye. One eye could look multidirectional at one moment in time. This caused the sensation of blindness because the normal indicators found

through sight, like directions, had been completely jumbled up.

It was an indescribable feeling. The only sensation was the spaciousness!

Looking out from one's eyes, the sight was turning in different directions. One could even notice that the interior of the Hope was slowly changing as well. In other words, the cabin inside the ship was twisting and turning. No, it was not accurate to call it that, it was twisting and turning only if one viewed it from the perspective of a third dimension dwelling organism, but they were in four dimensional space, so this was merely the natural manifestation of the changing of forms in the fourth dimension.

To give a simple example, imagine an apple in a painting. That's an object in the second dimension. Should it turn on its own, then the other dimension normally hidden would appear on the painting. In reality, that dimension had always been there. The only reason it would appear as it was not there was because dimension wasn't something observable in a two dimensional painting.

Similarly for creatures in a three dimensional space, the organs, muscle, blood vessels, bones, and the like were unobservable because they were "inside". This was the limitation of the three dimensional space.

However, when they moved into the fourth dimension, an indescribable space axis appeared. This space axis didn't have a directional left, right, up, down, but crossed through all senses of direction, including inside and outside. Just like how the linear movement of a point caused the creation of line (first dimension), the movement of a line caused a plane (two dimensional), the movement of a plane caused the sense of dimension (third dimension), when the dimension moved, a new space axis that parsed through all the dimensions in normal three dimensional space was born and the creation of this new space axis led to the existence of the fourth dimension!

Currently, humankind was like the object moving out from the painting into a three dimensional space. Due to the change in dimension, it caused a sense of vertigo on the faculty of sight, hearing, touch, and even the Homo Evolutis' powers. This was something natural, and the reason behind the four dimensional blindness.

To put it even simpler... the human brain could not keep up with the sudden increase in observable information. To protect the consciousness, it befuddled the mind to limit the intake of random information.

This happened to every human being and alien in the Hope, including the Homo Evolutis... No, there seemed to be an exception. Granted their numbers was small, this group of people had truly overcome the information overload caused by the change into fourth dimension and managed to record everything in sight.

They were the Seekers!

The Seekers were the second most suitable Homo Evolutis in combat, ranking just behind the Perceptors. They were normally used for long-distance support. Other than that, they could also be considered the most non-favored among the Homo Evolutis. This was because their combat prowess was not as good as the Perceptors, they couldn't sense danger, couldn't help with technology, didn't have the Thinker's power, or even access to the soul web. In short, the Seekers were considered the most useless among all the Homo Evolutis.

This was because the biggest use for Seekers was their ability to see everything clearly. However, this could be easily replaced by surveillance devices, and this was merely the surveillance device of a level 2 space civilization. What if the space civilization was a level 3 or level 4 space civilization? Then the Seeker's power could be said to be completely useless.

However, at this moment, all of the Seekers realized that they

had a natural adaptation to the changes in the fourth dimension. They were naturally familiar with the new space axis and understood how it operated instinctually. To put it simply, the Seekers felt like they were already fourth dimension dwellers...

At the same time, in the room that housed the central mainframe, Yao Yuan's group stood around the closed door that led to the room that held the secret UFO. The group also felt four dimensional blindness as the Hope's entered the green light. If not for ZERO's masterful handling of the ship's anti-gravity system, everyone would have been pinned to the spot. It was also the reason why there wasn't chaos among the citizens of the Hope, at least the gravity wasn't changed abruptly.

Several minutes after the four-dimensional blindness, Yao Yuan, as well as a Seeker who was present in the group, slowly adapted to the experience within the fourth dimension.

The world they saw was completely different from the non-seekers, who had around them an irrational, illogical world that they couldn't make sense of in words or writing. However, for the Seeker and Yao Yuan, they saw something different.

It was a world that was huge, but it could be described as spacious as well. In this small room that sealed the UFO, from Yao Yuan's eyes, this room seemed to morph into a giant, twisting maze with the dimensions layering on top of another; however, the overlapping was strangely harmonious. These dimensions added to a complete entity, like they were supposed to be that way.

From the perspective of the fourth dimension, dimensions were supposed to be fluid. They moved constantly, and this was the single biggest difference between the fourth dimension and the third dimension. Simply put, there was no constant in the fourth dimension, or rather, there was no constant point of reference that could be used to determine an object's location like in three dimensional space. For the fourth dimension, an object's location had to be determined through the calculation of a mathematic

algorithm.

That was why it was so dangerous for a creature of the third dimension to enter the fourth dimension, because for them, it was a change from static to extreme movement, like a creature walking into a working blender. Wouldn't that be alarming and dangerous?

However, the most curious thing was that for Yao Yuan, it was as if he could discern the various movements and trajectories in the four dimensional space. Even though it was layers upon layers of dimensions before him, as if operating on instinct, he could pick up the way to go among the different layers. Where was the original ceiling, where were the original doors and exits, where was the UFO located, the information was registered in his mind as if by natural instinct. He took a closer look and realized that the place wasn't as chaotic as he previously perceived. If anything, there was a rush from the new sense of dimensional freedom.

"This way..."

The other person who uttered that statement at the same time as Yao Yuan was the other Seeker. He was Wa Luo, one of the original Black Star Unit members and leader of the eighth Black Star Trooper unit.

Both of them turned to look at each other. Even though what they saw was each other's meat blobs, they could still discern each other's identities. In fact, in their minds, it was the three dimensional human form that was registered. This kind of mental process was faster than the calculating power of a supercomputer, even more powerful than the Hope's low level AI.

"Of course, the Seeker's power... So this is the Seeker's real capability."

Yao Yuan sighed internally. He was remembering Ying, the most powerful Seeker the ship once had. However, this was not the time to process grief. Who knew how long they would last in this fourth dimension? The key point was to see this alien UFO for

themselves!

Yao Yuan told Wa Luo, "You stay and watch over them. I believe they have been afflicted by four dimensional blindness. I'll go check on that UFO." Before waiting for a reply, Yao Yuan went flying down a direction.

Honestly, flying was probably not the correct term. As this was the fourth dimension, there was no exact location or point. Instead of motion, or words used in three dimensional space like walking or flying, it would be more accurate if it was called twisting and turning. In Wa Luo's eyes, Yao Yuan's body turned long, short, wide, and thin as he moved away. Then he completely disappeared from his sight.

Yao Yuan used his instinct to reach another dimension. From here, he could witness the alien UFO directly. His gaze landed on the UFO, and to his surprise...

The UFO was unchanged!

Not only was it not damaged by the change into the fourth dimension, even the form of the UFO itself was unchanged!

Yes, it had maintained its perfectly spherical shape, its three dimensional form!

It maintained a three dimensional form in a four dimensional space!

This was a scene... that could make even high tier space civilizations wet their pants from fear and shock!

# Chapter 392: End of the Green Light!

---

Yao Yuan looked at this spherical UFO with a dazed look on his face. He felt like his brain was overworking on overdrive and there was a dull pain not unlike the sensation he felt when he was overexerting his Homo Evolutis power.

He was inside a four dimensional space and the environment around him was changing accordingly, but on the other hand, this alien UFO had maintained a three dimensional form. This was a curious feeling. Yao Yuan wasn't a scientist; even though he did spend most of his days reading scientist reports so that he could have a better handle over the development of the Academy, he didn't have the scientific knowledge to explain and understand the incongruity of this alien UFO.

However, he at least understood one thing because it had been confirmed by the influential scientists from the Academy and Blue 6, the heir to a level 3 space civilization. It was the fact that any three dimensional object or even energy would be extremely fragile in the fourth dimension. This included neutron stars and even black hole matter, they would be "fourth dimensional-ized". This change could be seen from appearance alone. For example, a human being was twisted beyond recognition and this went to show the malleability of any three dimensional object in the fourth dimension.

However, this alien UFO... Even though there was no microscope, Yao Yuan could confirm even in this four dimensional space that its surface was clean as a whistle, just like how it was in a three dimensional space. In fact, Yao Yuan believed that this UFO could survive any attack without the need for any shield...

"This is indeed the creation of a god tier space civilization, but it is currently impossible to tell... whether leaving it on the Hope is a tragedy or a blessing..."



Yao Yuan sighed under his breath. He thought he could use this opportunity to investigate this UFO, but it was to no avail. However, this did confirm Yao Yuan's suspicion that this alien UFO probably did come from a high tier space civilization like level 8 or 9 or even... as ZERO claimed, a god-tier space civilization!

In spite of that, the higher the level of the civilization that created this UFO, the more afraid Yao Yuan felt. If this UFO came from a level 3, 4, 5, or even 6 space civilization, humanity would need at most several thousand years to catch up. Eventually, they would be able to open this UFO and gain its technology. In other words, this UFO was like a carry-on ruin, incredibly convenient.

However, the technological level of this UFO was too high, so much so that humanity wouldn't be able to unveil its secrets in the foreseeable future. This was the creation of a god-tier space civilization that they couldn't even fathom. After all, in the endlessness of space, only one over several million space civilizations could evolve to become a high tier space civilization, and a god-tier space civilization wasn't called god-tier for nothing... they perhaps had already left this common cosmos shared by the normal space civilizations. That was a technological level that was so far beyond human comprehension that it could only be described in terms of magic, miracle, or myth.

But... was that something humanity could strive for? Even though humanity had an impossible number of cosmic adapters and Yao Yuan, the Immortal... could humanity really become a high tier space civilization? Even if humanity was given the time to cultivate for several tens of thousand years, as long as the law of preservation of life was still a thing, there wasn't a 100 percent chance that humanity could eventually reach the stage of a high tier space civilization. After all, there were simply too many hidden dangers in space; one careless step and humanity could be vaporized...

In other words, an incredibly tempting product of a god-tier

space civilization had fallen into humanity's hands, but they could do nothing about it. Could this... really be counted as a type of good luck? Or it was something that would cause humanity's destruction in the future?

While standing there, many thoughts were drifting through Yao Yuan's mind. In fact, the thought to abandon this UFO in the green light even appeared in his mind. However, after considering all the pros and cons, like the inherent value of the UFO, the possibility of ZERO leaving this UFO, and whether ZERO, who had escaped the UFO, still retained her powers like controlling space warp...

Lastly... If ZERO couldn't leave the UFO and he abandoned the UFO, would ZERO use the UFO to attack the Hope? Needless to say, that was a battle that the Hope couldn't win...

In conclusion, there were simply too many considerations, causing the normally decisive Yao Yuan to come to a standstill...

Back in the Hope's central command, as the ship entered the green light, everyone suffered from fourth dimensional blindness. Unfortunately, none of the Black Star Troopers stationed there was a Seeker. Most of the people present were either Diviners or scientists, so naturally, everyone became blind and then they were anchored to the floor by ZERO through the control of the ship's gravity.

However, as everyone had been briefed about this before, after a contained panic, everyone became calm, "watching" the changes around them. It was like a world seen through a kaleidoscope, and the entire ship was now taken over by an "AI".

Of everyone present, Guang Zhen was the most nervous because he was one of the handful who knew the truth that it was not the Hope's AI that was controlling the ship. If it was the AI behind all this, he would be a lot more relaxed because the AI was a human creation, meaning it was limited by human algorithms. Until it reached the stage of a mid-level AI, it wouldn't betray humanity.

It was ZERO, the creation of an unknown space civilization, who was controlling the Hope. At the very least, it was a high level AI. There was no telling what kind of tricks it could pull. If it harbored any mal-intention towards humanity, this would be the perfect opportunity to ruin humanity, so how could Guang Zhen be relaxed?

Suddenly, a 3D image appeared before Guang Zhen's eyes. Weirdly enough, even though they were in the fourth dimension, he could see this image clearly like they were directly materializing in his brain in 3D form.

On it was written a sentence. "Beginning countdown to leaving the fourth dimension: 2 hours 42 minutes 51 seconds..."

The timer kept ticking down. After the initial shock, Guang Zhen soon understood that this was the calculation done by ZERO, and it had used some kind of unknown method to allow him see a three dimensional image in the fourth dimension. This did make him relaxed for quite a bit. Since this ZERO hadn't killed humanity at the first given notice and had even provided them with a timer, then it probably didn't mean humanity any harm...

On the other hand, this timer was the only thing ZERO gave. There was no question, answer, or any other comments. Of course, in his current state, Guang Zhen couldn't communicate with ZERO even if he wanted to. Since Guang Zhen had shown great suspicion against ZERO, the "AI" was merely responding in kind. Furthermore, Guang Zhen was neither Yao Yuan nor Xiao Niao, so ZERO was completely uninterested in him. If not for the fact that Yao Yuan had told ZERO that Guang Zhen would be taking over the captain's duty during their time in the green light, she wouldn't even have given him the timer.

Regardless, in a state of anxiety and silence, the completely warped Hope continued to travel in this four dimensional space. In fact, they had ZERO to thank for her aid, or else the Hope wouldn't have been able to enter the space without suffering any deaths or

damage.

As time passed, the Hope passed through many layers of dimensions and crossed large, unimaginable distances, and finally, when the timer ended, everyone saw a flash in front of their eyes before everything suddenly became clear again. At the same time, everyone discovered they had regained the freedom of mobility. As they slowly adapted to the change, everyone patted their bodies from head to toe. It felt like normal human bodies to the touch, there was nothing missing or out of place. It looked like... the Hope had successfully passed through the green light.

The surrounding space returned to the sight of a normal cosmos; however, most of the people on the Hope were still in the state of four dimensional blindness. The sole exceptions were the few Seekers. They headed towards central command on instinct. Yao Yuan, who found himself in the central mainframe room, ordered Wa Luo to look after the small group as he too moved towards central command.

This was the Hope's most vulnerable moment as about 99 percent of the people on the Hope were blind and they would remain blind for at least 2 to 3 days. The small number of Seekers could barely take care of the blind people, much less control the ship. However, there were many things waiting to be done, including a quick surveillance of this space within the layer of green light...

As Yao Yuan rushed towards central command, he passed a corridor that looked out into space, and there...

He saw it! Not far away from the Hope, a giant tree was extending its branches, trunks, leaves, and roots into the emptiness of space. This tree was several hundred kilometers tall. It was an unimaginably big and tall...

Tree growing in space!

# Chapter 393: High Tier Genetic-based Space Civilization

---

It had been five days since the Hope passed the green light and stopped at this part of space. Gradually, more people recovered from four dimensional blindness. The first of them were none other than the Homo Evolutis, followed by those gifted in intelligence and wisdom. Currently, around 60 percent of the Hope had recovered from blindness, so, generally speaking, the Hope could run normally again.

The initial one or two days of these five days were the worst. After all, other than the small number of Seekers, most of the Hope was in a state of blindness. A normal individual was unable to see anything, making everyday chores like eating and using the toilet nigh impossible. The awkwardness caused by the differences in gender aside, the Hope's Seekers weren't numerous enough to be able to take care of the several ten thousand people on the Hope.

The asset that shone the brightest then was the Hope's AI, the one created by humanity, and not ZERO. ZERO seemed to have disappeared as if to avoid suspicion the moment they left the fourth dimension. No matter how hard Yao Yuan called for her, she was nowhere to be seen.

The human AI naturally returned to its post and continued to control the Hope. At this crucial time, Yao Yuan had dropped his reservations regarding the AI and ordered the AI to control all the service robots on the Hope to help its citizens. The robots were allocated to different areas, and even though there might've been a lack of human touch in their care-taking, at least the people's basic needs would be taken care of.

With the AI's help, the Hope survived the most difficult period. As the number of individuals who had recovered gradually increased, they took over the robots' jobs. After all, even though

these robots were extremely helpful and obedient, Yao Yuan's heart still chilled every time these robots handled the human citizens of the Hope. From his conversation with Blue 6 about the rise and fall of space civilizations, one of the common reasons for the collapse of space civilizations had to do with the uprising of the machines. Therefore, since humanity had recovered parts of its manpower, Yao Yuan quickly sealed these robots back into inactivity.

The situation had improved greatly since then. Around 60 percent of the Hope had recovered, and to Yao Yuan's surprise, other than almost all of the Homo Evolutis, which were to be expected, the remaining majority of the 60 percent were senior citizens. With a closer look, most of them were scientists and researchers, and in comparison, the percentage of healthy young men and women was curiously low.

According to the analysis of certain people, this had plenty to do with the fact that four dimensional space was most likely a blurring of information, so as long as one could see through the haze that blurred the information, then the confusion could be easily resolved. This was similar to those abstract paintings. Those who couldn't understand it would see squiggles and lines, while those with an artistic eye would appreciate its true meaning. Perhaps that was the theory behind the application of four dimensional blindness.

As interesting as this was, Yao Yuan did not concern himself over this. Perhaps the Academy could make something out of the study of four dimensional blindness, but it had nothing to do with Yao Yuan. When most of the Academy had recovered, Yao Yuan called them for a meeting. The agenda was none other than the giant space tree visible outside of the Hope.

For most who had just recovered from four dimensional blindness, the first thing they did after witnessing the giant tree in space was not question their sanity but rub their eyes

continuously, afraid that the blindness from before had created an illusion in their minds. When they realized that they weren't hallucinating, most of them took an involuntary deep breath and stared at the tree with their mouths gaping wide.

With the aid of the surveillance devices, the accurate height of this space tree was 1,460 plus kilometers, almost one-tenth the size of Earth. After all, Earth's diameter was only 12,000 and the moon was even smaller, at around 3,000 kilometers. Therefore, even though 1,460 kilometers might sound small on paper, it would take a domestic plane 2 hours to travel a distance that far, but for something that was supposed to grow on a planet and not exist independently in space, this was a verifiably huge tree.

This tree was almost as big as certain space stations or moons of certain planets. If it had its own gravity, humans could possibly walk on the surface of its bark without the worry of being tossed into space.

The first question was not how this tree could survive in space but the size itself. The size of this tree had already violated humanity's understanding of biology. The size of the thing was enough to create its own gravity, so how could this tree not crumble beneath its own gravitational pull? What material was it made of? Rocks or metals? Or was it a real, living tree?

Furthermore, where would its energy to grow come from? How did it survive in a vacuum? There were simply too many questions that Yao Yuan needed the Academy's help to answer.

The first thing that they needed to confirm was whether this thing before them was real or not. Perhaps this was simply a mirage. After all, such a huge thing existing in space was against common knowledge. Therefore, before discussing the physicality of its existence, they had to make sure they were dealing with an actual thing.

However, in space, all surveillance devices went both ways. In

other words, when you detected others, others would have detected you as well. Recklessly using surveillance technology in this unknown space? That was a suicidal mission. A space civilization that could produce a fourth dimension shield was definitely a high tier space civilization, and mankind was nothing more than an ant before it. Currently, the other party perhaps had not detected humanity, but if humanity recklessly sent surveillance devices at it, they might attract the ruin's attention, and that could lead to humanity's extinction... Yao Yuan didn't dare to bet on the possibility that the high tier ruin didn't have an AI residing within it.

Therefore, the Academy's request for surveillance had been promptly denied. For now, Yao Yuan merely wished for them to explain the possibility of this tree existing in space.

Naturally, the scientists were disappointed, but they understood Yao Yuan's hesitation. So they followed Yao Yuan's advice and focused on discussing the possibility of such a big tree existing in space. To Yao Yuan's consternation, a large majority of the Academy believed that this was not an illusion, this tree was probably an actual plant in space.

In fact, after experiencing the fourth dimension, these human scientists had not only gained much valuable information about the fourth dimension, their horizons had also been widened. Their worldview had been widened and broken beyond the limitation of human knowledge, and they dared to use perspective beyond the confines of human science to view and understand the various illogical phenomenon in space.

"Based on all the known information, living things, be it animal or plant, have the possibility of existing in space. For example, the alien plant or the zerg race. These species survive in space using their own bodies, and they can even procreate in space just fine..."

In the meeting room, the head scientist of the biology committee, Yuan Pin, was giving his explanation to the top leaders of the



Hope. "I believe everyone here knows a thing or two about the relationship between human technology and the natural world. Most of our technological advances are inspired by the things that exist in nature, the obvious example being sonar radar and bats. Even submarines, airplanes, these are all related to the majesty of the natural world. So what I mean to say is fairly simple: the natural world is more wondrous than you can imagine. With enough time or technology to supplement it, life itself can replace the functionality of many machineries. For example, initiating nuclear fission within living cells to support an electromagnetic shield or plasma shield. These things are definitely possible as long as said creature has the necessary organs and biological make-up to mimic the functionality of the machines it was intended to replace."

That was the key!

Most of the people on the Hope were elites. In fact, the current layer of the Hope's top officials, be it Yao Yuan and the Black Star Unit or Homo Evolutis like Ren Tao and Xiao Niao or the elites saved from the Noah One, they were all men among men. In terms of the depth of their knowledge and the flexibility of their thought, they were veritable geniuses. With a nudge in the right direction by Yuan Pin, they understood the key of the situation instantly.

Blue 6 had roughly mentioned this before, that when a space civilization entered the middle tier or going beyond the fourth level, due to the law of conservation of life, all space civilizations had to choose a particular scientific field to focus on. They couldn't research everything like low tier space civilizations did anymore. Therefore, there would be specialized space civilizations, like mechanical space civilizations, genetic space civilizations, and cosmic energy space civilizations. This was one of the natural laws of the cosmos.

If one looked at it from this perspective, then this impossibly large tree could be explained easily...

This was possibly the product of a high tier genetic-based space civilization, and this tree was quite possibly a living mothership!

# Chapter 394: Summon!

---

Understanding the giant tree didn't mean that humanity had a way to deal with it. It was the same problem as before, humanity was too weak. A level 2 space civilization at its peak facing up against a high tier space civilization with a four dimensional shield was like a unicellular organism facing off against humanity with nuclear weapons, the difference couldn't have been bigger!

Humanity's current technological level, excluding the Homo Evolutis cheat, was no different from a normal level 2 space civilization's. In fact, its level might be lower than other level 2 space civilization's due to its small fleet size. To counterbalance this, humanity had two secret weapons beyond the standard of low level space civilizations: the Gravity Cannon and the alien plant.

However, in this situation, the Gravity Cannon was practically harmless. After all, a space civilization that had mastered the four dimensional shield definitely would have access to the anti-gravity system. In that case, the power of the Gravity Cannon would be neutralized. Even if they didn't have the anti-gravity system, the essentially endless fourth dimension could be used to negate the effect of the Gravity Cannon just fine.

On the other hand, the alien plant that could consume anything, including energy... it was a mystery whether it could pose any harm to the giant tree. After all, this giant tree definitely came from a high tier space civilization, and the technological level of this alien plant... was unknown. The difference in technological advancement decided many things in space. Furthermore, humanity only had one chance to strike against such a high tier space civilization, so if the alien plant failed to consume anything, then humanity could be considered done for. Naturally, Yao Yuan didn't dare to take such a huge risk...

Therefore, ever since leaving the fourth dimension, the Hope had spent almost a month idling in space, it had also circled around the

giant tree several times. Every inch of this space was scanned and checked. This area that was surrounded by the green light was about as big as the distance between the sun and Jupiter. Other than the giant tree, there was nothing else worth noting occupying the empty space.

However, this place was indeed the coordinates for the star path taken from the alien merchant, Blue 6 and the ruined spaceships they stumbled across along the way. Even though neither of them described in details what a star path was, they did share a common description, one would know the identity of a star path entrance the moment one laid one's eyes on it.

Alas, humankind had seen nothing other than the giant tree here, definitely nothing that could be taken as the entrance to a star path.

With no other option, Yao Yuan's group had to go to ZERO for help, hoping that they could get more information on the star path from her, but honestly, Yao Yuan didn't think ZERO would even show up.

To his surprise, not only did ZERO answer their summons, she also gave them some useful information about the star path.

"The so-called star paths are not naturally occurring phenomenon, yet they aren't fully an alien creation either. Actually, your high end technology has touched upon the knowledge of this level briefly. Yes, I'm talking about the basic particle in quantum physics. If you cut a quartz into two and placed them each at two ends of the universe, when you touch one, the other will react the same way. This reaction crosses the limitations of space and time... Star paths work on a similar basis. Adjacent galaxies have this kind of relation, and this relation has been there since the creation of the universe. Even though the cosmos has grown over the past several billion years, thus causing such relations to get weaker, these relations won't be broken unless the universe has reached its end. Utilizing star paths is the

most common mode of transportation for god tier space civilizations, a method of travelling that is beyond even space warp... in fact, star paths can be considered the incomplete version of this perfect method of travel.

"After a civilization becomes god-tier, they will naturally use this method to travel between the many corners of the universe, and as long as they use this to travel between galaxies, then there will be a star path. To put it simply, god-tier space civilizations are like trucks that have travelled across grasslands that are untrodden. Due to the size of the truck, it created a trail as a result of travelling. The other smaller trucks thus can use this trail to travel between galaxies easily. Therefore, star paths are not fully natural occurrences, but they are not alien creations either.

"Therefore, the majesty of the star path lies in the fact that it utilizes the fifth dimension. One wouldn't be able to tell it exists from afar and from outside; however, when one gets closer, the star path is like an unimaginably large river of light, it is impossible to miss..."

That was the end of the conversation with ZERO. She disappeared right after. However, Yao Yuan's group was still pleasantly surprised. After all, they had gained a new understanding of the star path and also understood its inherent problem.

To be honest, before this, even though they had gained a lot of information about the star path from many alien sources, Yao Yuan's group still had reservations about using it. After all, all of the information only mentioned the star path in passing; there was no concrete answer to questions like how it looked, who created it, what was the theory behind its ability to connect the impossible distance between two galaxies. This was a super distance that even wormhole and star gate were unable to pass, but a star path... managed to traverse this large distance in a short amount of time. This was something even space warp was unable to do.

After getting a concrete answer from ZERO, one that was believable based on ZERO's actions so far, the validity of the star path was proven. However, it left the Hope with another question: where was this star path...

"If the coordinates can be believed, then based on what ZERO said, the star path's entrance is quite possibly... inside this giant tree!"

In a whole new round of discussion, Xiao Niao gave the first hypothesis that came into his mind using his Thinker power. "First, I wish for everyone to really think about it. When we came across the junkyard civilization not long after we left Earth, it was the first time we stumbled across alien information, and we gained the Gaussian technology. It was the beginning of our space adventures. Can you still remember that? The process of the civilization being destroyed..."

Everyone present narrowed their eyes. Not to mention the officials who had been on the Hope since the very beginning, even the people who later joined the Hope from the Noah One had seen the footage of the junkyard civilization's destruction. They were reminded of how the several hundred million alien citizens were sucked into the liquid spaceship. Honestly, there was no one that did not feel fear watching that, because... that would've also been humanity's ending if they had stumbled across that liquid spaceship.

Xiao Niao continued after his reminder, "The junkyard civilization had how large a population at the time? At least several hundred million, right? However, they were all sucked into the small, liquid-state spaceship. This was supposed to be something physically impossible, so the liquid spaceship must've been equipped with some kind of space technology. It looked so small on the surface, but it was probably bigger than a Shelter inside. That spaceship probably belonged to a space civilization of similar level or maybe lower than this giant tree. So it is impossible that this

giant tree doesn't have a space-folding technology inside it..."

Yao Yuan took over the stage at this point. "In other words, the star path could be hidden inside this giant tree? The only way we can get to the star path is to enter the ruin of this high tier space civilization?"

Everyone was silent. Obviously, they had all come to this conclusion after some contemplation, but this conclusion simply didn't align with the Hope's zeitgeist.

In reality, even among the Hope's top officials, they were split into various philosophies. One of them was in support of entering the giant tree. It would be best if humanity could end up with some high tier space technology. Of course, even grabbing a few products was already more than good enough. Even if they ended up with nothing, as long as they could get to the star path, then it was still acceptable. However, the number of officials in support of this idea was too small. After all, this was not a water park, this was the ruin of a high tier space civilization. One wrong move and humanity would be vaporized inside it. Therefore, only a single digit percentage of top officials was in support of this idea.

The rest of them were split into two main camps. One wished to remain still to conduct more analysis. These were those who were unwilling to give up on the ruin but worried about the possible risk. This was about 30 percent of the total, including most of the Homo Evolutis and even a few of the Black Star Unit members.

The rest, including Yao Yuan and Guang Zhen, voted to leave this star path after close consideration. After all, there had to be more than one star path. This galaxy was adjacent to about ten other galaxies, so there had to be other options they could try.

Just as the discussion and argument continued among the Hope's top officials, suddenly, on the 37th day after the Hope had passed through the green light...

All the devices on the Hope died! Thankfully, the life support,

anti-gravity, and mobility systems were unharmed, but the Hope... started to move on its own towards the giant tree!



# Chapter 395: Helpless!

---

This caused the Hope to submerge into complete chaos!

Indeed, humanity was still too fragile. The Hope was the last remaining survivor of the human race, so losing it meant the extinction of humanity. That was the reality of the situation. Even though humanity was on the brink of becoming a level 3 space civilization, on the issue of survivability alone, humanity was even worse than a level 1 space civilization.

Because of this, when the Hope was taken over, those who knew the truth had their faces blanched immediately, including Yao Yuan.

He was not afraid of death, yes, that was the truth. Granted, given the choice, he would prefer to live, but he was not afraid of death. If he was, he wouldn't have become a member of the Black Star Unit and later its captain.

However, he was greatly afraid of leading humanity to extinction. Call it responsibility, mission, or anything you want, but he had long since taken the people on the Hope as the purpose of his life. They were like his family, so when this happened, he was truly petrified.

During the short period the Hope was taken over, those who knew the truth were rendered speechless from shock and fear. None knew what to do, because this was too sudden. The entire ship was taken over, this was a crisis they had not experienced before ever since humanity left Earth!

"Do not panic! Activate AI self-analysis immediately! Check all the currently still controllable systems and devices on the Hope. Also, disconnect the auto self-destruct sequence and change it to manual activation only... Also, disconnect the auto activation for all weapons beyond S-grade."

Yao Yuan took a deep breath and gave his orders while the rest was still in a state of panic. As his voice resonated through central command, it was as if the people there had found an anchor, and they moved to oblige. At the same time, Guang Zhen, who happened to be in central command to discuss the issue of staying or leaving with Yao Yuan, also yelled agitatedly, "I'll go summon all the Defense Unit soldiers and Black Star Troopers! F\*ck, we might die soon, but we're not going down without a fight!"

Before waiting for Yao Yuan to respond, Guang Zhen dashed out of central command.

On the other hand, Yao Yuan didn't intend to stop Guang Zhen. After all, this might be the crisis that ended the Hope, and that was one of the better options, because they might get captured and reared as animals or even treated as experimental subjects... If that really happened, the soldiers would be humanity's last line of defence, not for the sake of survival but for the ability to die with dignity.

Thinking about this, Yao Yuan added, "Send all the information about the Hope's still operational devices, programs, and weapons to Room 12 in Area A. Then contact all the government officials over the status of vice minister to Room 12. Get all the scientists and related Defense Unit majors, unit captains, and vice captains of the Black Star Troopers to gather there in 10 minutes as well. Failure to be present will be a violation of martial law!"

After that, Yao Yuan dashed out of central command. However, he didn't head towards Room 12 immediately but started sending messages through the mini watch-type computer on his wrist. His computer wasn't connected to any IP. In fact, from an outsider's perspective, he looked like he was merely leaving behind some messages on his electronic notepad, only a few people knew he was actually contacting ZERO.

For some reason, ever since there was a direct channel of communication between Yao Yuan and ZERO, despite their low

amount of communication, whenever Yao Yuan sought ZERO out for questions, ZERO would abide by his demands and would appear at the first notice. However, this time, ZERO did not show herself. She was still nowhere to be seen, even when Yao Yuan had reached Room 12.

Yao Yuan's expression darkened. He didn't know whether this meant that ZERO had completely abandoned humanity or that the level of this ruin was so high that she had gone into hiding for the sake of her own safety. Either way, Yao Yuan did not feel good about their prospects.

Yao Yuan tried his best to exhibit a calm expression even though his heart was shaking. He knew he needed a paragon of serenity to aid as the whole ship was dependant on him. If he lost his footing, the whole ship would go down with him. As more people arrived at the scene, more people learned about the truth, but the situation was still rather contained.

This was the influence of Yao Yuan's reputation. Ever since humanity left Earth, Yao Yuan had been there every step of the way until now, when they were about to break through to become a level 3 space civilization. Every time the Hope faced any dangerous threat, or during any social reform, Yao Yuan was still hailed as the savior in everyone's hearts. In other words, as long as Yao Yuan stood strong, there was still hope for humanity, and Yao Yuan used this influence he had on the Hope to maintain the order within the secret meeting room.

In the designated 10 minutes, everyone had arrived. The last to arrive was Guang Zhen, who had brought along with him all of the Defense Unit majors and Black Star Trooper captains and vice captains. Yao Yuan did not plan to hide the reality from any of them, so he immediately relayed to them the Hope's situation.

At the same time, Yao Yuan opened the 3D computer in the room and told everyone, "This is the result of the AI's self-analysis. Unfortunately, other than internal life support, the anti-gravity

system, and all related systems, the rest of the Hope is beyond our control. Of course, we planned for this contingency when we first designed the AI, so I believe that most of us here know about the 'last resort' plan. We have switched the Gravity Cannon, the Genesis, and the two Planet Annihilating Cannons back to manual operation, and... the self-destruct sequence is also now manually operable."

Everyone was silent while listening to Yao Yuan. Suddenly, Ren Tao chimed in, "How about the Hope's flight speed? How far are we from the ruin? Can we change the speed or direction of the ship?"

Yao Yuan nodded. "That is why I've gathered every one of you here. The Hope's current speed is rather slow, about 30 percent of the Hope's maximum speed. If the speed is maintained at this level, we will reach the ruin in about 8 to 9 days... if the speed of the ship doesn't change."

Ren Tao stopped asking question after that. He merely sat there in silence, thinking to himself. Xiao Niao though continued, "Then is it possible for us to build any propellers in the mean time? If the Hope is only moving at 30 percent speed, then we can build new propellers to change the direction. No, wait... I've just answered myself, that won't work."

Guang Zhen, who was beside him, frowned and asked, "Why won't it work? I feel like it's a sound plan. According to our current productivity, with the help of the nanobots, we can build a new propeller system for the Hope in less than 2 days, much less 8 days. This is a good plan, so why wouldn't it work?"

Not only Guang Zhen, others in the room had the same question as well. Yao Yuan had Xiao Niao explain himself, which he gladly did. After all, he was not Ren Tao, who was too lazy to even open his mouth. "It all comes back to one speculation, and that is whether this ruin will even allow us to leave... In fact, when I found out that the Hope was taken over today, and I'm sure the

Chancellor has thought of this as well, why wasn't the Hope taken over yesterday, or tomorrow, but today? If this is not a coincidence, there has to be something unusual that we did today to make the ruin control the Hope.

"However, today was like any other day on the Hope, so what was the difference? The only difference I can think of is that today we were discussing the possibility of leaving. In other words, when we decided to 'leave', the Hope was taken over. In fact, don't you think that we're moving simply too slow towards the ruin? Instead of rushing us towards it, this ruin seems to be giving us ample time to prepare before we enter it. If we continue to talk about 'leaving', 'changing our course', or 'disruption' in this period of time, I have no clue what the ruin will do as a response."

After he gave his reasoning, many in the room started to chew on it. Then they started to break out in cold sweat/ If he was right, then wasn't this ruin incredibly scary? After all, for the sake of safety, the Hope had been releasing the creator's particle ever since they arrived. In other words, according to space knowledge, no signal was supposed to reach the Hope either to listen in or to control it, but the reality was, the ruin had controlled the Hope... and that was under the condition that it had been listening in on their decision-making.

This situation... defied logical explanation!

# Chapter 396: Relic Type Ruin!

---

The discussion didn't reach any conclusion that day. After all, humanity was still too weak, they simply couldn't understand the theory behind the action of this ruin that was way beyond humankind's technological level.

This led to a sense of sinking despair, one that was laced with frustration. After all... it had almost 20 years since humankind had ventured into space. In the fast advancement of these 20 years, they still hadn't been able to break through to a higher level... that was truly a great blow to the human confidence.

Of course, if this kind of emotion was revealed to other space civilizations or even Blue 6, humanity would probably be slapped on the face for such frivolous thoughts.

After all, this was not some RPG game where experience could be gained easily through slaughtering enemies! This was the level of a civilization as a whole, a living organization involving several million, even billion people!

From the stone age to the copper age, from the copper age to the metal age, from the metal age to the gunpowder age, then to steam power, electrical power, and so on and so forth, every advancement in these technological eras required plenty of human energy, materials, time, and even exhaustion of population to complete. It was the same for space civilizations. Due to the lack of a stable source of soul, many space civilizations ended their lives at the same level as they started, level 1 or 2. Every level 3 space civilizations had only reached that point after millennium of cultivation and hard work. In this long and arduous process, many had fallen along the wayside. In fact, according to the alien information, only 1 around 1,000,000 level 2 space civilizations would become level 3 space civilizations. The fact that humanity had done all that in just under 2 decades was crazy enough that any alien civilization who heard wind of that would probably cough

out blood from disbelief and anger.

Regardless, humanity was still too weak. Following the level demarcation of a space civilization's level, the high tier space civilization was in a different league altogether compared to low tier space civilizations; it was a difference between humans and unicellular organisms. This was not the first time humanity felt so helpless, and this was definitely not going to be the last time either...

If there was still a next time for humanity, that is!

The answer that they were unable to reach during the meeting revealed itself five days later.

The Hope had built three powerful propeller engines to attempt to change the course of the ship. However, as predicted by Xiao Niao, no matter how powerful these three engines were, neither the speed nor direction of the Hope had changed. And not long after these three engines started working, the control over them was lost due to the breaking down of internal parts. It was unknown whether it was caused by short-circuit or external forces.

After that, the Hope continued moving forward using the constant speed down the same direction like the incident with the 3 propeller engines hadn't even happened.

The people on the Hope were out of options because this experiment had verified Xiao Niao's hypothesis. The AI or its equivalent inside this ruin seemed to have noticed the Hope, and since the ruin was so many levels ahead of humanity in terms of technology, there was nothing humankind could do.

"In other words, we are only left with two options?"

After the propeller experiment, Yao Yuan had another meeting with the top officials; however, the meeting had a less than satisfactory result.

Just as Yao Yuan mentioned, humanity was only left with two

choices. One was to activate the self-destruct sequence. It was worth noting that there were two self-destruct sequences on the Hope. Even though both could be activated manually, to prevent high tier space civilizations from controlling them using some kind of electronic overwrite, one of the self-destruct sequences was buried deep within the Hope's internal H-bomb. Activating it required activation of electrical components on the H-bomb. The other was the giant load of explosives inside the department of chemistry. This could only be activated manually. Even if the Hope was covered with creator's particle, it wouldn't lose its efficiency.

This was one of the choices for humanity, to blow up the Hope, and in just a second, humanity would disappear without much suffering as if the human race hadn't even existed in the cosmos. At least this way, humanity wouldn't be enslaved by other space races, they wouldn't be kept as experimental lab rats, food sources, or slaves.

Of course, this was an option that wouldn't be considered until it was the only option left.

The second option was simple, which was to enter the ruin and fight their way out!

"Move! All the Black Star Troopers move out now! Other than Whisperers and Animas, all the other Black Star Troopers have to move! Put on your space armors, grab your weapons, and follow me! We will be moving out when necessary!"

Yao Yuan called for the gathering of all the Black Star Troopers the afternoon the propellers failed. All of the Black Star Troopers, no matter whether they were on leave, still in training, or on a mission, were asked to gather at the training field. Yao Yuan, the leader of the Black Star Troopers, left the everyday training of the troopers to Guang Zhen due to his busy schedule, so this was one of those rare moments where Yao Yuan addressed his soldiers directly.



Yao Yuan's words were dripping with menace. As Ebon, who stood beside him, understood it, his words could be translated into, "Brothers and sisters, this is our last stand, let's chop down some aliens before we die."

Of course, Yao Yuan did mean that underneath all the official language. However, he was the leader of humanity, so he couldn't just rush in guns blazing. Even though humanity was at its wit's end, he still had his own plan.

As an All-Rounder, Yao Yuan had access to an incomplete Thinker's power. At the same time, he had a personal strategist group of his own that consisted of two full-fledged Thinkers. In the next few days, as the Hope drifted towards the giant tree, Yao Yuan started to analyze everything about this giant tree with his trusted advisors.

First, it was already confirmed that this giant tree was indeed a ruin and not a high tier space civilization in disguise. After all, due to the difference in technology, there was literally no reason for this space civilization to disguise itself. The space civilization behind this giant tree was much more powerful than all the space civilizations Yao Yuan had seen enter the green light, including the level 4 and 5 space civilizations. If the giant tree's owner race was lacking in soul, they could have ransacked and pillaged solar systems whenever they wished, they didn't need to set up a trap like this and wait for people to come.

Therefore, this giant tree was indubitably a ruin. From the space rumors given by Blue 6, ruins were delineated into different types as well. Of course, most of them were the ownerless type, where defense was done by the AI or mechanical system that remained. There were also the trap types. This kind of ruin was mostly left behind by the losing party of a space war. The civilization was on the brink of destruction, but the main population hadn't begun racial senescence yet. In other words, they had high intelligence that was fuelled with resentment and anger. Before complete

destruction, they would leave behind various traps just to spite the other space civilizations who stumbled across their ruin in the future.

Other than that, there was also the supply type, normally left behind by middle to high tier space merchants who came into some sort of tragedy in their travels. Then there was the puzzle type, a creation of high tier space civilizations to entertain themselves because they were bored. One could get the reward left behind by the space civilization after solving the puzzle. The last was the relic type ruin, and the giant tree was one such example.

The cosmos was filled with all kinds of danger. Even high tier space civilizations didn't dare to say they would survive forever, that was a privilege limited to god tier space civilization only. Therefore, it was entirely possible for these high tier space civilizations to get destroyed as well. However, since they were high tier space civilizations, they were definitely unwilling to allow their glorious history disappear from space just like that.

The history of a high tier space civilization normally stretched for several million years, and there was no two that was similar. This was because no one knew whether they had selected the correct path to focus on. Even a level 9 space civilization didn't dare to claim that, because... that was a privilege for a god-tier space civilization, and that was the goal for all space civilizations. Due to the limitation of soul, after a space civilization reached the middle tier, it had to select a single aspect to focus on, and none of the space civilizations knew whether their choice would bring them towards becoming a god tier space civilization or not.

Therefore, even if it was a dying message, before the destruction of a high tier space civilization, they would leave behind a relic type ruin to wait for a space civilization with high potential. Using the technology left behind by the high tier space civilization, the space civilization with potential could evolve to become a god tier space civilization... when that happened, maybe the civilization

might revive the high tier space civilization as an appreciation for its earlier contribution. This was entirely possible as this was the power of a god tier space civilization!

And this type of ruin that went actively in search of visitors fit the mold of a relic type ruin most perfectly!

# Chapter 397: Inside the Ruin!

---

Since it was a relic type ruin, then it meant that humanity had a chance of capturing the ruin as well... However, that chance was small, considering the other space civilizations humanity had to fight for it.

If they lost... well, that was dependant on whether the ruin's owner was kind or cruel. Either the losers would be allowed to leave safely or they would all become sacrifices for the winner. It would make sense for it to be the latter, as the lives of several billion space civilizations would be decimated to be turned into soul for the victor, allowing the victor to reach its full potential. This combined with the reward provided by the relic type ruin would allow the victor to become a high tier space civilization as soon as possible!

Therefore, humanity shouldn't bank on other people's kindness. There was only thing for humanity to do, which was to survive no matter what and try its best to be the final victor!

Even though the hope of that was incredibly small...

"Units 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, 11, and 15, unit captains, please bring your troop members to area C to arm yourselves..."

The units that were named followed their captains happily as they left the training field. In comparison, those units who weren't named had glum faces. After all, this batch of equipment was the best the Hope could offer. Since the Hope was going to enter the ruin tomorrow, this batch was all the equipment the Workshop could muster up given the supplies and time constraint. Therefore, they would be given only to the few elite Black Star Trooper units, the rest of them would be using old equipment.

Guang Zhen and Yao Yuan were in a room just off of the training field, they were discussing this new batch of weapons.

"Actually..." Yao Yuan was hesitant, but he eventually voiced his concern. "It is quite a bit of waste for us to build this equipment. After all, these are untested prototypes. Plus, we are heading into the territory of a level 3 space civilization soon, so these weapons and armors from the peak of a level 2 space civilization are a bit outdated..."

Guang Zhen though shook his head and said, "Ol' Yao, it's not that I want to mock you, but you've been more and more like a woman lately, fussy about such details. I know managing a whole civilization isn't easy, millions of mouths all wanted to get something from you. If we run low on energy or supplies, the whole ship might head towards chaos... I know that, but Ol' Yao, this is more important than all that. What if the inside of the ruin is different from what we predicted? We cannot be over-prepared..."

Yao Yuan sighed slightly and didn't say anything else. After all, it was well within Guang Zhen's jurisdiction to order the upgrade of equipment for either the Black Star Troopers or the Defense Unit. As long as it was not related to massive weapons like the Genesis, then Guang Zhen, as the vice-captain of the Hope, commander of the Defense Unit, and vice general of Black Star Troopers, could give this order. As long as it was not out of line, even Yao Yuan wouldn't have been able to intervene.

The two of them moved on to other topics. After all, the Hope still had enough supplies left to support this batch of equipment upgrades. The real concern was the entry into the ruin. Currently, the Hope was so close to the giant tree that the normal civilians on the Hope could identify the grains on its bark and leaves. Combat could be ignited at any moment.

And then... nothing happened. The Hope entered the ruin without much fanfare. However, it was a completely different view inside the ruin!

On the second day, the Hope was incredibly close to the giant

tree's surface and the distance between them was slowly decreasing. In fact, a normal civilian could now see the patterns on the bark clearly. The Hope was so close to the giant tree that the bark itself felt like a piece of land made entirely out of wood.

"1,137 kilometers away from the giant tree, 1,127 kilometres, 1,117 kilometres, 1,107 kilometres... the speed remains unchanged!"

Everyone waited with bated breath inside central command. The workers waited quietly, posted at their designated stations. According to the surveillance, the Hope had maintained the same speed ever since it had been taken over. If the ship didn't slow down soon, the Hope would crash land onto the surface of the giant tree itself.

However, this was nothing to worry about, because before the Hope was taken over, the Hope's surveillance device was already directed at the giant tree's surface to discern how other alien civilizations entered the ruin. When they were close enough to the giant tree, a hole would suddenly open on the surface to suck them in. There was no accident of collisions.

The real concern was everything inside the ruin, that was the real test.

Yao Yuan maintained an expression devoid of emotion as he listened to the data provided by the workers. His eyes were glued to the 3D image beside him that showed the current progress of armed units on the Hope and the situation of the civilians going into hiding.

Discounting the fear and anxiety of the civilians, the Hope's workers and armed units were relatively calm as the ship slowly headed towards the giant tree. When the Hope was less than 100 meters away from the surface of the tree, a bottomless pit appeared right underneath the Hope, waiting for the ship to fall into it.

The Hope's surveillance devices had started working when the hole opened itself on the surface of the tree, but unfortunately,

they had no way of telling what was inside it. Any light or electronic signal directed at the hole were pulled into it, like it was a black hole.

Yao Yuan looked at the giant hole on screen. He felt some degree of danger coming from it, but it was not strong enough to be a cause for concern. He even asked Zhang Heng for his opinion and the Hope's most powerful Diviner agreed with him. This hole, whatever it may be, was safe...

"At least entering it will not be dangerous... but we can't know what lies beyond it."

Very soon, the Hope fell into the hole while still maintaining its speed. As the Hope moved into the hole, the hole slowly closed up. The light coming from above the Hope decreased in intensity until there was no more. All of the surveillance devices on the Hope, like the electromagnetic radar, the light ray radar, the gravity radar, even the incomplete spatial radar, they all stopped working when the Hope fully entered this giant hole. It was as if the Hope was inside an empty and quiet darkness.

Everyone on the Hope who was looking at the screen started to get worried. The fear came from the unknown. In fact, the Hope's function had returned to normal, all of its weapons and mobility engines had been recovered, but it seemed like no matter how far or how fast they moved, they were still caught inside this endless darkness.

However, the scariest thing was that Yao Yuan had disappeared. Yes, when the Hope fully entered the Hope, Yao Yuan suddenly disappeared without a trace. When did he disappear, how did he disappear, where did he disappear to, was he still alive, these were questions that couldn't be answered. The only things that remained were fear, anxiety, and even despair...

Other than Yao Yuan, there were two more cases of disappearances. One was Jay, who was still in a coma, and the

other was a Black Star Trooper unit's vice-captain, Ji Jie. What was the reason behind the disappearance of these three people? No one could tell...

Just like that, the Hope continued to be trapped in this darkness. For a month, six months, a year... First, Guang Zhen took over for Yao Yuan. Even though not everyone was happy about that change, it was necessary. The pressure on Guang Zhen increased tenfold. Without anyone really noticing it, the Hope had been trapped inside the darkness for ten years.

In these ten years, the technology and population on the Hope continued to increase, but... the supplies and energy levels kept decreasing. If this was allowed to continue, humanity would exhaust itself inside the giant tree.

In the 30th year the Hope was trapped in the darkness, the first unofficial armed resistance occurred. Even though it was quickly stomped by the Black Star Troopers, the people knew that this was merely the beginning. If the militaristic governance and the poverty in terms of food, supplies, and spirit was allowed to continue...

Thankfully, a breakthrough appeared on the 40th year the Hope was trapped in the darkness. Just as humanity was at the end of their thread, where most Black Star Troopers started to doubt the validity of their duties, the Hope suddenly left the darkness. No one could tell or even remember how that happened, because their attention was elsewhere. Before their eyes, a planet with blue surface and a peaceful solar system unveiled itself...

"...What is this?"

Yao Yuan looked at the group of people who had collapsed around him and immediately pressed a button hidden within the armrest of the captain's chair. Instantly, a hole appeared underneath him and he dropped into the ground. Inside, his trusty red space armor awaited. He put it on with record speed.



Just as the chair was dropping itself downwards, Yao Yuan managed to catch a glimpse of the 3D image that showcased the surroundings of the Hope. This... was the interior of the giant tree. Lines that looked like electrical circuits or wood grains crowded the walls surrounding the Hope. This was the inside structure of the giant tree. The lines were glowing with green-colored energy, and the Hope was idling quietly inside this halo of green glow. Yao Yuan also managed to catch the various alien spaceships that were parked around the Hope.

This... was the interior of the giant tree! They were officially inside the ruin!

# Chapter 398: Fake Reality!

---

In his red armor, Yao Yuan walked through the corridors of the Hope. Everywhere he turned, people were collapsed on the floor, apparently stuck in their deepest sleep. No matter how hard he yelled or shook them, they remained asleep.

"Are they hypnotized? Am I immune because I'm an Immortal?" Yao Yuan mumbled to himself as he continued to walk towards his destination. This was to confirm his suspicion because this thing would let him know whether it was a hypnosis or not.

It had been five minutes since the Hope entered the giant tree. In these five minutes, Yao Yuan had put on his red space armor. This was the latest edition of the product, it was the peak of humanity's technology. It was personally designed by Bo Li, a real prototype for the third edition of the space armor. The exhaustion and value of this space armor was equal to a small spaceship. However, its power was strong enough to decimate the level 3 space armor brought along by Blue 6 when he initially entered the Hope. Of course, that was if it was paired with an Immortal like Yao Yuan.

After putting on this armor, Yao Yuan started to explore the Hope. Just like the situation in central command, everyone he stumbled across was in a state of sleep. The most frustrating thing was that even after the Hope was completely absorbed into the giant tree, the Hope's AI still hadn't recovered. The Hope was still being controlled by this ruin.

However, it wasn't that worrying because tests had been done earlier to confirm that the Hope's AI was still residing in the Hope's central mainframe. When he got there, Yao Yuan should be able to link to the AI. Furthermore, he would be able to consult ZERO.

Perhaps human beings could be hypnotized, but AI and ZERO definitely wouldn't be hypnotized... Unless this was the work of a

god-tier space civilization...

"Unfortunately... the power that is shown here is the hallmark of a god-tier space civilization."

When Yao Yuan arrived at his destination, he was shocked by what he saw. In fact, at that moment, he almost pulled out his weapon and started to fire. This was because he saw a naked woman sitting on the metallic floor and toying with a glob of light in her palm.

Yao Yuan swore that she wasn't a resident of the Hope!

Even though the Hope had several ten thousand in population, half of that was still underage, while most of the other half consisted of the original batch who left Earth. After 20 years of being a leader, Yao Yuan could identify most of them by name. This was especially true with his soul web. He had an inexplicable connection with most of the people on the Hope, and this naked woman before him... he had no idea who she was!

With a whirl, Yao Yuan unleashed his blade. However, he didn't lose his rationality, especially since he didn't sense any danger from this woman. He asked darkly, "Who are you?! Are you the AI of this ruin? Or someone it sent over to explore this ship? Answer me..." Yao Yuan was ready to strike should this naked woman do anything weird.

However, when the woman saw Yao Yuan, there was first surprise, and then shock, and finally happiness on her face. This series of expressions made Yao Yuan itch to slash her with his blade, but what she said next confounded Yao Yuan.

"What are you talking about? I'm ZERO."

"Huh?"

Yao Yuan's first response was suspicion. However, it was a fact that the total number of people who knew about ZERO on the Hope was less than 10. Even though there was a possibility of the

ruin's AI creating this lifeform from piecing together the memories or consciousness of the Hope's citizens, the real possibility of that happening was too small... then again, what was happening before his eyes could be described as improbable as well.

"To put it simply, all I'm seeing is an illusion of the hypnosis? Or am I already hypnotized?" Yao Yuan scratched his head after ZERO explained herself.

According to ZERO, it was simple why she would appear. This was the powerful influence of the ruin. In other words, they had left the physical universe because in this universe, everything with a consciousness would materialize, and that included an artificial sentience like ZERO.

ZERO scoffed with derision after she heard Yao Yuan. "No, no, no, what illusion you're talking about? This is the real deal. If it was illusion or hypnosis, someone like you wouldn't have been affected. The Immortal is immortal because he is the natural kryptonite for all falsehood, it is an immortal constant. The Immortal is someone even god-tier space civilizations are unable to fool, someone that is immune to even demonization. This is the real space because you are in it."

"This is real?" Yao Yuan was confused, and he asked, "But didn't you just say that this was not a physical space? Then how is it real? Plus, you are here in person, so how can this be real? You're pulling my leg, aren't you?"

ZERO pouted angrily and said, "Who, who is pulling your leg? Are we that close for me to play with you? In any case, just accept the truth. This is real, and if you die here, you will be physically dead..."

Yao Yuan removed the shirt from one of the sleeping men and passed it to ZERO. He then added, "Then explain it to me clearly. What is going on here, why are we the only ones awake, how can we return to the physical space?"

At this moment, Yao Yuan was bringing ZERO towards the Hope's bridge. There, they could manually operate some of the ship's weapons. After all, since only he and ZERO could move on the Hope, at least before the rest of the ship woke up, they had to protect the ship's safety.

ZERO shrugged helplessly and sighed, "I wish, but that's like explaining quantum theory to a rat..."

"Tell me!" Yao Yuan interrupted her with a punch to the metallic wall. Amplified by the space armour, half of his arm was stuck inside the wall and Yao Yuan said severely, "I said, explain it to me! Use the language that I can understand, I don't need the theories and stuff, I only need to understand what is going on, therefore... don't make me repeat it twice, especially considering the situation we're in. Look at my people lying there as if dead, so stop with the virus, unicellular organism, rat or monkey kind of talk!"

As if greatly scared, ZERO pouted from the unfair treatment and tears were swirling in her eyes.

Is she really an AI? How can she be so... humanlike... Is she really an AI or a sentient lifeform? Yao Yuan, who had been observing ZERO, frowned with confusion.

ZERO took several deep breaths and explained, "To put it simply, this is related to the perspective on space that I've explained to you before. The cosmos is more than the universe that exists in the physical world, there are universes in the energy level, time level, and more levels that are only accessible to god-tier space civilizations, like the materialistic level, or this space we're in... a cosmos that is on the level of illusory physicality."

Yao Yuan thought about it and continued, "These are indeed words that I can understand, but I still have some questions. I've seen the different levels of space before, I can imagine a time-based space, even an energy-based space, but the materialistic space is way beyond my current comprehension... I have two questions:

one, what is the meaning of illusory physicality, and two... does this ruin belong to a god-tier space civilization? Didn't you say that the space civilization behind this ruin is only level 7 or 8?"

ZERO gave Yao Yuan a side-eye, as if saying, "How dumb you can be?" However, since Yao Yuan was still fuming, she didn't voice her thought but answered, "If I'm using your human language, I suppose you could say that illusory physicality is similar to your computer program. To borrow a simple example, do you think your game worlds are real or fake?"

Yao Yuan thought about it and answered, "Of course they're fake. Isn't that a given?"

"That's right, the games created by you humans definitely are fake... but what if you take it up another technological level? Imagine you create a game world and fill it with many AIs, making them the NPCs or mobs in game, then is the game world real or fake to these AIs?"

Yao Yuan understood what ZERO was getting at, but she kept on explaining, "Similarly, if you take these AIs out of the game and then use them to help humanity in space, like piloting the spaceships or doing some calculations, then is this game that contains many AIs real or fake to human beings?"

"This is such a space, an illusionary real cosmos that can only be created by a god-tier space civilization..."

"A Shelter used by god-tier space civilizations to defend against the demons..."

# Chapter 399: Light and Darkness

---

(How powerful are the demons? And what are the demons?) were the two biggest questions in Yao Yuan's mind after listening to ZERO's explanation.

Humanity had once crossed swords with the demons, and honestly, the demons was a scary race. This was not only because of their numbers, but their ability to demonize everything and anything. If not for the massive amount of Homo Evolutis on the Hope, humanity would have been completely demonized at that weird space.

There were massive demons as well, like the giant thing that appeared from within a whole planet. One of its claws was already several ten thousand meters long. If the whole thing escaped the planet that birthed it, it would be huge, definitely bigger than this giant tree.

Even so... in the eyes of a high tier space civilization, no, even just a middle tier space civilization, such a threat should practically be a non-threat!

Indeed, for a middle tier space civilization who could already manage super long range attacks, level 4 to 6 space civilizations had the capability of sniping the demons or even destroying the cursed solar system from afar, especially since demons wouldn't be able to send out the creator's particle. In other words, demons were merely a weird-looking organism, not that much different from the zerg race.

So... how could such a race threaten a high tier space civilization?

This creation of practically another dimension and the Song of Destruction greatly amplified the demons' threat, and this was something Yao Yuan couldn't wrap his head around.

And now, he heard something even more unbelievable from

ZERO...

This fake real space was created by a god-tier space civilization to "shelter" themselves from the demons. Yes, shelter, not to dissect, capture, or breed, but shelter... So just what kind of existence were demons?

Fine, perhaps that question could be answered later because that was simply too far away from humanity's current level and progress. After all, the demon race was a rarity in space. One thousand solar systems might breed only just one, or else the whole cosmos would be empty by now. According to the chance of probability, humanity might not even stumble across another demon race in its history, so the question of the demons could be ignored for now... Another more pressing question remained: if this was a space created by a god-tier space civilization, doesn't that mean that the giant tree belonged to a god-tier space civilization as well?

"Impossible! This cannot be the ruin of a god-tier space civilization because... god-tier space civilizations wouldn't leave behind a relic type ruin. Do you still not understand the meaning of a god-tier space civilization? They are civilizations on the level of myths, their power is way beyond the comprehension of normal space civilizations. For such a level of space civilization, the revival of an entire civilization is nothing. It's like how much effort the Hope would require to build a shuttle," ZERO immediately corrected him.

Yao Yuan nodded and went into deep thought. According to ZERO's hypothesis, it meant that this space civilization had just so happened to stumble across this space left behind by a god-tier space civilization? Just like how humanity had chanced upon ZERO's UFO? The biggest difference between the two was that humanity was barely a level 1 space civilization when they obtained the UFO, while this space civilization was already in the high tier when they obtained this impossible space.



Therefore, unlike humanity, who could do nothing with the UFO, this space civilization was able to operate this space technology.

"No, this high tier space civilization is not as powerful as you give it credit for. They hadn't reached the level of mastering this illusory reality, or else this relic type ruin wouldn't have been created in the first place. This is because if they had truly mastered this space technology, other than god-tier space civilizations and high ranking demons, nothing could threaten the survival of this space civilization, because at the very least, they could still escape to this dimension to hide," ZERO commented with derision.

Yao Yuan didn't understand it completely, so he asked, "What if the cause of destruction is indeed a god-tier space civilization or high ranking demons like you said?"

ZERO glanced at Yao Yuan as if saying, "How can you ask a question that is so incredibly dumb?"

It only took a moment for Yao Yuan to come to the answer himself. If it was really a god-tier space civilization or high ranking demons who destroyed this space civilization, then this ruin wouldn't have existed in the first place, because this illusory space wouldn't have been able to stop them from wiping the whole space civilization off the plane of existence...

By now, the two of them had reached the bridge of the Hope. Along the way, ZERO kept opening and closing the large-sized clothes that were covering her body and kept twisting her ankles. In fact, Yao Yuan had been rushing since they left the room that housed the central mainframe. She could only attempt her best to keep up behind him barefooted. Thankfully, most of the journey was done in the auto-mobile; otherwise, how could a small-bodied woman like her keep up with Yao Yuan when he was in his space armor?

Yao Yuan discovered the weird motions ZERO had been making.

After some hesitation, he asked, "Can you feel pain as well?"

ZERO rolled her eyes and said, "Isn't that a stupid question? The uniqueness of this space aside, I myself have gone beyond the limitations of normal logic, math, and programming, so why can't I feel pain? I can feel all ranges of emotions from happiness to sadness, from joy to despair, from pleasure to pain. I am practically no different from a normal human being, other than the lack of a physical body... are you insulting me?"

Yao Yuan immediately apologized. "I'm sorry, you know I don't mean it like that. I'm just worried about your current situation... Since this space is real and people can get hurt and die, you need better armor than the shirt on your back. If you died, I'm sure Xiao Niao would be incredibly sad, so you better put on some armor."

ZERO's face started to blush. She muttered with her head lowered, "You think so? He will be sad because of that? Alright then... I'll put on some of the unimaginably ugly armor you humans have designed... I hope Xiao Niao appreciates the sacrifice I'm making for him here..."

In any case, ZERO obediently put on a suit of female Black Star Trooper space armor. Looking at the way she walked in the thing, it was an issue for her to walk from one spot to another, much less fight. Regardless, at least she was much more protected now.

On the other hand, Yao Yuan made use of the time ZERO went to change to start thinking.

Even though what ZERO revealed was a buttload of information, he still managed to filter several important pieces out of it.

First, the Hope indeed had entered the giant tree and the giant tree was indeed the relic type ruin left behind by a high tier space civilization. This was the proposition that allowed for the remaining analysis.

When the Hope entered this ruin, it had either entered the

supposed illusory physicality space, or the ruin itself consisted only of this space; both explanations worked.

Based on the information given by ZERO, this illusory physicality had two dimensions to it. One was the light dimension, or the actual state of this space. The lifeforms of a god-tier space civilization would normally exist in this light dimension. For them, this was the actual space, and any injury or death suffered here were permanent.

In contrast, there was also a dark space. This dark space was a simulated space, normally used in experiments or simulations...

These were the details filtered from the information given by Yao Yuan. Yao Yuan couldn't tell whether they were authentic or not, but since there was no other choice, he chose to believe ZERO for now.

Lastly was the definition of the Immortal. Everything false and illusory wouldn't be able to affect the Immortal; therefore, he didn't sink to the dark dimension but woke up in this light dimension instead, and this... was probably humanity's only saving grace!

In fact, Yao Yuan had gained an understanding of how this ruin had filtered out and finally selected the most powerful race. They had simulated a space scenario in the dark dimension and sped the time up. Based on the various races' response to internal and external strife, one would be able to tell whether the race in question had the potential to become a high tier space civilization or not. It was the only reason why the ruin had attracted so many space civilizations, because it was only through this way that they could out pick the best of the best. When the race left the dark dimension and arrived at this light dimension, they would be rewarded with the technology left behind by this high tier space civilization...

As for the rest of the space civilizations who failed... would they

be slaughtered to serve as soul for the victor, or would they be kept in the suspension of the dark dimension forever?

Who could really tell...

Of course, Yao Yuan wouldn't leave the fate of humanity in another race's hands. Furthermore, even though this was a crisis, it was also a great opportunity...

If he could reach the reward in this ruin before anyone else!

Then humanity would definitely be the race that had the most potential. Even if the rest of the space civilizations woke up and objected, humanity would be a middle tier space civilization by then, so they could just wipe out any voices of dissent!

# Chapter 400: Suspicion...and Action

---

Yao Yuan wasn't one to just theorize, he was a quintessential man of action. With a plan in place, he began to operate.

The first things to prepare were definitely weapons and equipment. His space armor was already the third generation of Space Armor. It combined the advantages of the earlier two generations and added greater defense, movement speed, attack, better energy storage, and it contained one important future-tech design: the battle suit assembly system.

As a specially-made exoskeleton-esque armor for Homo Evolutis, the space armor's specialty was in close-quarters combat, like the battle inside the Shelter, inside the ruin, or when landing on another ship or planet.

However, due to limitation of numbers, the Black Star Troopers would be the main fighting force for humanity in the foreseeable future. Therefore, be it space armor or Space Combat Jet, their priorities were much greater than the improvements to the Defense Unit's equipment. The biggest weakness of the space armor was its lack of feasibility to be used in different scenarios. This was especially obvious during the war on the cursed planet. The space armor was at a disadvantage when the situation called for a heavy weapon.

Therefore, when Bo Li was given the assignment to create the third generation of space armor, her main objective was to improve its functionality. In other words, to make it so that the space armor could adapt to different fighting scenarios. Of course, for it to be an all-rounder was impossible. To compensate for that, Bo Li invented an external interface that could be attached with different armor accessories depending on the situation.

Currently, there was only one completed third generation space armor on the Hope, and it was merely a prototype. Even so, the

battle suit assembly system was already online. After all, as the most powerful Homo Evolutis, Yao Yuan might need to get involved in actual combat at any given moment. Early preparation was better than rushing it at the last minute.

After ZERO changed into the space armor, Yao Yuan brought her to the Hope's armory. Other than to grab the necessary space armor accessories, he was going to leave the Hope from there. This was going to be an unknown journey with the survival of humanity hanging in the balance...

Just as the two of them headed towards the entrance, they stumbled across another person who was wandering around the Hope!

This person was also wearing a space armor, so their movements were rather noisy. The other person seemed to be heading their way because they heard the commotion on Yao Yuan's side. Both parties were equally shocked when they met. Yao Yuan adopted a defensive posture immediately. Thankfully, each of the space armors had their own identification tags. Even though the Hope's AI was down, this type of simple identification module was still operable. The minute they saw each other, the identities of both parties were already revealed.

"Ming Ji Jie! You're not hypnotized? What about other people?" Yao Yuan sighed in relief, but he didn't completely let his guard down. After all, this was not the usual space dimension, so one couldn't be too careful. What if this Ji Jie was just an illusion? Therefore, he entered his Diviner state, and after realizing that there was no danger coming from her, he gradually relaxed.

Ji Jie was equally shocked as well. She put down her weapon and said hurriedly, "Is it Yao Yuan? It's so wonderful that you're safe. What happened? Why did everyone fall asleep when we entered this ruin?"

Yao Yuan revealed all the information given by ZERO after some

hesitation. After all, he was going to take on an incredibly difficult mission, and he would need any help he could get. Furthermore, this was a Black Star Trooper, a top trooper at that. According to the data, Ji Jie's battle prowess was impressive, she was only slightly weaker than Yao Yuan himself.

Ji Jie was silent for a moment before cheering. "This is great! So we have the chance to grab the rewards from this ruin ourselves? This means that humanity will be able to escape this weird dimension soon, right? The best of all is that I will be able to go on this adventure with you. This is awesome..."

Yao Yuan really didn't know how to respond, but he didn't dwell on it. Since there was another member to join their party, more options had opened up. Yao Yuan ordered Ji Jie to scour the Hope before they departed to look for other Homo Evolutis that weren't hypnotized.

After Ji Jie left, ZERO mumbled curiously, "This is curious. A normal cosmic adapter shouldn't have been able to wake up in this dimension created by a god-tier space civilization. She is not an Immortal like you, nor is she a level 3 soul web user..."

"Is that so?" Yao Yuan said with a raised eye brow, but he eventually shrugged. "Perhaps she is uniquely blessed..."

Regardless, the show had to go on. 10 minutes later, Yao Yuan brought ZERO to a slab of metallic wall at the bridge. He touched the surface of the wall for some time before the wall opened to reveal a metallic corridor that was about 5 to 6 meters wide. Yao Yuan stepped into it without hesitation. As he entered, a 3D image the size of a small computer screen appeared before him. He was operating something on it.

"The sniping set can be dropped, it's not useable in this situation. Heavy artillery set... not useable either. Fighting a high tier space civilization in terms of firepower sounds dumb... The stealth set, support set, skirmisher set... I guess skirmisher set is the best

choice considering the conditions. Speed is the most important at the moment."

After a short contemplation, Yao Yuan selected the skirmisher set as the accessories to add to his space armor. It was a set that specialized in great dexterity and speed. It also came equipped with weapons and functions that supported such a fighting styles, like the automatic Gaussian shotgun and the ability to temporary fly by creating a zero-gravity environment around the armor.

It took Yao Yuan several minutes before he exited from the other end of the corridor. When he did, the appearance of his space armor had changed aplenty. It looked completely different from a second generation space armor, the biggest change being the two mechanical protrusion on his back that looked like a backpack and two curved blades that hung from his sides.

While the two of them were waiting for Ji Jie to return, they continued to discuss the many pitfalls and dangers of this mission. However, according to ZERO, the illusory physicality dimension differed according to different god-tier space civilizations. To put it simply, this was not unlike creating a new universe beyond the existing universe. It was as impossible as it sounded; therefore, it was something that was performable by god-tier space civilizations only. However, after the dimension was completed, the creator had full control over it. For example, if the creator wished for it, the very basics of logic could be shaken, like 1 plus 1 could be equal to 3. Therefore, attempting to figure out a dark dimension from the outside was practically impossible.

This bunch of words made Yao Yuan worry. However, staying idle or running away was not an option, so he could only stay his heart and move forward.

10 minutes later, Ji Jie returned. She had brought along with her a person who was not hypnotized, and the person gave Yao Yuan the shock of his life... it was Jay!



Yes, ever since the explosion on the meteorite base, Jay had existed in a state of half-vegetable. Even with the advanced medical technology on the Hope, they were unable to pull him out of his slumber. His awakening seemed to require some sort of trigger unique to the Homo Evolutis. Another Homo Evolutis trapped in the same conundrum was the Sage, Eva. Therefore, Yao Yuan was truly surprised that he had managed to wake up in this light dimension!

(Then again, Jay is not a normal Homo Evolutis, he is different from the cosmic adapters known to the great cosmos... Perhaps he is here because he is also a SS-grade cosmic adapter like myself. If that is true, why is this Ming Ji Jie conscious in this dimension? Could it be...)

This series of thoughts flashed across Yao Yuan's mind before he quickly suppressed them. Regardless of the truth, now was not the time to discuss that. He rushed to Jay's side and removed his space helmet to address Jay. "You're awake? How are you feeling..."

Jay looked at Yao Yuan inside the space armor with great shock. It took him a long time before he could reply, "If not for your voice and the sense of familiarity, I really wouldn't f\*cking believe this was a human creation. Are you sure you're not kidding me? Listen, this woman told me that I've been asleep for more than a decade. And our technology has advanced so far in just a decade? Fine, let's say that's true... Yao Yuan, I heard that you've become the Chancellor of humanity? Also..."

Jay seemed ready to rattle off all the questions that he had kept within him for the past ten years. Yao Yuan interrupted him in the middle of his diatribe, "We don't have the time for explanations. Jay, put on this suit of space armor. You are also a Homo Evolutis, so you should be able to use it even without training. Currently, humanity has found itself in another crisis. I know you just woke up, and I feel sorry for asking for your help so soon, but..."

"Humanity needs you, so can you help me? My dear comrade..."

Jay was startled, and he finally laughed as he walked to stand before Yao Yuan... Even though he was much shorter than the 3-meter-tall space armor, he still landed a sound punch on the metallic exterior and announced, "Of course! Do you know who you're talking to? I'm the human hero, Jay Wales, okay..."

"Of course, I will be glad to fight by your side!"

# Table of Contents

## [Age of Cosmic Exploration](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: Blue Race](#)

[Chapter 302: Earth Race](#)

[Chapter 303: Danger Sense and Attraction](#)

[Chapter 304: Retreat and Coincidence](#)

[Chapter 305: Time on Both End](#)

[Chapter 306: One Day!](#)

[Chapter 307: Arrival!](#)

[Chapter 308: Warp and Surrender!](#)

[Chapter 309: Survival](#)

[Chapter 310: Conundrum](#)

[Chapter 311: Multiple Difficulties](#)

[Chapter 312: Operation Water](#)

[Chapter 313: Missing Persons](#)

[Chapter 314: Abandoned Son](#)

[Chapter 315: Base and Video](#)

[Chapter 316: Continuous Disappearance](#)

[Chapter 317: Explosion and Betrayal](#)

[Chapter 318: Infestation!](#)

[Chapter 319: After the Big Retreat](#)

[Chapter 320: Only Lifeline](#)

[Chapter 321: Cursed Planet and Negotiation \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 322: Cursed Planet and Negotiation \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 323: Parlei Barbaric Race](#)

[Chapter 324: Chaos](#)

[Chapter 325: The Start of Mutation](#)

[Chapter 326: Ambitious Hero!](#)

[Chapter 327: Cursed! Demonization and Arrival](#)

[Chapter 328: Nightmare in Reality](#)

[Chapter 329: The Great Madness](#)

[Chapter 330: Closer](#)

[Chapter 331: Blue 6's First Mission!](#)

[Chapter 332: Foreign Affairs in Space](#)

[Chapter 333: Survivor Union](#)  
[Chapter 334: Landing!](#)  
[Chapter 335: Appearance of the Demon Race!](#)  
[Chapter 336: So-Called Demon](#)  
[Chapter 337: Underground!](#)  
[Chapter 338: Deep Infestation](#)  
[Chapter 339: Genesis!](#)  
[Chapter 340: Rescue Begin](#)  
[Chapter 341: Exit...](#)  
[Chapter 342: Aerial Combat](#)  
[Chapter 343: Deeper Underground Kingdom](#)  
[Chapter 344: Discovery!](#)  
[Chapter 345: Returning Demon](#)  
[Chapter 346: Reward... Command!](#)  
[Chapter 347: Big Danger!](#)  
[Chapter 348: Rescue Start and... Stop!](#)  
[Chapter 349: Warp Drive!](#)  
[Chapter 350: Song of Destruction!](#)  
[Chapter 351: Addition](#)  
[Chapter 352: New Life In Space](#)  
[Chapter 353: Cracking the Code](#)  
[Chapter 354: Code: Darkness](#)  
[Chapter 355: Plasma Energy Shield](#)  
[Chapter 356: Prediction and Military Exercise](#)  
[Chapter 357: Emissary of Peace](#)  
[Chapter 358: New Whisperer](#)  
[Chapter 359: Exit](#)  
[Chapter 360: Approach!](#)  
[Chapter 361: The Value](#)  
[Chapter 362: Approach With Caution](#)  
[Chapter 363: Entry](#)  
[Chapter 364: Want to Buy Everything](#)  
[Chapter 365: Exciting! Exciting!](#)  
[Chapter 366: Information... and Arrival](#)  
[Chapter 367: Two Days!](#)  
[Chapter 368: ...To Declare War!](#)  
[Chapter 369: Ultimate Weapon, Gravity Cannon!](#)  
[Chapter 370: Slaughter Them All!](#)  
[Chapter 371: Who Dares to Kill Me?](#)

[Chapter 372: Fire!](#)  
[Chapter 373: Scary! \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 374: Scary! \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 375: Indiscriminate Attack!](#)  
[Chapter 376: Take No Prisoners!](#)  
[Chapter 377: Demolition!](#)  
[Chapter 378: Three Years Later](#)  
[Chapter 379: Salvage](#)  
[Chapter 380: Salvage Begins](#)  
[Chapter 381: Ruin?!](#)  
[Chapter 382: Fake Approach](#)  
[Chapter 383: Weird](#)  
[Chapter 384: Surveillance](#)  
[Chapter 385: Biological Experiment](#)  
[Chapter 386: Hypothesis!](#)  
[Chapter 387: Discussion](#)  
[Chapter 388: Password!](#)  
[Chapter 389: Request!](#)  
[Chapter 390: Entry!](#)  
[Chapter 391: Fourth Dimension!](#)  
[Chapter 392: End of the Green Light!](#)  
[Chapter 393: High Tier Genetic-based Space Civilization](#)  
[Chapter 394: Summon!](#)  
[Chapter 395: Helpless!](#)  
[Chapter 396: Relic Type Ruin!](#)  
[Chapter 397: Inside the Ruin!](#)  
[Chapter 398: Fake Reality!](#)  
[Chapter 399: Light and Darkness](#)  
[Chapter 400: Suspicion...and Action](#)